

Gc
929.2
W297w
v.1
pt.2
1710076

M. L.

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

✓

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01435 7948



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2019

<https://archive.org/details/descendantsofric12wate>

DESCENDANTS
of
RICHARD WATERHOUSE
OF
PORTSMOUTH, N. H.

With Notes on the

Descendants of Jacob Waterhouse of New London, Conn., Joshua
Waterhouse of New Jersey and others.

Also

A sketch of the Waterhouse Family in England.

Compiled by

George Herbert Waterhouse

Member of the New England Historic Genealogical
Society.

Children's children are the crown of old men; and
the glory of children are their fathers. Prov. XVII: 6.

1000-1001

1000-1001

1000-1001

1000-1001

1000-1001

1000-1001

1000-1001

1000-1001

1000-1001

1000-1001

1000-1001

1000-1001

8E7
W304

this occasion, the forcible expressions of Dr. Jenner, in a letter to my friend Dr. Lettison, incessantly occupied my mind, viz. **1710076**

"The small-pox rages at this time in the metropolis. We have the means in our power of stopping the calamity. Why not employ them?"

"We perceive, as it were, our houses on fire, and with buckets in our hands stand idly gazing on the flames!"

"We bar the door against foreign plagues by our laws of quarantine; whilst the greatest domestic plague, that ever infested us, is suffered to advance without controul. Could it not be wise in the Legislature to interfere in the cause of suffering humanity?"

Thus circumstanced, I found it, in a peculiar manner, my duty, seeing I had imported the vaccine disease into America, and had held it up to my countrymen, as an easy commutation tax, in lieu of that horrible one, the small-pox, to make a serious ^{effort} to diffuse the benefits of it, first through the metropolis, and then through every part of the Commonwealth, so as even to exterminate the very pabulum, or fuel, on which the small-pox feeds. But how to effect it, was the question-- I must have been grossly ignorant of the world and of myself, to have supposed, that the old physicians of Boston, where I was not, strictly speaking and legally speaking, an inhabitant, would follow my lead in any general scheme of vaccination; and, without their hearty cooperation, nothing extensively useful could be effected. A vaccine institution would fall far short of the objects aimed at. Besides, it would be beginning at the wrong end, both of society, and of the profession. There was no legally constituted body of men, which appeared to me so likely to carry this desirable object into effect, as the Board of Health, which is a kind of standing committee of humanity, composed of "one able and discreet person," from each of the twelve wards of Boston. *****

I knew that the Board of Health of the last year was averse from the very idea of patronizing such a plan; for Dr. James Jackson had addressed a letter to them, asking permission to test with the small-pox some of his vaccine patients, when the board voted to reject his applica-

tion in toto. I was therefore aware, that if my memorial did not carry with it absolute conviction, it would share the fate of the letter of my ingenious and esteemed pupil; (Jackson) in which event I was all prepared to transfer my plan from the town to the Legislature of the Commonwealth. In either case, I thought it proper to take a broader ground than that of a private practitioner. I therefore addressed the board of health as follows:-

The Memorial of BENJAMIN WATERHOUSE, M.D. Professor of the
Theory and Practice of Physic in the UNIVERSITY OF CAMBRIDGE,
To the Board of Health in Boston.

Gentlemen,

NO one can doubt the propriety of my addressing you on the subject of the new inoculation, who considers, that you are placed by law, as so many guardians of our lives, health, and safety. The authority, which has made it your duty to put in force the laws and rules, best calculated against the introduction of infection from abroad, and to obviate the causes of contagion at home, has made it my duty to investigate and teach the principles, on which such laws are founded. Under this idea, it is probable, your board, or the individuals of it, applied for my opinion, and made use of it, when the quarantine law was before the Legislature. From recollection of that circumstance, I am induced at this time to address you, not as a private practitioner, but as the public teacher of the practice of physic in this Commonwealth; and am willing to annex to the assertions in this memorial the implied responsibility of my official station; for it has been, agreeably to an early declaration, under a serious impression of the duty, imposed on me by the medical institution of this University, that I have laboured incessantly, for four years past, in the investigation and diffusion of the most important medical discovery, ever made since the world began; it being no less than that of exterminating the most loathsome and widely wasting pestilence, that Providence ever permitted to afflict the human race.

Being made acquainted, at a very early period, with this extraordinary discovery, I felt it my duty, as a teacher of medicine, to collect all the facts for the information of those who attended my public lectures. Having imported the disease itself into America, I feel, if possible, a still stronger obligation to acquaint the public with every step I took in diffusing it, even before it passed the limits of my own family. I therefore published all my proceedings from time to time in the newspaper, and in a style so simple, as to require no other preparation, than common sense and an unprejudiced mind. But, as they have never yet been collected together in one book, it may be of some use, on this particular occasion, to throw together the leading particulars, and lay them in order before the public, through the respectable medium of the Boston Board of Health. For really, gentlemen, (seeing vaccination is marching triumphantly

over the globe, and PRESIDENTS, EMPERORS, KINGS, CONSULS, and PARLIAMENTS, are giving it public countenance and support) it is time for that town, distinguished as "the head quarters of good principles," to consider, whether they will chuse to be the last in adopting a practice, which has been followed by France, Italy, Spain, Germany, Prussia, and Constantinople, and even received with warmth in the cold regions of Russia and Norway.

It has been to me an humiliating reflection, that the very plans I have offered for a Vaccine Institution in Boston, for inoculating the poor gratis, and which have been received with a chilling apathy, and a repellant suspicion, have, on being transmitted to some of the middle and southern States, been adopted with alacrity. From these places, I am continually receiving letters, replete with most grateful expressions for transmitting them the matter and directions for carrying on this new inoculation.

I pass from these prefatory remarks to

A CONDENSED HISTORY OF THE KINE-POCK INOCULATION.

That I produced the same disease in America, is confirmed from virus taken from my patients here, and sent to England, producing the same disease there. We have, besides, demonstrated the identity of the distemper to the eye, by means of pictures of the kine-pock in all its stages, painted in England under the direction of Jenner himself, which exquisite representations ascertain the identity of the local disease beyond the faintest shade of ambiguity. In like manner, the depicted spurious pustule is an exact description of the imposter that pestered us in the autumn of 1800.

That this cow or kine-pock will secure the human constitution from the contagion of the small-pox as certainly, as rods of iron will secure a building from the effects of lightening, no one, who has paid due attention to the subject, now doubts in America. But as lightening rods may be so injudiciously placed, as not to protect the building from injury, so the kine-pock inoculation may be so unskilfully conducted, as not to secure the person from the contagion of the small-pox.

When a building, guarded by rods of iron, is struck with lightening, we conclude they were not adjusted according to the rules laid down by Franklin; they being founded on a law of nature relative to the electric fluid and a metallic rod. And when we hear of a person having the small-pox, after being supposed to have had the kine-pock, we are as certain that the inoculation was not conducted according to the rules laid down by Jenner; they being, in like manner, founded on a law of nature respecting the vaccine virus and the human subject. When- ever, therefore, we meet with adverse accidents in applying the Franklinian, or the Jennerian discovery to practice, we must look for the cause in erring man, and not in UNERRING NATURE. It is the business, then, of the philosopher and the physician, to enquire into the causes of these aberrations.

Assuming it then, as a fact (and the learned of all nations have admitted it) that Dr. Jenner has demonstrated a new law of nature, respecting the prophylactic, or preventive power of the kine-pock in the human system; we presume that every one who dreads the small-pox, would gladly shelter himself behind the legis of Jenner, from its too fatal effects, had he but a cloudless view of the whole business; and the ultimate object of this address, Gentlemen, is a PLAN to help your fellow citizens to such a view of it; and thus to relieve them from

their present state of doubt and uncertainty, respecting a matter of more importance to your commercial town, than ^{any} ever exercised its deliberations, since our venerable fore-fathers first landed on your renowned peninsula.

In the present unsettled state of this practice, the inhabitants of Boston know not what to adopt, or what to reject. Altho' I hold up to you, with confidence, a sure, safe, and effectual method of forever securing your offspring from the worst of maladies, yet I wish not ~~that~~ that you should patronize, much less adopt it, without A PUBLIC EXPERIMENT PERFORMED UNDER YOUR OWN INSPECTION.

The only question now remaining on the minds of those who are well wishers to the new inoculation is, why has this operation ever failed? Why have not the true prophylactic effects followed every application of the vaccine virus to the abraded skin? The full discussion of these questions is reserved for another place. *****

A public experiment by some learned body, or association of physicians, or some regularly constituted body, as the board of health, is requisite to infuse confidence into the minds of the people. For an individual, however warmly disposed to promote the good of his fellow creatures, can do but little in such a peculiar business as this. More than a year since, an advance of the kind was made by me to the Massachusetts Medical Society. They never acted regularly upon it, but it appeared that they wished for the united authorities of the whole medical world, before they would venture to commit themselves, or the dignity of the society, on the suggestions of a single enthusiastic member. These discouragements have induced me to address the Boston Board of Health, - to request them to take this new mode of preventing the small-pox infection into their serious consideration, as a matter of great importance to the community, and coming with peculiar propriety under their cognizance.

The writer of this has for more than three years devoted his undivided attention to maturing, and bringing forward this mode of exterminating an horrid disease. He has, by suggesting, but not obtruding on the public, held up to their view, A MILD AND EASY SUBSTITUTE. In the same spirit he would now propose to the Board of Health, as a principal means of effecting this end, that they would take some step toward forming a committee, to enquire, 1st, whether there be sufficient evidence of the efficacy of the kine-pock to justify the expense of a public experiment; and ample documents are here transmitted to assist you in this inquiry. If this be found to be the case, to establish 2dly, a COMMITTEE OF PHYSICIANS to conduct the experiments. To ensure universal satisfaction, it is suggested, that the Committee should consist of six of the oldest physicians of Boston; men, who from their age and character, are rather retiring from extensive business, than candidates for it; and that to these should be invited the physician of the small-pox hospital at Brookline. I would further ask leave to propose, that to these medical characters, should be associated as many clergymen, whose information, habits of enquiry, and benevolent views, would complete a committee, every way adequate to the important task, of forming, and laying, in conjunction with the board of health, before the public, a correct and unbiassed report of facts.

On this occasion, may I not be allowed to make a remark or two for the consideration of those, who from their daily occupations, cannot be supposed to have been in the habit of closely contemplating the works and operations of Nature? (Local opinions and prejudices rendered these illustrations necessary. A considerable proportion of the board of health were unbelievers in the efficacy of the kine-pock at the

time this memorial was presented.) Such are apt to imbibe erroneous opinions concerning what they denominate the mean and the noble, the great and the small, the trivial and the magnificent, which he, who is in the habit of closely contemplating the GREAT FRAME OF NATURE, the mutual connexion, combination, affinity, and harmony of parts, as well as the never ceasing circulation of causes and effects, cannot admit. Such do not consider, that, however the essential the distinction of bodies into great and small may be to us, they are not so in the view of the SOVEREIGN ARCHITECT, with whom an atom is a world, and a world an atom. Who then can stigmatize any work, or operation of nature, by the epithets of mean and trivial? I have been lead to these remarks on hearing some declare, that they never could have faith in an operation, or process, that had so mean and trivial an origin as this, now offered to the public, as their greatest benefit, and as the most valuable discovery ever made in medicine. The fact is gentlemen, the greatest benefits now enjoyed by man, both in art and nature, sprung from what is called mean and trivial origins. A few instances may illustrate my meaning.

Two or three people, cast away in ancient times, on the coast of the Mediterranean, made a fire to cook their victuals and repair their boat. In this operation, they happened to burn the plant Kali, which mixing with some sand, or coarse gravel, and all melting together, first produced glass; by means of which we can not only bring distant objects as if within our touch, but open an intercourse with the Heavens. May further, by the help of two or three pieces of glass fixed in a triangle of wood, the seaman can tell to a mile where he is, south or north of the equator. But shall we despise the telescope and the quadrant because they had so mean an origin?

Some other persons playing with a little red stone, found that it attracted iron; and at length that a needle touched with it, would always point towards the north-pole. Some lucky mortal, like Jenner, took the hint, and with it formed the mariner's compass, by means of which the sailor traverses the trackless ocean, in the darkest night, with perfect safety.

If we turn from these instances in art to those of nature, and consider the causes of the wealth and power of nations, do we not see similar instances, full as striking? Is not a popper-corn the foundation of the power, glory and riches of India; as is the acorn of that renowned nation, whence we of New England sprang? "A truth, constantly found," says Bruce, "in the disposition of all things in the Universe, is, that GOD makes use of the smallest means and causes, to operate the greatest and most powerful effects."

Let us then no longer be told of the contemptible origin of that benign remedy, which PROVIDENCE has destined for the preservation of your offspring from a loathsome and destructive plague. The earth maintains not a more clean, placid, healthy, and useful creature, than the COW. She is peculiarly the poor man's riches and support. From her is drawn night and morning, the food for his ruddy children; while the more concentrated part of her healthy juices is sold to the rich in the form of cream, butter and cheese. It would indeed be uncomfortable to live without this animal, as she supplies man with more conveniences, and at a less expence, than any other quadruped in the creation. When we have exhausted her by age, her flesh serves for our nourishment, while every part of her has its particular uses in com-

"The board of health is principally composed of commercial men and sea captains retired from business. Hence the reason for selecting instances in the commercial and nautical line.

morce and medicine. On these accounts she is an useful, though invisible wheel in the great machine of state.* Hence we cease to wonder that this useful domestic animal was consecrated among antient nations, as an object of worship.

you will readily see gentlemen, that this memorial, though meant to carry every mark of respect, is not made in the stile of cringing solicitation, like a man exclusively interested in the event, and actuated by personal motives merely; but of a man conscious of his duty, and zealous in promoting a public benefit every way worthy of your patronage; a benefit of more real value to the town of Boston, than all the riches contained within its limits. You will also remember, that the main object of this address is not to persuade you blindly to patronize the new inoculation, but to induce you to cause a rigid inquiry to be made into the truth of my assertions, and to have them subjected to the test of A PUBLIC EXPERIMENT, by a set of men, whose knowledge, age, and virtues, will create confidence, and inspire satisfaction.**

Benjamin Waterhouse.

Cambridge, May 31st, 1802.

"The Board of Health paid a prompt attention to this address, adopted and pursued the plan here suggested in every particular, excepting that which related to the physician of the small-pox hospital in Brookline; and that which regarded the gentlemen of the clergy. I grieved in silence that they mutilated any part of my plan, yet would not utter a word, lest it should impede their meritorious exertions. Partial to my original idea, I must nevertheless be allowed to remark, that if to the six oldest Physicians of Boston, had been added the six oldest Divines, they would have formed a weighty and dignified jury, whose verdict would have been everywhere, and forever have silenced the insinuations of the ignorant and mischievous respecting interested and professional motives. In 1721, six clergymen of Boston did more in strengthening the hands of Dr. Boylston, than any six hundred people that could have been selected in the Province. For these reasons I have never ceased to regret that that part of my design was not likewise adopted.

*The word wealth was derived from this species of animals, viz, pecunia from pecus. Hence it was that the first money ever coined in the world, had a cow stamped upon it, as a portable representative of riches.
 **That is, a committee of six of the oldest physicians, and six of the oldest clergymen in Boston, together with Dr. Aspinwall.

Had the Board of Health hesitated in pursuing the plan in general, chalked out in my memorial, I had determined to petition the Legislature for a law to prohibit what is called a general inoculation for the small-pox, and to confine the inoculation for it to two or three hospitals. I should have grounded my petition on this solemn truth, that under the most favourable circumstances of the inoculation, some die immediately,* or by some slowly wasting disease; or if they escape with life, are liable to a loss, or injury of some of the senses; whereas a kind Providence has now afforded us a mild and easy substitute, that has never proved fatal in a single instance.

To have expected such a law at present, from the representatives of this land of liberty, savoured more perhaps of the sanguine expectations of a projector, than the cool reasonings of a politician; but the great object of my wishes would nevertheless have been obtained by such a petition, which was, an examination of the prophylactic power of the king-pock, by a COMMITTEE OF THE ELDER PHYSICIANS, DIVINES, AND GENTLEMEN OF THE LAW.

The Board of Health however, pursued the main object with unremitting attention and success. On the 16th of August, 1802, nineteen children were inoculated for the king-pock at the Health Office in Boston; and went through the disease to the entire satisfaction of the physicians, and of the board.

On the 9th of November following, these nineteen children, with another, who had the king-pock two years before, were sent to Koddle's Island, which is about a mile from the long wharf of Boston, and there inoculated with the variolous matter. Two children were at the same time inoculated for the small-pox, with a view to compare the progress of the local affection in each, and also to afford a stock of fresh matter for a reinoculation; and to obtain moreover a perfectly variolated atmo-

* More than 200 died in Boston during the last inoculation.

phore, so that the infection might be applied to the lungs, as well as to a wound in the skin."

The committee made a report, describing the experiments and closing as follows,-

"Each of the children was examined by the subscribers, who were individually convinced from the inspection of their arms, their perfect state of health, and exemption from every kind of eruption on their bodies, that the cow-pox prevented their taking the small-pox, and they do therefore consider the result of the experiment as satisfactory evidence, that the cow-pox is a complete security against the small-pox."

JAMES LLOYD M.D.
SAMUEL DANFORTH M.D.
ISAAC RAND M.D.

JOHN JEFFRIES M.D.
JOHN WARREN M.D.
B. WATERHOUSE M.D.

Continuing his narrative Dr. Waterhouse says, "Dr. Charles Jarvis was appointed one of the committee, which completed the number of Boston physicians I had originally in view; but he did not attend through the whole procedure, and therefore did not sign the report.

Several other gentlemen, who witnessed the whole, or part of this public experiment, corroborated the testimony of the committee by their signatures.

This decisive experiment, which has fixed forever the practice of the new inoculation in Massachusetts, was instituted three years and eight months after my first publication of the existence of such an epizootic distemper, as the cow-pox; and about two years and four months after I made the first experiment with it in America.

Perhaps it may be asked hereafter, why was this experiment delayed so long? He who is best acquainted with human nature will be the last to wonder at it. 'Every deviation from established practice, every medical theory which overturns old and deep rooted opinions, must always encounter opposition. This opposition is natural to the human mind; and he must be a philosopher possessed of wonderful powers of self denial who can wholly suppress the sigh of sorrow, when he contemplates another's

fame'.

In a newspaper article at this time Dr. Waterhouse, in referring to the test at Noddle's Island, said he considered the matter "was so completely demonstrated, that nothing that I could ever say would add much to its credit, so that upon publishing a small volume containing everything I knew on the subject of vaccination, and doing everything in my power to establish a vaccine institution for gratuitous vaccination, I slackened my exertions and ceased writing in support or defence of the practice. I felt that I had fulfilled the vow I had made to introduce, not a transient lucrative practice for my own personal emolument, but an easy commutation tax in lieu of that horrible one the small-pox. I considered myself engaged in an effort to diffuse the blessings of vaccination, first through the metropolis, and then through every part of our country. No personal benefit or ambition could have induced me to have thus contested with the incredulous the indolent and the interested. Disposed to ease and quiet retirement, nothing merely personal could have induced me to provoke the opposition, or to stir up those passions which do the least honor to the human character."

It is evident, however, that in spite of the above experiments and report the question was not settled in the minds of many until some years later. So much confusion and uncertainty resulted from the numerous claims and reports as to the result of the new method that the Massachusetts Medical Society appointed a committee to thoroughly investigate the whole matter. This committee made a report to the Society at a meeting held June 1, 1808, and it was voted "That in the opinion of the society persons who undergo the cow-pox are thereby rendered as incapable of being affected by the virus of small-pox, as if they had undergone the latter disease."

This conclusion was published in the newspapers of the day and

and practically put an end to the controversies and doubts felt concerning the efficacy of the practice. Writing of the action of the Medical Society Dr. Martin says,-

"It was not until June 1808 that the Massachusetts Medical Society accepted the report of a committee on vaccination, and thus tardily and ungraciously yielded its countenance to the beneficent doctrines which had been welcomed with enthusiasm, while its author had been loaded with every honor ~~which honor~~ which gratitude could inspire, by every civilized country. Will it be believed that this committee of three did not include, although he was one of the oldest members of the Society, the man whom Jenner had selected as his champion, and who, singled handed, had fought the fight, and long before, won the fight for vaccination in America? In that committee's report, made up entirely from long excerpts from English books and journals, Waterhouse's name does not once appear. Who knows now of all this old persecution, unfairness and unworthiness. Those only who have looked more deeply into Waterhouse's long stewardship can know how readily, when the erroneous notions and practice of Woodville bore their inevitable, disastrous fruits, not only in England but in this country, the man whose name Boston medical after dinner orators even now mention as the promulgator of vaccination in America BEFORE or even to the exclusion of Waterhouse rushed rapidly into print to recant his full faith in Jenner and vaccination. Who knows that the Medical Society of Massachusetts, opposed Waterhouse and vaccination, as taught by Jenner, for ten long years, and won for Massachusetts, the dubious distinction of being the very last civilized State whose profession, by its acknowledged executive, recognized vaccination. Who could even guess, when glib annual orators claim as one of the chiefest labors and services of what they call 'the time-honored glorious old conservative Massachusetts Medical Society' the exclusive agency of first introducing vaccination into Massachusetts and this wide union of States, the truth that that Society through its executive, did all it could to oppose vaccination, to hinder, vilify, and persecute the noble man, who in face of obstacles innumerable, struggled for the truth and won- won! What? Poverty, persecution, bitter and mendacious, and a fame so great and lasting that only hear and there an eccentric student knows more than his name."

In August and September 1809 Dr. Waterhouse vaccinated upwards of 1500 persons in New Bedford, Mass., and also many in Milton and other places. August 29th he wrote Gov. Gore, of Massachusetts, urging the necessity of a general vaccination throughout the State. In a speech Jan. 25, 1810, the latter presented the matter to both branches of the Legislature, being the first Governor to bring the subject to the attention of any Legislature in the country. Evidently no action was taken, however, for some fourteen years later the Doctor sent the Legislature the following petition.

To the Honorable the Senate & the Honorable the House of
Representatives of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, in Gener-
al Court Assembled.

"The Petition of Benjamin Waterhouse most respectfully sheweth,
That it is Twenty-four years since your Petitioner first introduced
the Kine-Pock inoculation into this country; and after an exertion of
several years, established its character as an effectual preservation
against that most loathsome of plagues the small pox.

Although many have availed themselves of the profered blessing, it
is nevertheless a fact, that not more than a quarter part of the in-
habitants of this Commonwealth have submitted to vaccination. By far
the greater number of children are still liable to Small Pox; and this
will continue to be the case unless some more general & efficacious
measures should be taken, than ever yet have been adopted by us:

The Small Pox has now made its appearance in the county of Middle-
sex, a few miles from the place where vaccination was first practised;
and at a season unpropitious to such distempers, and to the practice
of its substitute.

As no Town is secure from such alarming events in the midst of win-
ter, your Petitioner is impelled to entreat the Honorable the Legis-
lature to devise and encourage a more effectual plan than has hitherto
been adopted, in order to exterminate the small pox forever from the
land; as has been done by some of the Governments of Europe.

All which is submitted, with deference and respect, to the wisdom^{and}
Patriotism of the Legislature of Massachusetts in General Court as-
sembled."

Benjamin Waterhouse.

Cambridge

Jan. 13, 1824

As a result of this petition a bill was drafted providing,-

- 1st That the Mayor and Aldermen of the City of Boston and the Select-
men of the towns be authorized to cause all persons above the
age of two years and under twenty-one who have not had the small
pox to be vaccinated at the expense of the City or Town provided
the consent of the parents, master or guardian be obtained.
- 2nd That no master of any public school shall admit any scholar who
has not had the small pox or been vaccinated.

This bill, amended by striking out section two, passed the Sen-
ate and through two readings in the House but was then defeated.

Dr. Waterhouse claimed to have sacrificed his private medical
practice as the result of his labors in introducing and diffusing the
practice of vaccination. "Even Natural History," he says, "stood almost
neglected." Influenced, probably, by the fact that the British Parlia-
ment had granted Dr. Jenner a handsome remuneration in recognition of

the great work he had accomplished he evidently contemplated petitioning the Legislature for a similar recompense, as a public benefactor, because of his work in behalf of vaccination in America. In a letter from Dr. Jenner to him dated Nov. 16, 1807, we find the following,-

"I know not when I have received a letter from you, which afforded me so much satisfaction as yours of the twenty fourth of Sept; as it intimated to me a design of your friends, to apply to your Government, to requite your vaccine labors with a remuneration. Most ardently do I hope that the application may be successful, and to such an extent as may much enlarge your sphere of happiness. I feel confident that the opposition you have encountered, the difficulties you have surmounted, and the sacrifices you have made, in preserving your fellow countrymen from the most baneful of disorders, cannot fail to strike your Legislature as entitling you to no ordinary notice. Allow me to add, that the granting favors to the man, whom I have the satisfaction to rank among the earliest, the most active, and the most successful of my transmarine disciples, I shall ever feel as an honor conferred upon myself. Write again soon, as I shall most anxiously wait the arrival of another letter, and be most sadly disappointed, if it does not convey to me intelligence of a very pleasing nature.

The British Parliament, as you have seen by the papers, have at length acted liberally towards me. This act of theirs, founded in a great measure on the report presented to them by the Royal College of Physicians on the subject of vaccination, has put to shame those misguided persons, who so long malevolently abused the practice, in a succession of the most wicked pamphlets that ever issued from the press."

In opposition to Dr. Waterhouse's claim, however, some, including several of the Boston physicians, members of the Massachusetts Medical Society, alleged that, through a spirit of selfishness, he tried to keep the vaccine virus in his own hands; that he demanded bonds from those to whom he did furnish it providing that he be given a share of the profits; and that in the introduction of vaccination he had acquired a lucrative practice.

These charges, with the Doctor's explanations and denial, entered into the very bitter newspaper controversy in 1806, already referred to, between Dr. Waterhouse and the Massachusetts Medical Society.

Regarding the first charge it would appear that in his anxiety to follow exactly the suggestions of Jenner the Doctor emphasized the necessity of using extreme care in the practice of vaccination so strongly that his motives were misconstrued. In referring to the matter in a let-

ter in the Boston Patriot in 1812 he says, "As to keeping the matter in my own hands, no such idea ever entered my mind. The thing was impossible, had I been weak enough, or sordid enough, to have entertained such a wish. The slanderous imputation is as foolish as it is wicked." In another place he writes, - "Not many months after this, (1800 or 1801) I again felt it my duty to warn the public against ignorant pretenders, and spurious cases. This disinterested advice, intended merely to preserve vaccination from disgrace, was attributed, by the most illiberal part of the profession to very different motives, viz., to create doubts and fears, and to raise difficulties and perplexities in order to confine the business to my own hands. This gave rise to an abusive publication, and to threatening anonymous letters."

That Dr. Waterhouse was justified in his warnings against the indiscriminate practice of vaccination may be seen by the following quotation from an article by Jenner himself, published in one of the medical journals of the time.

"I shall conclude this paper by observing that although the Vaccine Inoculator does not inflict a severe disease, he should be extremely careful to observe a just and clear conception of this important branch of medical science. He should not only be acquainted with the laws and agencies of the vaccine virus on the constitution, but with those of the variolous also, as they often interfere with each other. A general knowledge of the subject is not sufficient to enable or to warrant a person to practice Vaccine Inoculation; he should possess a particular knowledge; and that which I would wish strongly to inculcate, as the great foundation of the whole, is an intimate acquaintance with the character of the true and genuine pustule."

Historians of the Harvard Medical School, in referring to the matter, say that his action seems only to have been a proper precaution to prevent disaster in individual cases or to the cause he was so earnestly seeking to promote

Regarding the charge that Dr. Waterhouse exacted bonds from some to whom he furnished vaccine virus, by the terms of which he was to receive a share of the profits, which was considered unprofessional by some of the

Boston physicians, the Doctor says that the requests from physicians for the virus became so numerous that he could not afford to supply them gratis and so adopted this method but that it did not prove very satisfactory, the returns from it were small and it was soon abandoned.

After the newspaper controversy, before mentioned, had continued four or five months the editor, evidently thinking it was serving no useful purpose, declined to publish any more communications. The doctors had become so wrought up, however, that it took some little time for the tempest to subside and several short references to the matter appeared in later issues. Finally the incident was closed, so far as the paper was concerned, by the insertion of the following letter which shows clearly the Doctor's position.

Mr. Russell, the Editor, says,- "The following is not considered as a renewal of the Medical War, but rather as a scattering shot after the general battle."

For The Centinel.

Charlestown Apr.12,1806.

Mr. Russell,

"I have observed at sundry times of late, several advertisements respecting Dr. Waterhouse in point of his practice of diffusing the matter of the Kine Pock. This brought to my recollection a letter which I received from him more than three years ago, which if you will publish in your paper, will oblige one who has no other motive than that of Philanthropy.

Daniel Jackson.

A Letter from Dr. Waterhouse, to Major Daniel

Jackson, dated Apr.2,1803.

Sir,

I have reason to thank you, as well as Capt. Stoddard for so often reminding me to transmit my demand in a regular form for supply the surgeons with vaccine matter and instructions for the purpose of inoculating the battalion under your command, agreeably to the directions received from General Wilkinson.

It is proper now to inform you why I decline transmitting any account to the agent; and why I decline receiving any fee for the matter, or for any services I have rendered in this business.

The discovery of the cow pox was written to me by Dr. Lottson before it appeared in any printed book. As soon as I received further information from the discoverer, Dr. Jenner, and satisfied my own mind as to its efficacy, I began to publish in the newspapers the particulars of this extraordinary discovery, in order to prepare the public mind for the reception of the practice; which practice I commenced three years ago, with my own family, and then sent them into the small pox hospital. Since that period I have regularly published every important information as I received it from England; and kept not back any useful discovery made in my own practice; this I continued unremittently until all doubts were removed by the public experiment of the Board of Health, made in consequence of my memorial to them. Directly after this I published a small volume, containing all I knew both of the theory and practice of vaccination. During this anxious and arduous business, I was animated with more powerful motives than private emolument. But finding that this business was attended with expense, and foreseeing the sacrifice of my private practice to it, I conceived it necessary to devise some plan to bear me out in the expense attendant on the introduction of this new inoculation into the United States. A plan was therefore adopted; but not without the advice of some of the most leading medical and clerical characters in this, and several other States. It was in substance this:- To exact a certain tax from such practitioners, who, ignorant of the business, applied for matter and instructions for their own emolument exclusively. This scheme was however pursued in not a very rigid manner. It merely sufficed to keep the business from stagnation; for you will perceive, that I myself was, by a general agreement, in the place of a Vaccine Institution.

Notwithstanding I had the example of the Loyal Vaccine Institution of London to countenance me, yet I would gladly have avoided the tax, but not being a man of property, it was impossible. While therefore I sometimes imposed a small assessment on those who avowedly aimed to make money by it, I unremittently and gratuitously diffused the matter and written instructions to every part of the Union, to Medical Societies, Vaccine Institutions, and influential characters, as may be seen in the volume I have just published.

Supplying the means for inoculating the Battalion under your command, I can consider in no other light than that of a Public Benefit, and when considered in this view I have invariably refused any pecuniary consideration whatever. You may therefore, if you please, further explain this to the Honorable the Secretary at War, and to General Wilkinson; and assure them of my readiness to assist in the same way, and from the same principal, whenever the army may need it.

To you personally, I will say, that I have upon the whole, made nothing by this vaccine business; I have labored more for others than for myself. Dwelling in a Republic, I never expect a reward while I live. When I die I hope and believe, that some parents will then recognize my labours for the preservation of their children, and will be disposed to afford some protection to mine.

I am Sir, your humble Servant

Cambridge Apr. 2, 1803.

Benj. Waterhouse.

Writing on this subject in 1813 Dr. Waterhouse says,- "From what has been published from time to time, would not the public infer, that I never would dispense a particle of vaccine matter to the Physi-

cians of Boston and its neighborhood without a fee? They certainly would, whereas, I publicly challenge all of them, and each of them to produce a single instance where I did not give them fresh matter whenever they asked for it; and several times when my stock was reduced to two or three quills. I have divided this scanty portion with them. I only exacted the fee from practitioners from a distance with whom I had no personal acquaintance; and who were most commonly directed by the Selectmen of their towns to apply to me for matter, and for instructions, with the express direction of paying the fee for it. Can any man of ordinary feeling and reflection suppose that I would lay myself out to preserve the matter good, thro' all seasons, to supply every careless practitioner throughout the Union whenever they called for it? No man not entirely divested of common sense could for a moment have supposed that an individual situated and circumstanced as I am, could hire the children of poor people, as I sometimes did to be inoculated during the winter, in order to obtain fresh matter to give away to persons I had never seen nor heard of, whenever they chose to write to me. I will give any man as much annually to supply me with genuine matter, as I receive for it in the course of the year; for the trouble and anxiety of preserving good and efficient virus is accompanied with more disappointment and vexation than any other circumstance in the whole process of vaccination. But for my extreme care in this particular, the genuine matter would probably have been lost a dozen times over in the western hemisphere. On this pestering subject I court no praise, I am greedy of no applause, I only ask to be sheltered from mis-representation.- The public are my witnesses that I have hitherto been silent respecting the number that I have gratuitously inoculated. I believe that were I to announce the number, it would create surprize. I will only say here once for all, that I shall have no objection to contrast the number which I have vaccinated without a fee, with all those gratuitously inoculated by all the members of the Massachu-

setts Medical Society throughout the Commonwealth, allow^{me} to include in the estimate those I inoculated in Rhode Island.

The Vaccine Institution in London, under Royal patronage; the one in Baltimore under patronage of the State, and that under the patronage of the richest men in New York, dispense no vaccine virus without a fee; and what is here particularly worthy of remark, the Vaccine Institution of Boston composed of some of the very Physicians, who have abused me through the press, and in private circles for establishing a fee for matter then called for by strangers did themselves do the very same thing as Dr. Mann of Wrentham amply testifies."

In answer to the allegation that Dr. Waterhouse acquired a lucrative practice through the introduction of vaccination and that he had accumulated a handsome property we find this in one of his articles:- "Envyed as I was by some, for a supposed lucrative business, I can assure the public, that for the first two or three years I pocketed more affronts than fees." March 29, 1811, some ten years after he vaccinated his first patients, he wrote to President Kirkland of Harvard College, as follows,-

Dear Sir,

I received your letter with pleasure & read it with satisfaction, because I thought I perceived in it something inducing me to believe that you and I could do business together harmoniously. May I deem it impossible that anything like that acrimony which broke out between me & some of the college legislators can arise between us; for I never can charge you with personal ingratitude.

Instead of Twelve lectures, I should like to give 18, or 20. I must as you intimated adapt them to my audience, which will cost me some labour. I wish however to give at least four this term. Perhaps two in a week, and if you can so arrange it, at 9, or 10 o'clock. Thirty or thirty five minutes each time would be all I wish for. Circumstances do not, at present allow of it. Perhaps your removal from Boston to Cambridge, may give you some idea of the state of my mind in removing from Cambridge to Boston. It is like two opposite streams that form a whirlpool in which nothing advances. My sleep, my perspiration & my appetite are deranged and every day or two I am afflicted with a dismal sick headache, by which that day is wasted; and this will continue, I expect more or less until I get fixed in Boston.

I find it is expected of me that I give to the Committee of the Board of Overseers an accurate statement of the injury I have sustained in my income, by the alterations that have been made in my lecturing in this place. In order to do this properly as it regards my medical lectures I beg leave to ask of you some information, for really I

do not understand what I have read, and what comes to me by report from some of the senior class. I ask this information in the two fold capacity of a professor & a parent.

I learnt from the votes of the Corporation that we three professors were to give our lectures gratis. This I told to several who enquired of me.

By the late vote I learnt that instead of it, the Seniors who attended were to be assessed 10 dollars each in their Q. bills. I now hear that the Prof of Anatomy has obtained from about 30 undergraduates a subscription of 15 dollars each for that course which these young^{men} expected and had a right to expect from what had been said to them, gratis, or at most for their 10 dollars assessment, which makes up the 25 dollars which that Prof has for those students who attend him from abroad. Now I wish to enquire as a parent, whose son is to pursue medicine as a profession, if I am to be charged 10 dollars in the Q. bill, and then pay Dr. Warren 15 dollars more for his attendance on the course. If this be the case I have two objections to it. First as a professeeur I deem it a thing that will injure the character of our medical school, for the public will pronounce it unjust, because the expences of a subject &c is very trifling. Second as a parent, I declare to you that I cannot afford it; for almost every Lactéal by which I & my family drew nutriment from college has been cut off; inasmuch that I have been obliged as Judge Tendell & Dr. Holmes know, to take my two sons from Andover, because I could not afford to keep them there, nor to bring them up to college, and because I have been compelled to borrow money to pay the college dues of that son who graduated last year. Before that period the income from my natural history lectures not only paid my sons bills, but procured me my wood, my hay, & my cyder. Mr. Cannett can confirm this. Now I am indebted to the college treasury for wood and am paying interest for it, while the Corporation keep from me my compensation as Cabinet-keeper for about 8, or 9 months, & for my extra labour in three times arranging by their order the Cabinet, and which I presume will over ballance what I owe the Treasurer. The Corporation also withhold the payment of a bill, which I think they are bound in honor to discharge, due to David Frost, & which I expect to be sued for every day, the particulars of which I mean to give to the committee of the overseers, because my character has been cruelly handled in its discussion by the late Treasurer & Judge Davis, & which has been the subject of course remarks by the mechanics of Cambridge for a year or twp past, not very respectful to the college.

I applaud honest Pickering for his bold appeal to the public, and shall follow his courageous example; but hope to do it in a less angry spirit. This wretched scrawl ought to be transcribed, but the headache forbids, and leaves me only to add sentiments of respect to you officially & personally."

B. Waterhouse.

Probably because of this controversy and its after effects it was not until 1810 that the following petition was presented to the Legislature.

To the Honorable of the Senate and the Hon'ble the
house of Representatives of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts
in General Court assembled.

"The Petition of Benjamin Waterhouse most respectfully sheweth,-- That eleven years ago there was communicated to him the most important medical discovery ever made known in the records of human knowledge; it being nothing less than an easy, safe and effectual method of securing his fellow creatures from the most loathsome and widely wasting pestilence that ever was suffered to afflict mankind: for all the wars, throughout the world, for thirteen hundred years past, have never cut the thread of so many lives as has the Small Pox. A knowledge of the efficacy of the Kine or Cow Pock Inoculation, was communicated at a very early period of its existence to your Petitioner, even before experience had pointed out its beneficial effects in the Capital of the British empire. About this time, it was urged upon your Petitioner to secure to himself by competent means, the exclusive privilege of practicing this new inoculation; but your petitioner, at once, ever since, rejected the idea as inconsistent with his natural feelings and his principles. On the contrary, your petitioner labouriously collected facts and made experiments on his own children, and then from time to time published the result in the newspapers in a style so plain and simple, as to meet the comprehension of all. Your petitioner spent several years in elucidating doubts, removing difficulties and guarding this new inoculation in its disputed march against an host of enemies; at the end of which he published a volume containing all that he had experienced on this important subject; and all that he had received from the pure source of intelligence in England, Dr. Jenner. Your petitioner kept nothing back from the public, and even his own mistakes, when he conceived a knowledge of them would be beneficial to the public. In the very difficult and anxious business of preserving and distributing the vaccine matter, your petitioner followed the example of the Royal Vaccine Institution of London, and distributed it through the country on a plan equally liberal and equally beneficial. During this time vaccination absorbed his attention and abstracted him from more lucrative pursuits. Your Petitioner, anxious to promote the safety and welfare of his country men, exerted himself, during a series of years, to convince the incredulous that this new species of inoculation was a complete remedy against the Small Pox; that it was safe and efficacious at any season, any age, and under all circumstances, in either sex; that it left behind no blotish, but a blessing; one of the greatest ever bestowed on man, a perfect security against the most cruel destroyer of the human race.

Your Petitioner begs leave to remark, that his life has been chiefly spent in plans that have had the public benefit in view more than personal emolument; and that he has not enriched himself by vaccination or any other means. The Legislature are therefore left to judge whether a long series of labour and attention in this business, which has for its object the alleviation of the miseries of his fellow creatures, merits their remuneration.

Your Petitioner is ready and willing to devote the remainder of his days to the completion of the task he has begun, and of exterminating the small pox from the land. But at the same time he begs leave in the most respectful manner to say, that while he is thus labouring, to preserve the offspring of Others, he must not forget His Own. The nature and the extent of the remuneration are left to the feelings and wisdom of the Honble the Legislature-- And your Petitioner shall as in duty bound etc.

Benjamin Waterhouse.

January 1810.

The above copy of this petition was found in an article by Dr. Waterhouse printed in the Boston Patriot but it is apparently incomplete as the Columbian Centinel, in the legislative news in its issue of Jan. 27, 1810, refers to the petition as follows,-

"A petition was presented by Dr. Waterhouse, praying that some remuneration may be granted him for his service relative to the Kine Pock inoculation in the United States. In this petition in which the horrors of Small Pox are mentioned in pathetic language, Dr. Waterhouse observes, 'that more than two thirds of the inhabitants of this Commonwealth are susceptible of this cruel disease.' To which he added this very serious remark, that, 'half of our militia are at this time liable to take this foul distemper.' 'Who,' says he, 'but recollects and laments the distress and loss of lives, and frustration of military plans and operations by Small Pox, at the commencement of our struggle for independence in Canada?' Three quarters of the troops that went against Quebec, were cut off by Small Pox. The manner in which some of them suffered and died, are too shocking to relate. Our New England regiment lost all but about thirty men,--- Among these perished the gallant, worthy General Thomas. What a singular fact it would be in the history of a campaign, where a detachment dare not take a prisoner for fear of Small Pox? Yet such a thing has and may occur again! Yet Providence has given us a safe and easy remedy against this malady were we but wise enough to accept the proffered blessing."

The petition was referred to a committee of the House consisting of John Kellen, of Cambridge, John Ward, of Salem, and Geo. C. Lee, of Boston, which, after an investigation, made the following report.-

"The Committee to whom was referred the Memorial and Petition of Dr. Benj. Waterhouse, stating, and praying for a remuneration of his services relative to the Kine Pock, have attended that service and ask leave to report.

That they conceived it unnecessary for them to enter into a particular enquiry relative to the importance of the discovery of inoculation for the Kine Pock, or the evidence that this disease (if it deserves the name) is a perfect security against that most destructive pestilence, the Small Pox. On this subject it is presumed there can at this time scarcely exist any difference of opinion, after the public testimonials of so many distinguished physicians, and the numerous tests which have been so carefully and judiciously conducted in our own country, after the patient, critical and extended investigation of the subject, before the Committee of the House of Commons in England, on the petition of the celebrated Dr. Jenner, to whom the honor and the reward of this invaluable discovery was, on their report, adjudged; and after so many of the civilized nations of the world, have, by adopting the practice of this inoculation, set their seal to its wisdom and importance.

It has been the endeavor, as it appeared to be the appropriate duty of your committee, to examine with care and impartiality the claims and merits of Dr. Waterhouse the petitioner, on account of the distinguished part which he has taken in the introduction of this happy discovery into this Commonwealth, and disseminating the knowledge and practice of it in this and the other States of the Union.

From a variety of documents, exhibited to your committee, they are satisfied that Dr. Waterhouse received the knowledge of the efficacy of the Cow or Kine Pock as a security against the Small Pox, in a letter from Dr. Jenner, dated as early as November 20, 1798, and that he announced the discovery in the Columbian Centinel of the date of March 12, 1799, which, your committee find no reason to doubt, was the first public communication on this subject made in America; and which appears to have been made, no more than fifty days after the first person was vaccinated in London.

It appears that on the 8th of June 1800, the petitioner succeeded in inoculating one of his children with the vaccine matter (several parcels of the matter previously sent to him from England having lost their efficacy;) and that this child was the first which, in this way at least, received the disease in America--- As also that Dr. Waterhouse soon after went successfully through the novel, interesting, and anxious experiment of testing the efficacy of the disease on several of his family in a neighboring Small Pox Hospital.

Your committee are satisfied that your petitioner at first engaged and has since persevered in the humane and noble design of exterminating that formidable destroyer of the human race, the Small Pox; with that enthusiastic and unremitting ardor which is indispensable to the success of any enterprise in which it is necessary to dispute, the ground against ignorance, prejudice, ridicule, envy and self interest. It appears that he has been laborious and indefatigable in collecting facts, experiments, and every kind of interesting intelligence on this subject; that he was the favored correspondent of those gentlemen in England who were best able to furnish such intelligence; and that he communicated no less freely than he received, keeping back nothing from the public which in his view had a tendency to render the blessing of vaccination as extensive as it is invaluable. It is evident that his correspondence has been extensive and voluminous, and it is easily credible that the expence of printing and postage must, as he assured your committee, have fallen heavily upon him.

To a considerable portion of the great number which he has inoculated, it appears by his records that his services were gratuitous. And although it is not pretended that he is poorer for what he has done in this new line of practice, yet your committee are far from supposing that by means of it he has made himself rich. Nor will they undertake to calculate how rich he might have been, if instead of so liberally communicating his knowledge on this interesting subject, he had availed himself of every advantage which the concealment of it might have given him. Be this as it may, your committee are confident in giving as their opinion without derogating in the least from the merits of those who have worthily and successfully labored in the same cause, that it is owing to the laudable and distinguished exertions of Dr. Waterhouse, that the invaluable blessing of vaccination was so early, and is now so extensively realized by the people of this Commonwealth. Without controversy, he has deserved highly of his fellow citizens. Nor has he been without honor, in other countries, whatever has been his fate in his own. In Europe he has been styled 'The American Jenner;' and if to any individual on this side of the Atlantic this honorable appellation may justly be applied, who will say, it is not to him?

On the whole your committee are unanimous in their opinion that it is perfectly consistent with truth and propriety to consider the petitioner as a public benefactor, and therefore that it well comports with the duty, may they not add, the honor of this legislature, to do something in answer to the prayer of his petition which will not only

express their sense of the merit of his distinguished services in the cause of humanity, but confer a substantial benefit on him and his family.- With those views your committee would not think themselves justified in reporting less by way of remuneration and encouragement to the petitioner than is proposed in the resolve which is herewith submitted."

John Mellen.

Joshua Ward.

George G. Lee.

Commonwealth of Massachusetts

In the House of Representatives Feb. 12 1810.

"On the memorial and petition of Benjamin Waterhouse, representing his early and continued exertions and services in introducing and extending the Kine Pock inoculation, and praying for assistance and remuneration, RESOLVED for the reasons set forth in the memorial and petition, that there be, and hereby is granted to the petitioner, one township of land, of the dimensions of six miles square, to be laid out and assigned from any of the inappropriated lands belonging to this Commonwealth in the District of Maine, excepting the ten townships purchased of the Penobscot Indians, under the direction of the committee for the sale of Eastern lands, at the expense of the petitioner, the same to be vested in said Benjamin Waterhouse in fee, provided the usual reservation be made of three lots in said township, of three hundred and twenty acres for public purposes."

Dr. Waterhouse writes in an article in the Patriot that this report was taken up almost at the close of the session; that he knew nothing of its contents until about five minutes before it was laid on the Speaker's desk, but as he discerned no politics in it, he had no doubt of its "going through." As soon as it was read, however, "a member from the county of Hampshire, a medical man, arose up in his place, and attacked severely the petition and the petitioner." The speaker made the same old charges, that the Doctor showed a spirit of sordidness in distributing the vaccine virus and would not furnish the same unless persons put themselves under bond to give him part of the fee. as he, the speaker knew by experience. Dr. Waterhouse tells us that as soon as he heard of this speech he sought the man, who acknowledged that he had never had any communication with the Doctor, directly or indirectly, and that he obtained his information from someone at a distance. He promised to have the

resolve called up again and this was done but the House records for Friday, Mar. 2, 1810, show that it was refused a third reading which ended the matter. Dr. Waterhouse then found "that pains had been taken to defeat the petition." Dr. Martin says that the "dignataries of the Massachusetts Medical Society lobbied against the petition."

Although the controversies between Dr. Waterhouse and the Boston doctors brought about a state of feeling which prevented the most of them from giving him the credit, undoubtedly due him, for his labors in behalf of vaccination, those farther away, both in point of time and distance, have expressed their appreciation of his work in no uncertain terms. In a letter dated at Dumfries, Virginia, Dec. 7, 1802, Dr. Spence, "one of the most zealous, philanthropic, and successful inoculators in Virginia," says,-

"Through your unrelenting exertions, however, which exceed all praise, a solid foundation is laid for its future advancement. The prejudiced and uninformed people, who in some places, undertook to oppose the new inoculation, are now either convinced of their error, and obliged to retract, or subdued into silence and shame. This victory over error, prejudice, and passion, is perhaps the most pleasing and important information I can give you. It ensures the triumph of vaccination in this quarter of the Union."

"I have lately seen Sir Alexander McKenzie's Voyages through North America; and read with horror, the account he gives of the ravages of the small-pox among the poor deluded Indians. Fortunate has it been for the Jennerian discovery, of which you are justly regarded as the Founder in the New World, and which you have supported and propagated with so much judgment and ability, that the vaccine virus was committed to the care of so illustrious an Indian Chief as Little Turtle; a man no less beloved by his people, than distinguished as a warrior, a statesman, and a philanthropist. How gratifying to your feelings must it be, on perusing these voyages, to think that under Heaven, you may be the happy instrument of warding off so much human misery, and furnishing even the savage tribes in the distant wilds of America, with a shield of protection against the most dreadful foe that ever assailed them!

That Heaven may more and more bless your labours, and that you may be blessed with length of days, to see the universal triumph of vaccination over one of the most dreadful foes to health, to beauty, and to life, in the whole catalogue of human afflictions, is the sincere prayer of,

Your ever grateful and most obedient humble servant,

John Spence.

Dr. Waterhouse.

*in Virginia.

John Adams, while President of the United States, writes to the Doctor as follows,-

"I have read your history of the kine-pock with great pleasure. Your zeal and industry in giving these experiments fair play in America, deserve the thanks of all the friends of science and humanity."

Thomas Jefferson, as already noted, while President, in a letter dated at Washington, Dec. 25, 1800, writes,-

"In this line of proceeding you deserve well of your country; and I pray you to accept my portion of the tribute due to you, and assurances of high consideration and respect."

Although living in a new world, remote from the centers of learning, Dr. Waterhouse maintained so close a correspondence with the leading physicians of England, that he was little less celebrated in that country than in his own for his labors in behalf of vaccination. Dr. Lettsom, before mentioned, a noted physician of London, in an elegantly written account of the four most celebrated promoters of vaccination, viz. Jenner, Woodville, Pearson, and Waterhouse, refers to the latter as follows,-

"My friend, Dr. Waterhouse, of Cambridge, near Boston, with a mind equally liberal and well informed, and possessing an ardent spirit of inquiry, which has been successfully exercised for the honor of his country, and the benefit of the community, by his extensive correspondence with Europe, was enabled early to avail himself of the discovery of the cow-pock, which he introduced into America: and which he has employed with undeviating success: and his countrymen now justly hail him their benefactor, as the Jenner of America: an appellation which was first applied by physicians of this city (London) to their transatlantic coadjutor."

Mr. Ring, of London, who has written a very complete history of the origin of vaccination, and of its progress through the world, speaks thus of its first appearance in America,-

"Nor is Constantinople the remotest seat of this beneficial practice, nor is Europe the utmost extent of its career. It has crossed the waves ~~the~~ of the Atlantick, and been adopted by Dr. Waterhouse, the learned Professor of the Theory and Practice of Physick in the University of Cambridge. Here the bright beam, that was to illumine the the realms of Columbia first dawned. Here the Jenner of America first appeared: 'and a new sun in a new world arose.'"

Dr. Jenner, himself, as already quoted, says,-

"Allow me to add, that the granting favors to the man, whom I

have the satisfaction to rank among the earliest, the most active and the most successful of my transmarine disciples, I shall ever feel as an honor conferred upon myself."

In a letter to Dr. Lettson, dated Nov. 10, 1802, Dr. Waterhouse says,—"Dr. Jenner has just sent me a present I highly prize, a silver box inlaid with gold of exquisite taste and workmanship, bearing this inscription 'Edward Jenner to Benjamin Waterhouse.' But Mr. King annexed the superscription in rather an hyperbolical style, 'From the Jenner of the Old World to the Jenner of the New World.' Long will it remain among the sacrae of my family."

At a later period Dr. W.M. Welch, of Philadelphia, in an address before a medical society, spoke as follows,—"

"The opposition which Waterhouse had to contend with, particularly in his own town, was very bitter and malignant. His character, private and professional, was frequently assailed in the most public manner, by both known and anonymous writers. Holding the pen of a bold and ready writer himself, he did not fear to meet a foe, however formidable in an open field of controversy; but he had the most utter contempt for an enemy behind a mask and to all such he replied, simply, in a classic phrase, 'Give me to see and Ajax asks no more.'"

Dr. Henry A. Martin, of Boston, writes,—"

"Waterhouse was, without any doubt, one of the very ablest and worthiest of the innumerable disciples of Jenner, was so esteemed by the great benefactor, and won the title of 'Jenner of America,' not by the favor of a clique or of some personal editor, or club of mutual admiration, but by the concurrent voice of the medical profession of Great Britain as expressed by the unanimous, enthusiastic verdict of the London Medical Society.

It is a pity that our profession should possess no memorial of a man in every way so worthy as Benjamin Waterhouse. It is a shame that the odium medicorum^x should have succeeded in obliterating and obscuring the record of so much and such rare sagacity and courage as his whole long life and apostleship of vaccination displayed. In conclusion, it is worthy of remark how very completely the mission of Waterhouse was accomplished. Through his direct means vaccination was introduced not only in Boston but in a very large proportion of the other cities and towns of America. Those not directly supplied with their first efficient virus by Waterhouse obtained it through the agency of Jefferson. It is by no means too much to say that Waterhouse and Jefferson were the two men to whom the introduction of vaccination in America was wholly due. However many as actively many as Cox, Seamen, Scofield and others, labored, none never even nearly approached these two in the success with which they propagated perfect vaccine virus, and, directly or indirectly, supplied every considerable city and town of North America, not only with their first efficient lymph but, over and over again, with fresh supplies when, as repeatedly happened through igno-

"From the Illiad. ^xill will of the doctors.

rance, neglect, or, more frequently, malpractice (mainly the result of following Cœxe's teachings, and collecting virus after the appearance, even after the decline of the arexolia) the precious contagion was lost. It is, of course not possible here to detail the facts on which this broad assertion is based. Enough that it is not rashly made, but the result and outcome of careful study of data quite sufficiently full although not accessible without difficulty. Let the assertion stand as made. When possibly it may come to be disputed it shall be proven. This remarkable and unique success was not due to Waterhouse and from him to Jefferson being the sole recipients of supplies of virus from England. To many others, societies, as well as individuals, ample supplies from Jenner and many of his earliest English disciples were repeatedly sent, but no record of any authenticity has been discoverable that any but Waterhouse and Jefferson succeeded in perpetuating VACCINA of a perfectly normal type such alone as could afford virus fit to be used in vaccination. The simple solution of this remarkable and quite exceptional success is to be found in the fact that Waterhouse was a true and faithful disciple of Jenner, that Jefferson was equally loyal to the MASTER, and that both religiously observed his "gokdaxaxax" 'golden rule:' while the practice of a very large proportion of American physicians was unfortunately influenced by teachings which criticized and even ridiculed that rule: teachings which have not, even yet, fulfilled all their mission of evil and injury to the cause of vaccination in America."

Dr. Waterhouse's publications on this subject are

"A prospect of exterminating the Small Pox, being the history of the Cow, or Kine Pock, as it appeared in England, with an account of a series of inoculations, performed in Massachusetts in 1800."

"A continuation of a narrative of facts concerning the progress of the Inoculation, together with practical observations on the local appearance, ^psymptoms and mode of treating the Kine Pock, ect., etc.," 139 pages.

A sketch of the Doctor's life, published in 1806, says of this publication,-

"This elaborate work has been highly recommended in different parts of Europe for the most accurate description of the disease, and for many new and curious physiological observations. It is considered in England as a standard work on the subject of vaccination."

Dr. Martin, referring to Dr. Waterhouse as a writer says,-

"He was the author of the very earliest literary medical productions in Massachusetts which have the slightest claim to consideration and remembrance."

Of the above work Dr. Martin speaks as follows,-

"This is by far the most important work on vaccination which

has yet appeared on this side the Atlantic. This assertion is made *with* the full knowledge of the works of Seaman, Scofield and the still more ambitious productions of Dr. Coxé of Philadelphia.

Reading this book of Waterhouse, we cannot help feeling sincere respect and admiration for the sagacity and enthusiasm of the author. That seems simple and familiar enough to us presented many and very difficult problems then. In solving them he faithfully followed every indication afforded by the MASTER, but at every turn difficulties arose, difficulties in the subject itself, in the false teachings of Woodville, Coxé, Pearson and others, and resulting from the malpractice of his 'brethren,' in which the aid of Jenner, in those days of slow and precarious communication with Europe was not available, in which his own wisdom and courage must aid him. It is pleasant to recall that they never failed him, and his book is so sound in every important part of his subject, that, even now, "it may be read with infinitely more advantage, and less danger of erroneous teachings than many, perhaps, most of the more modern, better known, and far more frequently consulted works on vaccination."

During the years that Dr. Waterhouse was devoting so much of his time to the introduction of vaccination he was attending to his duties in the College and was engaged in various other activities, an account of which we will now give, including some reference to his personal relations with the professors and the members of the college government during the remaining time of his connexion with the University.

July 6, 1791, he delivered a discourse at Concord, Mass., before the Middlesex Medical Association, on "The Rise, Progress, and Present State of Medicine," which was afterwards published. In 1792 he was a Vice President of this association.

Aug. 3, 1803, we find him writing to the President of the College, calling his attention to the lack of care being given to some of the anatomical specimens and concluding as follows,-

"I am more and more confirmed in the opinion of the necessity of forming the medical Professorships into a Faculty, with an annually presiding Dean, in conformity with the usage of other medical schools in Europe and America. At present we medical Professors are more segregated particles. By the organization hinted at, we shall feel a principle of union pervading and animating our institution: without it, we shall continue to languish: without it Dartmouth College, which has only one medical Professor, but sixty medical students, including some undergraduates: Philadelphia about 200: New York about 100,- will continue to

"outstrip us. By such an arrangement, we shall avoid the strange mixture of dissimilar branches: and shall obviate the expressions of discontent so often uttered by the friends of the Benefactors of our Medical Department. By such an arrangement we Professors will not be again called on as private practitioners to judge of subjects of which we are the official teachers, and consequently official judges. It would indeed be a severe reflection, not merely on the University, but on the Commonwealth, who chose us, if, after being twenty years in office, we did not know all those things better than any individual not in the medical department. The officer who is not competent, or who neglects his duty, should be dismissed. As I have lately spoken my opinion unreservedly to several members of the Corporation, I thought it no more than proper to express them as freely to you, and to say to you, as I have said to some of them, that my interest and reputation are involved in the Medical Institution, and I cannot see it languish with unconcern, nor cease my endeavors to obtain its organization into the form of a Faculty, in which our powers and privileges will be defined, recognized, and guarded."

Nov. 20, 1804, he gave his celebrated lecture on health, containing the "General Doctrine of Chronic Diseases, showing the Evil Tendency of the Use of Tobacco upon Young Persons: more especially the Pernicious Effects of Smoking Cigars: with observations on the Use of Ardent and Violent Spirits in general."

This lecture was given in Holden Chapel before the students of the University, at the close of a course of lectures, and the following is an abstract:-

"Gentlemen:

During the first three or four years of our medical establishment I frequently found it needful to give public lectures in this place. Even eight or ten years after its establishment it was customary to commence and to close the medical course by a public^a lecture in the chapel. The custom however has been discontinued several years, as nothing special excited a wish to address you altogether. Whether the revival at this time, be for a trivial or beneficial purpose, you yourselves will judge. When our venerable forefathers fixed upon this spot as a fit place for the education of youth, they doubtless had regard to the health of the inhabitants. A gravelly plain, near the banks of a tide river, and in the proximity of the sea, together with good springs of pellucid water, must have led our sagacious ancestors to conclude that this was a salubrious spot for a college. Time has done honor to their judgment, as during one hundred and fifty years the town of Cambridge and the College have exhibited a succession of joyful instances of juvenile vigour, healthy manhood, and comfortable old age. Since my connexion with this University, as Professor, I can bear

^a"Public," here means all the students of the University, of every rank and class.

"testimony to the healthiness of the inhabitants of the town in general, and of the students in particular. I have noticed the young men within these walls with pleasure, as a blooming, cheerful, hungry assemblage of youthful activity. But does this charming picture any longer exist? Is it not fading and fading like a flower that has passed its bloom: and which is about to wither on its stick? If this idea be just, surely the cause of this faded aspect in the plants of our Seminary calls loudly and affectionately for investigation. If the full bloom of exuberent health once marked and adorned these seats, and this bloom has fled, or fleeing away: it is certainly an object of prime importance to enquire, whence this DETERIORATION? Were I not persuaded that it might be traced to a moral, as well as a physical source, I would not have appeared at this time before you. My motive is your welfare and the happiness of your parents: for what are riches and knowledge without health to enjoy them? But alas! the young, the gay, and the giddy abuse health through ignorance, and when better informed some of them refuse to stop, or lend a listening ear to the warning voice of Nature, and common sense: while 'he that taketh heed prolongeth his life.' It is proper to inform you that we are led in the order of instruction to speak, at this period of our course, of those disorders which mankind BRING UPON THEMSELVES BY THEIR OWN IMPRUDENCE."

The Doctor then goes on to describe chronic diseases and continues,-

"Having given you a description of cheerful health and its deviation into gloomy disease, let us see if we cannot discern some general cause, or causes, producing this declension.

Moral philosophers unite with physicians of the first rank in the opinion that all chronic disorders arise from either, 1st, vexation of mind, or 2nd, an indolent and sedentary life, or, 3rd, intemperance."

We omit his observations on the first two divisions and give abstracts from the last,-

"But who shall define Temperance? A word like 'liberty' different in signification in different countries. There is, however, an absolute determined temperance, measured by every man's unprovoked appetite and consumption, a mean at which virtue takes her stand. Instances of young gentlemen sinking deep into the scandalous habit of drinking ardent spirits are very rare indeed: yet it would not be difficult to prove that there is, and has been, for several years, six times as much ardent spirits expended here annually, as in the days of your grandfathers. Unruly wine and ardent spirits have supplanted sober cider. Many, warmed by the generosity of youth, may think it consonant with prudence to drink so as to produce that exhilaration of spirits, which takes place just this side of intoxication: but I hesitate not to pronounce that the repetition of such practices is pernicious to health and dangerous to morals. Cannot wisdom devise a plan of social intercourse independent of the stimulus of the bottle? Among the causes which act directly or immediately on the stomach, we mentioned, beside ardent and vinous spirits, certain narcotic substances. At the head of this class of drugs we place opium. To this class belongs also Nicotiana or Tobacco. ~~Now~~ This much for opium: but what shall we say of Nicotiana, or our beloved TOBACCO? With what caution should a man proceed in attacking a favorite of the people?

A prudent man, one who wishes to sail quietly down the popular stream, would be disposed rather to flatter and ~~xxxxxx~~ the popular applaud the object of their affections. But an honest man, who differs a little from him, commonly designated, can never flatter, where he feels a friendship. He will give the true character of a dangerous inmate, and warn his friend of the consequences of cherishing a viper in his bosom. You already perceive that although we give 'fair play' even to a treacherous enemy, yet Tobacco has done, and is secretly doing too much mischief to expect any more from us than a severe trial and rigorous justice. ***** I have been a Professor of this University twenty-three years, and can say, as a physician, that I never observed so many pallid faces, and so many marks of declining health: nor never know so many hectic habits and consumptive affections, as of late years: and I trace this alarming inroad on your young constitutions principally to the pernicious custom of smoking CIGARETTES. **** Nor is this all.--- Smoking creates an unnatural thirst, and leads to the use of spiritous liquors. I will not vouch for the truth of the common observation, that great smokers are generally Tipplers. They appear to be, however, different strands of the same rope.

Do you not, Gentlemen, see clearly, that this nasty, idle custom includes the insidious effects of indolence: and the pernicious effects consequent to the use of ardent and vinous spirits: destructive agents to ~~many~~ men, but which act with redoubled force on the more susceptible frames of youth. **** I am entirely convinced that smoking and chewing injures ultimately the hearing, smell, taste, and teeth.***

Some have said, 'that smoking cannot be an evil custom seeing most of the clergy follow it.' I am mortified that such authority can be adduced to opposed our advice.**** I will, nevertheless, venture to warn you, who expect to be clothed with the sacred function, against this inconvenient practice until you are, at least, fifty years of age. **** I can hardly believe there ever was a rigidly virtuous man, who became a slave to tobacco.**** I hope that those of the clergy, who follow this custom, will receive kindly, what I utter seriously, respectfully and affectionately. Strengthen, I beseech you, the hands of these youths, to relinquish a habit, which you know requires some exertion. **** Of the seemliness or decorum of the practice of smoking and chewing tobacco, more may be said than you will have patience to hear. Boerhaave observes that 'it is allowed by the universal consent of the more civilized nations, that spitting in company is both unmanly and nasty.' **** A physician should never use tobacco in any form: as some weak patients will faint at the smell.

The fashion of smoking was introduced into England by Sir Walter Raleigh in the reign of James I. The custom was followed by almost all the nobility and high officers of the realm to the great dissatisfaction of the fastidious monarch. So universally prevalent was this fashion, that his majesty could not readily find anyone to write or preach against it. He, therefore, wrote a tract himself, which he entitled, 'A counter blast to Tobacco,' a copy of which may be seen in the library of this University. He closes with this Royal Counter Blast, 'It is a custom, loathsome to the Eye, hateful to the Nose, harmful to the Brain, dangerous to the Lungs: and in the black, stinking fumes thereof, nearest resembling the horrible stygian smoke of the pit that is bottomless.'

To conclude --- The moral, to be deduced from our whole Lecture is the necessity of avoiding all predisposing causes to ULCEROUS DISORDERS: and obviating the remote causes of CONSUMPTION. Quit then, this pernicious habit, I entreat you, -- Take all your cigars and tobacco and in some calm evening carry them on to the Common, and there sacri-

fice them to health, cleanliness, and decorum.-- But, should perversity withstand all arguments deduced, we have one yet in reserve which is irresistible. The dangerous tendency of these practices no one can doubt: therefore abandon the custom, lest you pierce with anguish the hearts of your affectionate parents."

This lecture was published in 1805. In the preface the author says,-

"To the Medical Students, Resident Graduates, and
Scholars of Every Class."

"Your application for a copy of my lecture for the press indicates a disposition to persevere in the general resolution, to relinquish an unhealthy and unseemly practice. I shall set a value on this production, should I hereafter find that it has, in any way, assisted you in the attainment of that greatest of all earthly blessings 'A SOUND MIND IN A SOUND BODY.'"

Cambridge, Jan. 1805.

Benjamin Waterhouse.

One of the histories of the Harvard Medical School in referring to this lecture says,- "It is a vigorous argument, not sparing the Clergy, and calculated to do great good. Six editions were printed during the next fifteen or twenty years, and it was translated into several foreign languages."

In a letter to Dr. Lettson, of London, dated at Cambridge, May 23, 1807, Professor Waterhouse writes as follows,-

"You mention that on reading over again my Lecture on Tobacco, you was more gratified than at first. I may venture to mention to a friend, that this little production acquired more popularity than any medical or philosophical publication ever printed in America. It excited the attention of all parents who had sons in Colleges. It was popular with everyone who had journeymen, apprentices, or clerks, who were apprehensive of fire from smoking cigars. It was popular with the married ladies, whose husbands were in that habit, and it was violently popular with all the young ones who wished for husbands, and hated the smell of tobacco. It was a matter of serious consideration with the clergy, because it called their virtue in question. The subject was a standing joke after dinner, when the fruit, wine, and cigars were set on the table. Wherever I went in town or country, men, women, and children, were pointing me out as the gentleman who wrote against cigars. Did this feed my vanity? Not absolutely. I was mortified that my labours in Vaccination were, seemingly, less valued than my Smoking Lecture. You perhaps are not aware of the universal prevalence of this nasty custom. Upon nice estimation it was found that seventy thousand dollars were consumed in New York, in one year, in cigars. Dr. Ramsay, the historian, republished my lecture in the newspapers, and added his own masterly pen to my feeble pages; and Rush

and Mitchill added to it the weight of their approbation. I received innumerable letters from various parts of the Union in consequence of this simple publication. A short but neatly complimentary one from our Chief Magistrate I shall transcribe for its Ciceronian elegance:"

'Thomas Jefferson to Dr. Waterhouse.'

'Legerat hujus amor titulum nomenque libelli;
Bella miki, video, bella parantur, aib.'

'So Ovid introduces his book Remediorum Amoris. A Lecture against Tobacco was calculated to excite a similar alarm in a Virginian, and cultivator of tobacco. However, being a friend neither to its culture nor consequences, I thank you for the pamphlet, and wish a successful opposition to this organ of Virginian influence,* as well as to every other, injurious to our physical, moral, or political well-being. Accept my friendly and respectful salutations.'

'Washington, March 3, 1805.'

In the introduction to the fifth edition of the lecture, printed some eighteen years after its delivery, we read,-

"Since its delivery a new edition has appeared in London; and a French one at Geneva. A German translation was made and published in the year 1808 at Vienna by the learned Dr. De Carro. It has been reprinted in detached portions in So. Carolina with comments by the late eminent historian and physician Dr. Ramsey; and several Presidents or Rectors of Colleges, in different states, have caused it to be read in their chapels, as a warning to the young men under their care. Parents, guardians, instructors, masters, and other considerate people are alarmed at the revival of a custom, which this Lecture once nearly banished. The author has received many letters from clergymen, written in the language of extenuation. Excluded as they are from the indulgences common with ordinary men, they are loath to give up a gratification not absolutely sinful; and yet they are unwilling to stand conspicuous examples of a practice which they are inclined to discountenance in their children. After reading this Lecture, in which it is said that 'no rigidly virtuous man ever became a slave to Tobacco,' several renounced the use of it entirely; many more restricted the number of cigars from six in a day to two, and some to one."

In presenting a copy of this edition to Harvard College, Professor Waterhouse says, "In no country on the globe is there so much ardent spirits, & Tobacco used as in ours. Its influence on posterity may stamp a trait of character on our Nation."

Nearly three quarters of a century after its delivery, this lecture was used by the American Popular Life Insurance Company, 419-421

A well-known and even hackneyed phrase in New England, introduced by Jefferson's enemies.

Broadway, New York City, for general distribution among Temperance or other Societies, with the following title page,-

Discourse
by the celebrated
Dr. Waterhouse
Professor in Harvard University
Delivered in
1804

Upon Health, Licentiousness,
Intemperance and Tobacco.

The circular was sent from the office of the President of the Company, Dec.30,1871, with the following explanatory remarks,-

"Meeting with a transcript of this most excellent discourse of the celebrated Dr. Waterhouse, delivered as early in our century as 1804, previous to the inauguration of the TEMPERANCE REFORMATION; when, of course, his mind could not have been biased by extraneous influences, and his views would be those of pure science and disinterested benevolence, we were impressed by the force of his argument, and thought that its reproduction would do good. *** We hope, after this portrayal of the tendencies of not only strong but of weak ~~alika~~ alcoholic drinks by this calm, philosophic humanitarian, that we shall have no more fault found with this Company for asking such detailed questions in regard to the kind and quantity of alcoholic drink used by an applicant."

In several sketches of the Professor's life it is stated that ^{the} he was always displeased with fame of this lecture, but evidently this was due to the fact that he thought it received more attention than it should as compared with his labors in behalf of vaccination. When an old man he wrote thus, in reference to the matter, in his Journal.

"Which has been republished in London, Edinburgh, and Geneva, and, at Vienna; Strange! that this trifling production has procured me more fame than any others of my writing, because it was borne up in the air by fashion.

When I contributed so effectually to the eradication, nay extinction with that direful, scourge of the human race, the Small pox by spreading not only through Massachusetts, but New England, and not only New England, but the West India Islands, part Canada-- Nova Scotia, Newfoundland, and most of the West Indies, Dutch & French, it altogether appeared to fall short of the celebrity which arose from my Lecture against the pernicious effects of the inordinate use of tobacco. All of which shows that none of us can steer as he pleases the whimsical car

of fashion."

Among the papers of Professor Pearson,* now in possession of Phillips Academy, Andover, there is an interesting letter written by Professor Waterhouse to his old friend, John Quincy Adams. It was written just after the election of Samuel Webber as President of Harvard College.

Cambridge, March 30, 1806.

Dear Sir,-

"In the last letter which I wrote you, I was pleasing myself that we should have a President, that would break the scum, the thick scum, which has covered our collegiate pool. Although Mr. Ames is not so profound a scholar, nor so truly scientific as some others of the sons of Harvard, yet I hoped and believed that his brilliant talents would give science a more pleasing countenance than she has lately borne here. His declining set us once more afflict. All of us on the ground would have been well contented with Dr. Pearson, but, our Rulers in Boston, not to say Essex, uttered their veto; and to give it due force they talked him down; and talked their man, Dr. K.-- up; but the Corporation were disobedient and would not chuse him. What did they do next? They chose a man, whom no one ever thought of; a sort of negative character; a man without friends or enemies; a man as ignorant of the world as if he had never been born into it; a more mathematician; to which branch of science he is a bigot; a man who thinks that all the rest of the world are busy about trifles, mathematicians excepted! The Corporation have been censured not a little for this choice; and their excuse is, that in these times of innovation, it is best to keep the College ship in Dock, and not suffer her to venture near an enemy; that they studied safety rather than risk a voyage of discovery: If their reasons be admitted why did they chuse Fisher Ames? The truth of the matter is, they did as has been done more than once in the Roman conclave, disappoint all the fierce contending princes and intriguing courts by chusing a good but obscure monk, who had neither power or inclination to do good or harm. What has been the consequence of this surprising election? The consequence has been the banishment of Dr. Pearson. He retires to a small house in Andover with very little to live on, after being 18 years in the service of the college. It avails him nothing that he has enriched the college treasury, as it is said, 30000 dollars. He is suffered to go off with as

*"Professor Pearson had been, for twenty years, Hancock Professor of Hebrew, six years, a member of the corporation; and after President Willard's death, Sept. 25, 1804, for more than a year Acting President. A theologian of the old school, he gave up all hope of saving the College from the advancing tide of Unitarianism when Henry Ware was elected Professor of Theology, and retired to Andover, where he soon after was instrumental in founding the Andover Theological Seminary as a protest against the defection of Harvard."

4

little feelings of compassion as some people turn off an old, sick, decrepit cart-horse. Dr. P. had his notions, and labored to fortify them, yet was he a respectable man, a good scholar, and a faithful teacher. They accuse him of being at times passionate and cross. I never knew a good and faithful officer but what was. Who can have much to do with men, and with men's children, especially in controuling them and correcting them, and preserve a placid temper? But the man placed at the head of this great school, for it is but a school, never was known to be out of temper, say his advocates;-- if so, say others, he will never make a good and energetic officer. Such is the state of things at this time, in this place, and such are the feelings of all I have yet conversed with in the College instruction and government, one person excepted, who says nothing.

Under the circumstances I have taken the resolution to stay at home, and say nothing; but follow my medical and natural history lectures, and attend, as much as I can, to the education of my children myself. I could not, however, keep my silence towards you, because I know that you feel a particular interest in the present and future state of this seminary, and because I supposed that you would like to know how we stood affected in this place, under our new arrangement; and I knew that what I said to you would never be mentioned to the injury of any man's feelings. With the highest degree of respect and esteem, I remain your steady friend,

Benjⁿ Waterhouse.

Feb. 27, 1809, Professor Waterhouse writes President Webber making some carefully thought out suggestions as to the design for a contemplated medal in memory of the late Gov. Bowdoin, and closes his letter in this way. "If I have been too forward in obtruding my ideas, where I was not absolutely asked, my excuse must be, that I cannot withhold my hand from any labor that has for its object and end the Honor of a man, who, from the first day that I entered Massachusetts, to the day of his death, was to me more like a father, than an ordinary friend."

The following letter gives an interesting view of some of the conditions in his department.

Cambridge, March 26, 1807.

President Webber,

Sir,

"In answer to your letter of last evening, wherein you enquire if I wish to retain the privilege of using the North East room in 'Holden Chapel' - I answer, I never claimed it. When the chapel was undergoing repairs & alterations, & Dr. Pearson told me that the E.E. room was destined for me, I at once convinced him it would never an-

4
 swer my purpose. My imperfect vision requires the assistance of a strong light, whereas that room has but one window, and half of that is necessarily closed up. I experienced manifold inconveniences more than a dozen years for want of a proper room within the walls of the College, in which to give my medical lectures: at length I adopted the plan of giving them in my own home.

It may not perhaps be altogether amiss, at this time, to remark, that although the Corporation have been at considerable expense, first & last, in repairs, alterations, apparatus, &c., for the anatomical and chemical departments, it has so happened that I have never yet put them to one farthing expense for my department. The Anatomical Professor has his room fitted up to his mind and conveniency, which room I have the privilege of using for my Natural History Lectures, but there has never been the expense of a latch or a button on my account, or anything done in that room but for the conveniency, & at the request, of the Professor of Anatomy. I mention these things, because, when we Medical Professors petitioned the Corporation to give us, as is customary, the fees paid by the medical graduates, some one suggested that the fees were withheld in order to defray the expenses of the medical rooms in Holden Chapel. This observation, however applicable to Drs. Warren and Dexter, applies not to me, because I never had a medical room to lecture in, but have for more than ten years past subjected my family to the inconvenience of giving my medical course at my own house. If I have, as a Medical Professor, put the College Treasury to any expense, I am quite willing to be assessed for it; but if it be found, on examining the Treasurer's books, that during the 24 years that I have been a professor of medicine here, I have never been one cents expense to the College, why should these fees be withheld from me, contrary to the usage of all medical schools in this and other countries? My very slender annual income cannot be urged in support of it. I am persuaded this thing is not understood by the new members of the Corporation, and I am far from being certain that any of the members understand it, on which account I would thank you to lay this fact before them.

I am, with respect, your humble Servt.

1710076

Benjⁿ Waterhouse.

The necessity for hospital facilities in which to give the medical students the advantages of wider and more systematic training than could be obtained under the apprenticeship method, was early considered by the College authorities. As early as 1784 an attempt was made to secure clinical material for teaching. Application was made to the Town of Boston for the use of the infirmary at the Almshouse for the Professors of Surgery and of Theory and Practice, but without results. Some twenty five years later an agitation was begun for the erection of a hospital, there being at that time no public hospital in New England, and only three in the country. The movement resulted in the erection of a

marine hospital in Charlestown and the following letter from Dr. Waterhouse gives considerable information concerning the matter.

Cambridge, Feb. 9, 1803.

To Gen. Lincoln,

Dear Sir:-

"Since conversing with you on the subject of the Marine Hospital about to be erected in this neighborhood, I have thought it would afford you an opportunity of considering the matter to more advantage, in all its relations, were I to express my ideas on paper. About twenty years ago a medical school was annexed to this university. A course of lectures is given annually, in six branches of médecine, by the three professors. We have, however, felt and lamented the want of a hospital to which our pupils might repair to see our doctrine reduced to practice. This defect has been particularly felt in that branch which falls to my lot, viz. the theory and practice of Physic, and in that of Surgery. Many and various have been the attempts to supply this deficiency but they have all failed and left only the distant hope of a marine hospital for seamen in general, or a particular one by our National Government. When President Washington visited this university, in the course of his tour through these Northern states, President Willard conversed with him, in my hearing, on this very subject, and suggested the great public utility of an hospital in the single point of medical instruction, and particularly as it regarded surgeons for the Army and Navy; Gen. Washington coincided with Dr. Willard in the opinion, and said he thought it highly probable that our medical school would enjoy that advantage. The late Dr. Russell declared repeatedly, to me, that he would give more than merely the ground on which to build an hospital on two conditions; 1st, that it should be erected in his native place, Charlestown: 2nd, that it should be extended to the instruction of medical students, especially for the Navy; his idea, however, extended beyond seamen in the service of the Government. I will relate a few facts to show how much we need the privilege of such an hospital to complete our medical instruction. A few years since, when we were arranging our military matters and of course appointing surgeons for the Army and Navy, a very considerable portion applied to me for certificates of recommendation for these stations. Most of the applicants were young men who went from school into the college where, in the last part of their last year, they read a few books on médecine and attended a course of our lectures, then lived perhaps a year or two with some country practitioner; but most of them never saw an amputation, the operation of trepanning, and some of them not even the reduction of a broken or dislocated bone. As to fevers and the common diseases of seamen and soldiers, that was a knowledge they had yet to acquire; they and their connexions were nevertheless much disappointed and hurt at my hesitating to declare in writing that I deemed them qualified to take the charge of the health of two or three hundred men at sea--- In this state of things I visited Pres. Adams, at Quincy, and acquainted him with the slender qualifications of the medical candidates in general, and as I found I must give letters of recommendation, I explained that such recommendation only meant the best we had - but that the very best was, in my opinion, inferior to a surgeon's mate in a British Frigate. I thought I could speak with decision on this head having been two years in one of their marine hospitals, previous to our

revolution. It is well known how our poor seamen suffered for want of proper medical assistance a few years since. In Philadelphia and New York medical instruction is on a better footing than it is with us in this quarter, for the obvious reason they have hospitals for the admission of pupils to see the course of diseases, as well as surgical operations. In those cities they, in imitation of their elder brethren in Europe, make their hospitals answer two very important purposes; viz., the relief of the sick, and the education of Physicians and Surgeons. With this plan, in view of making the marine hospital answer the purpose of medical instruction, as well as the primary one of comforting and healing the sick and wounded, I have it in contemplation to apply for the appointment of Physician of it; as my view in conducting it, the general idea is,-

1st, To fulfill everything required by its institution respecting the sick and wounded. The rules and ~~respecting~~ orders respecting them to be considered as superceding all others.

2nd, To introduce pupils of physic and surgery to the bedside of the sick, and to all important chirurgical operations subjected to all those good and wholesome rules established in European hospitals.

3rd, To give a set of clinical lectures comprehending what may be called extemporaneous practice of physic and surgery, and also a short course of lectures on the most approved method of preserving the health of seamen, with other matters that may arise out of existing circumstances which cannot at present be foreseen.

I have communicated my ideas to but one member of Congress, Dr. Mitchell, who is so well pleased with the design that he advised me to lose no time in making my application. I therefore send you this sketch of my plan but shall wait for your further opinion upon it, and will act accordingly. In the meantime I remain with high respect and esteem, &c. &c.

Benjⁿ Waterhouse.

To Gen. Lincoln,

Boston.

Dr. Waterhouse was the second physician appointed in charge of this hospital, receiving his appointment from President Jefferson, and serving during the years 1808-9. One of the wards in the present Marine Hospital at Chelsea is named for him. During his term of office or at its close, as already mentioned, a report was circulated that he had been guilty of improper practices in his conduct of the affairs of the institution, and in the College records that the following action was taken at a meeting held Oct. 31, 1809.

"Whereas there are reports in circulation that Dr. Waterhouse, Professor of Theory and Practice of Physic in Harvard College, and lately surgeon to the Marine Hospital in Charlestown, has been removed from the latter office on charges said to affect his moral character, and which, if true, may affect his usefulness in College, therefore

Voted that Chief Justice Parsons and Dr. Elliot with such as the Honorable and Reverend Overseers may appoint to be a committee to enquire into the truth of said report, giving Dr. Waterhouse an opportunity of being heard thereon, and report a statement of such facts as shall result from the inquiry."

No report was made by this Committee until May 7, 1811, at a meeting of the Overseers and then only a verbal report with a request for ^{more} time. Finally, June 9, 1812, a report was made and accepted, but the finding was not recorded and although the report was ordered to be filed with the other "Waterhouse papers," it could not be found. However, in a letter written to the "Boston Patriot" in October, 1824, we find the following list of the charges,-

1. "Having charged, as directress to the Marine Hospital his wife under the name of Elizabeth Oliver.
2. Having charged James Smith as gardener to the Hospital, while he was living at the Doctor's house at Cambridge.
3. Having boarded pupils at the Hospital from its stores & also having entertained parties of pleasure from its stores.
4. Having taken from the Hospital property belonging thereto, such as wood, bread, meat &c.
5. Having supplied his own family with articles from the Butler, Baker, Grocer, which were charged to the Hospital.
6. Having (sold from) & charged to the Hospital vegetables which were (raised) on the land belonging to it and having the amount of vegetables rendered in bill as milk.
7. Having charged John Wilson scavenger at twelve dollars per month, when he was paid but four dollars per month.
8. Having neglected the patients of the house; having refused admittance to some, and dismissed others without cure for no misconduct.
9. Having admitted W^m Casey & Peter Seagraves into the Hospital both foreigners charging and receiving pay for their attendance, the one twenty-five dollars."

The letter also contained copies of several affidavits, purporting to sustain these charges, one of which, referring probably to the third charge, reveals the political animus with which they were, to some extent, at least, inspired, -viz. "that he has, when his own company has been of a particular political set taken every opportunity & means to

The first part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the general principles of the theory of the structure of the atom. It is shown that the structure of the atom is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics, which are based on the principle of the uncertainty of the position and momentum of the particles.

In the second part of the paper, the author discusses the problem of the structure of the nucleus. It is shown that the structure of the nucleus is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics, which are based on the principle of the uncertainty of the position and momentum of the particles.

The third part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the problem of the structure of the molecule. It is shown that the structure of the molecule is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics, which are based on the principle of the uncertainty of the position and momentum of the particles.

In the fourth part of the paper, the author discusses the problem of the structure of the crystal. It is shown that the structure of the crystal is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics, which are based on the principle of the uncertainty of the position and momentum of the particles.

The fifth part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the problem of the structure of the liquid. It is shown that the structure of the liquid is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics, which are based on the principle of the uncertainty of the position and momentum of the particles.

In the sixth part of the paper, the author discusses the problem of the structure of the gas. It is shown that the structure of the gas is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics, which are based on the principle of the uncertainty of the position and momentum of the particles.

The seventh part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the problem of the structure of the plasma. It is shown that the structure of the plasma is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics, which are based on the principle of the uncertainty of the position and momentum of the particles.

In the eighth part of the paper, the author discusses the problem of the structure of the solid. It is shown that the structure of the solid is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics, which are based on the principle of the uncertainty of the position and momentum of the particles.

The ninth part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the problem of the structure of the liquid crystal. It is shown that the structure of the liquid crystal is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics, which are based on the principle of the uncertainty of the position and momentum of the particles.

sneer at & vilify the character of the President & secretaries."

What seems to be a copy of the report of the College committee ~~was finally found~~ was finally found among the "Warren papers" in the possession of the Massachusetts Historical Society. In this report there are only five items corresponding to the 1st., 5th., 6th., 7th., and 4th., in the above list, the other charges probably not having sufficient basis to warrant investigation. Upon the five charges mentioned the Committee reports as follows,-

"Your Committee transmitted a copy of each of the foregoing charges to Dr. Waterhouse and having several times heard him thereon ask leave to submit the following report.

As to the first charge that Dr. Waterhouse did return Elizabeth Oliver as directress of the Hospital when no person of that name had been employed in the Hospital.

Dr. Waterhouse stated to the committee that his wife, Mrs. Waterhouse actually performed the services of a directress in the Hospital, that an unwillingness to have her name appear in that capacity induced her to adopt the name of Elizabeth Oliver which was her name before marriage, to which he consented. It appeared to the Committee that Mrs. Waterhouse had attended in the Hospital as a directress.

As to the 2nd. charge that Dr. Waterhouse did appropriate beef & bread to his own use, which were charged to the United States, about twenty pounds per week, the quantity of bread was not ascertained, that there was no legal authority for this appropriation, and no precedent in the Hospital to give colour to it.

The answer to this charge by Dr. Waterhouse was that he lived with Dr. Halliburton in the year 1774 & 75, who was surgeon to the British Marine Hospital, at Rhode Island and that it was the custom in that Hospital, for the surgeon to receive two rations of beef, bread & liquids. Of this no evidence was produced to the Committee.

As to the third charge that the Steward did charge the United States with the vegetables raised in the garden of the Hospital with the consent of Dr. Waterhouse.

It did not appear that Dr. Waterhouse received any part of the sum charged.

As to the 4th. charge, (about the scavenger) that there was not evidence to support this charge & from the accounts produced by Dr. Waterhouse it appeared not to be true.

As to the 5th. charge it appeared to your Committee that Dr. Waterhouse had been before supplied with wood from the College, but by the advise of the College Steward he intended to receive his wood from the Hospital, expecting to procure it, for a less price, that he received two Cords & finding it more expensive, he again received his supply from the Steward of the College. No credit was given to the United States for this wood, but it appeared he had sent two barrels

1. The first part of the document discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all transactions and activities. It emphasizes that proper record-keeping is essential for transparency and accountability, particularly in financial matters. The text suggests that organizations should implement robust systems to track income, expenses, and assets, ensuring that all data is up-to-date and easily accessible.

2. The second section focuses on the role of internal controls in preventing fraud and mismanagement. It outlines various measures that can be put in place, such as segregation of duties, regular audits, and the establishment of clear policies and procedures. The document stresses that these controls are not just for protection but also for improving operational efficiency and reducing the risk of errors.

3. The third part of the document addresses the legal and regulatory requirements that organizations must adhere to. It provides an overview of the relevant laws and regulations, highlighting the consequences of non-compliance. The text encourages organizations to stay informed about changes in the legal landscape and to consult with legal counsel when necessary to ensure full compliance.

4. The final section discusses the importance of communication and collaboration within an organization. It argues that effective communication is key to the success of any project or initiative, as it ensures that all team members are on the same page and working towards common goals. The document suggests that organizations should foster a culture of open communication and teamwork, where information is shared freely and everyone is encouraged to contribute their ideas and expertise.

of cider to the Hospital which were not charged to the United States. It appeared that the number of vegetables taken from the Hospital for Dr. Waterhouse were very few, & there did not appear to be any intent to defraud the United States in taking them or the wood."

All which is submitted

I. Phillips per order.

In a letter to Dr. Lettson Dr. Waterhouse, in referring to this affair, says, - "I have been intrigued out of my place, as Physician to the United States Marine Hospital, worth £500 sterling a year, and given me by Mr. Jefferson, as a reward of my labours in Vaccination, and this merely in consequence of his going out of office and others coming in; so that, at 50 years of age, I now have to contrive and execute some new plan to supply the deficiency. I propose to quit my quiet retreat in Cambridge, and move into Boston, there to give my Lectures on Natural History and on Medicine; for here, (Cambridge) the Botanist I formerly spoke of has been forced into my place."

In one of the numbers of his Independent this article, published in the Boston Patriot, Oct. 28, 1812, the Doctor gives the following interesting account of the whole incident. -

"Dr. Welsh was the first physician of the marine hospital establishment, and held it until Pres. Adams went out of office, and then Mr. Jefferson gave the birth to Dr. Jarvis to the discontent of Dr. Eustis; and when Doct. Jarvis died Mr. Jefferson gave the place to Dr. Waterhouse, to the surprise and disgust of Dr. Eustis, who many people thought had the best right to it from his long service as a military surgeon, and for his exertions in getting the marine hospital erected at Charlestown. The reason which Mr. Jefferson gave for bestowing the place on Dr. Waterhouse was, that the inhabitants of the U.S. were under obligations to that gentleman for his great and successful exertions in vaccination, by which thousands of lives had been preserved. The lead-

ing Republicans in Boston were so displeased that Mr. Jefferson should give the hospital to a federalist in preference to a democrat, that they united and remonstrated against it to the President; and were so earnest in the affair that they directed their remonstrance to be delivered to the Massachusetts delegation in congress, who requested Gen. Varnum to present it. But President Jefferson was not to be moved by it, but wrote to Gen. Varnum his sentiments on the subject, and the letter was transmitted to Mr. John Brazier, the chairman of the committee, who was requested to communicate it to Dr. Waterhouse. *** A few weeks after, Mr. Jefferson testified his firmness by adding the appointment of the surgery of the navy yard to that of the hospital in Charlestown in the person of Dr. W.; and he enjoyed these two appointments as long as his patron continued in office; but when Mr. Madison came to the chair, and when Dr. Eustis became Secretary at War, then Dr. W. was put out and the secretary's old friend and military companion was put into it. All this was in the ordinary course of things and what every man must expect in such a rotary government as ours, and there was nothing in it to excite surprise or anger. But the two young medical men laid hold of the circumstance to try to blast the character of the physician of the hospital. They whispered about, and at length abroad that Dr. W. was guilty of peculation, and of making up false accounts, together with a thousand circumstances that never had any existence but in their own evil minds. Suffice it to say at present, that the documents relative to his defense he put into the hands of a dozen or so of the first characters of Massachusetts and all declared him ~~innocent~~ innocent. When the Hon. Mr. Gerry returned them to the Dr. he wrote to him as follows; 'I have read your defence, and the documents that relate to it, and am exceedingly gratified and satisfied by the perusal. I will with great pleasure address a letter to the President on the subject; and if you are not justified in your con-

"duct, shall conclude that intrigue, infamous intrigue and injustice have triumphantly superceded great abilities, patriotic zeal, public merit, indefatigable exertion, and complete success in the administration of the concerns of the marine hospital."

Now beside imitating the British Hospitals, one of the most formidable charges brought against Dr. W.- was his ridiculing Mr. Jefferson's gunboat system before company at the hospital. We would remark, by the way, that this was in the true spirit and style of Jezebel and the two sons of Belial, who bore false witness before Naboth, saying, 'thou didst blaspheme God and the King,' and they stoned him with stones.

The Hon. John Quincy Adams examined into all the facts, and perused all the documents, and concludes his review of the transaction in these words 'I have known Dr. Waterhouse many years; I have been during the last three years, in particular habits of intimacy with him. I have heard his sentiments, open and confidential, expressed at all times with perfect freedom. I know it is impossible he should have ridiculed the President of the United States. But what could have been the motive of such an accusation? Why, Dr. W.- holds his office at the pleasure of the President: and if a number of charges of petty malversations should, as it must have been expected they would, turn out upon explanation mere inacuracies of form, unluckily liable to glosses of an odious nature, this last article was reserved as an appeal to the personal resentment, or at least suspicion of the person who was to be the ultimate judge. The accuser must have thought the heart of the President constituted like his own. I am well assured that this hopeful artifice will not only fail of its intended effect, but that it will give a key to and furnish a guard against the temper and purpose upon which the whole structure of malignity is founded.'"

In another article, written a little later, Dr. Waterhouse refers to the matter in these words,- "After the hearing before the joint

returned
 "Com. of Corp. & Overseers when Judge Parsons[^] the papers to Dr. W.-- he said, 'You have had so many enemies, I have a great mind to turn about and be your friend.' The Judge's ire was raised however by the following passage in a letter from a gentleman in a very high station in this Commonwealth to President Madison, viz. 'It is painful to remark, that from the time Dr. W.-- took the lead in vaccination, a number of reputable medical gentlemen became his enemies.-- When the Doctor's appointment (to the Marine Hospital) was announced, it was generally remarked, that no appointment of Mr. Jefferson's excited more general approbation. The Dr. is surrounded not only with competitors for his office, but by the Highest Federalists, who influence the affairs of the University; and have been long laboring, but in vain, to remove the Dr. from his medical professorship therein, which he has filled with reputation these thirty years. He is obnoxious to those men, because he is friendly to the administration of our republican government.'"

Referring to the situation in the College at this time one of the histories of the Harvard Medical School says,- "In the year of grace (1809) we begin to see the first official accounts of ~~grievous~~ grievous disputes and personal encounters rending our little faculty. Years earlier the old Boston doctors, outside of the school, had vented a certain amount of natural spleen upon the successful and prominent young professors. Now those same professors, grown old in the midst of a loyal and admiring community, take to the writing of bitter words, and the shouting of harsh language, and even the shaking of fists among themselves. It is all very interesting and human, even if it be not edifying; and to hear of it need not mean a shattering of idols."

For some time previous to this year, however, as seen in the foregoing pages, there had been an increasing friction between Professor Waterhouse and the other two medical Professors and also with some of the

The first part of the paper discusses the importance of the research and the objectives of the study. It then proceeds to a literature review, followed by a description of the methodology used. The results of the study are presented in the next section, followed by a discussion of the findings and their implications. The paper concludes with a summary of the main points and a list of references.

The research was conducted in a laboratory setting, using a series of experiments to measure the effects of the treatment. The subjects were all healthy adults, and the results were compared to a control group. The data was analyzed using statistical methods, and the results were found to be significant.

The findings of the study suggest that the treatment has a positive effect on the outcome. This is supported by the data, which shows a clear difference between the treatment and control groups. The implications of these findings are discussed in the next section, where it is suggested that the treatment may be useful in a clinical setting.

In conclusion, the study has shown that the treatment has a positive effect on the outcome. This is supported by the data, which shows a clear difference between the treatment and control groups. The implications of these findings are discussed in the next section, where it is suggested that the treatment may be useful in a clinical setting.

members of the College government.

For some time prior to the year 1810 it was becoming more and more evident to the College authorities that the removal of the Medical School to Boston was both expedient and necessary. The removal, however, was attended with more controversy, the calling of hard names and was another step towards the rupture which later followed. Doctors Warren and Dexter were already resident in Boston, but Dr. Waterhouse residing in Cambridge, would be put to considerable inconvenience and extra labor by the change.

The following letter, written in confirmation of a short conversation between Drs. Warren and Waterhouse, shows the lack of confidence then existing between the professors.

Cambridge 19, Feb^y 1810.

Dear Doctor,

When you mentioned to me, the other day the wish of yourself & Dr. Dexter respecting the removal of the lectures to Boston, we had not time to say much on the subject, and lest I should not now find you at home, I write this merely to say that although as I grow older I am less disposed to go from home, yet if our Lectures can be made more extensively useful, I am disposed to listen to & adopt any plan that shall be deemed on all sides best. Something certainly ought to be done to make them at least keep pace with similar Institutions in other parts of the Union. I am therefore ready to fall into any plan that the wise and judicious of our College Legislature shall recommend, but with this express condition that no plan be devised, or sketched by you or Dr. Dexter, without its being frankly and unreservedly communicated to me, before it goes beyond us three. I mean by this, that no plan shall be considered as matured, or offered to any of the College Authority without the knowledge and consent of each & every one of the three Professors, viz. yourself Dexter & myself. On this point I shall look to you alone for information. You are together while I am at a distance; several matters medical matters have been planned & carried through every branch of the College Legislature without my ever hearing of them unless by common report. For example I never know of the induction of the two adjunct Professors until it was passed.

I have however serious doubt, whether we can obtain the authority to remove our Lectures from this very spot. President Willard said it never could be done. I should like to speak with you on this head and to receive every communication from you on this subject.

With a high degree of esteem

Doctor Warren

Yours &c

School St. Boston.

Benjⁿ Waterhouse.

It is evident that notwithstanding the stipulation in the above letter that no plan for the removal of the School should be considered matured, except by consultation of the three professors, the project had already taken definite shape in the minds of the other two doctors for in the evening of the same day that the letter was written a Memorial to the President and Fellows of the College for the removal of the Medical School to Boston, signed by Doctors Warren and Dexter, was sent by messenger to Dr. Waterhouse at the College together with a note from Dr. Warren stating that he had tried all day to find him, ~~without success~~, and ~~requesting that~~ to show him the document, but had not succeeded. The note also requested the Doctor to peruse the Memorial and return it by bearer and the latter asked the Doctor to sign it as it was desired to present the same to the Corporation the following morning.

It is apparent that Dr. Waterhouse resented this attempt to secure his assent to the plan without, what he believed, proper consideration on his part and that he saw in ^{the incident} ~~it~~ another case in which a medical matter had been initiated and carried to a degree of completion without ~~proper~~ proper consultation with him, for he not only refused to sign the Memorial but the next day sent the following communication to the Corporation.

"The Honorable and Reverend the President and
Corporation of Harvard College.

"Last evening Dr. Warren sent a memorial to me, the purport of which was the removal of our Medical Lectures into Boston. The young gentleman who brought it, urged me to sign it, because he said that it was to be presented to-morrow (that is today).

As I had never seen nor heard of such a memorial, nor had either of my colleagues ever said a word to me on the subject, (a few words from Dr. Warren in the street excepted a day or two since) it cannot be supposed that I have considered the matter sufficiently. I therefore write this to beg the Corporation not to do anything with the said Memorial, before time be given me to consider it in all its relations.

Every wise man knows that no plan is so likely to be satisfactory as that which is taken up with due deliberation; and as this arrangement is made to affect me principally, I beg that its consideration may be postponed to some future time, that I may have an opportu-

nity of viewing it on every side, and taking the advice of my friends before I add my signature thereto."

With high respect I am &c., &c.

Benjⁿ Waterhouse Professor of the Theory & Practice of
Physic in Harvard College.

Cambridge

20 Feby 1810.

As a result of this letter the Corporation deferred action on the memorial for a time but the petition was finally granted July 13, 1810 and was confirmed by the Overseers some two weeks later. As Dr. Waterhouse still refused to consent to the removal of the School and, as one of the histories of the Harvard Medical School says, "in order practically to replace him," it was ordained that a new professorship, that of Clinical Medicine, be established. Students were still to attend the lectures of the Professor of the Theory and Practice provided they were given at some convenient place and at some convenient time in the Town of Boston, but, "until such lectures in the Theory and Practice are delivered in Boston degrees may be conferred without attending these lectures."^{*} Dr. James Jackson was elected to the position by the Corporation.

Dr. Waterhouse at once protested against the establishment of this professorship, claiming that it would take away the most lucrative part of his own and that it was inconsistent with the original establishment. As the matter had already passed the Corporation he presented a memorial to the Board of Overseers. At a meeting of the Board July 23, 1810, the question of concurring with the Corporation was discussed at length and finally the matter was referred to a committee which reported at a meeting held August 28th. that they did not find any inconsistency

^{*}Harvard College records.

... ..
... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..

... ..

... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..

or encroachment of one professorship upon the other, and continued:-

"The committee further ask leave to report that if in the future it should appear that the establishment of the new professorship shall have necessarily diminished the emoluments of the Professor of the Theory and Practice of Physick, there is no doubt his claim to indemnity will be duly considered and determined upon by the government of the College; and that it is impossible to ascertain now whether any such diminution will take place, or whether on the contrary the new establishment may not promote the personal advantage of the professor."

After making the report, in which he declared the Committee were agreed, the chairman, Dr. Aspinwall, stated that he had since changed his mind and that he was totally opposed to it. Following a long debate the report was finally accepted and the election of Dr. Jackson was concurred in by the pretty close vote of 25 to 20.

During the progress of these proceedings the relations between the professors were becoming more strained and matters were made still worse as the result of a stormy interview at the home of Dr. Warren in the summer of this year. In referring to this meeting the other professors say:- "Notwithstanding the impression made on the minds of his brethren by the conduct of Dr. Waterhouse in relation to the extension of the Medical Lectures to Boston, he was invited with marks of particular attention to be present at a meeting of the Medical Professors in August at Dr. Warrens in Boston."

Dr. Waterhouse denied that any particular marks of attention were shown him and gives the following account of the affair:-

"I understood that the object of the meeting of the Medical Professors to which I was invited was to consider of the expediency of a printed circular letter. Dr. John C. Warren produced a rough draft of one. He read it until he came to the paragraph relating to the clinical professorship; and then I thought it proper to inform the gentlemen of what I had that day done relative to a memorial to the Board of Overseers. I told them I considered myself ex officio, clinical professor; and un-

The first part of the paper is devoted to a general discussion of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe. The second part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe. The third part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe.

The fourth part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe. The fifth part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe. The sixth part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe.

The seventh part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe. The eighth part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe. The ninth part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe.

The tenth part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe. The eleventh part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe. The twelfth part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe.

The thirteenth part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe. The fourteenth part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe. The fifteenth part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe.

The sixteenth part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe. The seventeenth part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe. The eighteenth part is devoted to a detailed study of the problem. It is shown that the problem is of great importance in the theory of the structure of the universe.

348.

Until I was dismissed, the station was not vacant; and that the Overseers were probably then acting on my memorial. This threw Dr. Warren Sen^r into a paroxysm of passion, in which he seemed to labor to say disagreeably things. Dr. Jackson seemed greatly disturbed likewise; & went off in a pet; after making more apologies for coming there than I thought necessary. Dr. Dexter pled engagements & left the room; leaving me with Dr. Warren, his son & son-in-law,* when a short and somewhat passionate conversation ensued between him and me. I asked Dr. Warren why I had not been consulted, or even informed of this new arrangement of the almshouse, and of the clinical professorship? He said he had informed me; and I as positively denied having been informed of it, till after it had passed the Corporation and the Board of Overseers. In the course of this alternate contradiction, Dr. Warren said to me in a fit of passion-- if you say thus and so you utter a falsehood! Upon this, after recovering from the shock of such an act of barbarism, in a mans own house, & in the presence of his sons, I said there must be an end to all conversation; and immediately quitted the room and left his house in disgust. In the course of Dr. Warren's passionate attack on me, he told me that I had quarreled with Judge Davis, I denied it, when he pretended to tell the place and circumstances. All of which I denied. He said also that I was in open hostility to the Corporation. I never quarrelled with the Judge. It has been his misfortune to be on some committees, in which I thought myself injured. It is natural to me, & and to my father before me to speak freely, and often emphatically; but I no more even quarrelled with Judge Davis, than I did with Deacon Storer between whom and me there existed an uninterrupted friendship of more than twenty years, of confidence and mutual esteem. In all my intercourse with the world, I never met with like treatment. To be invited to a gentleman's house, and for

*Dr. Goreham.

no higher degree of offence than that of having presented a Memorial as I did, to the Board of Overseers, to be abused, insulted, & to be told, (to be sure it was in the conditional tense) that I had uttered a falsehood was the rudest & most ungentlemanlike conduct I ever experienced since my intercourse with mankind. Had it been in the street, or in a public house, the case would have been different. But in his own house, & before his own children was a trait of Vandalism I never before experienced.-- A Barbarian would not have invited me into his tent, or his wigwam, & have treated me thus! "

In the meantime application had again been made for the use of the Almshouse for a clinic, and July 25, 1810, the Overseers of the Poor of Boston voted to allow the Professors of Anatomy and Surgery; Chemistry and Materia Medica to visit the Almshouse with pupils and any other Professor that the Corporation might recommend. It will be noted that this left out the Professor of the Theory and Practice, Dr. Waterhouse. In referring to this in one of his "Independent Whig" articles he says:- "The Directors of the Almshouse, were so struck with the Prof. of Chemistry even being admitted while he (Dr. Waterhouse) was left out that they framed their vote so as to admit him providing the Corporation of the College recommended it. As he was about to remove to Boston, he applied to the Corporation never doubting but they would grant it, but two opposed it. He applied again when the majority seemed inclined to grant it but Judge Parsons overruled it and secured a vote at a meeting Oct. 6, 1810, saying they did not think it expedient to grant the request till Dr. Waterhouse had consented to the removal of the Medical establishment to Boston."

This action brought forth the following letter:-

Cambridge, 27 Octor 1810.

To the Hon. & Revd. the Corporation of Harvard College.

"Having petitioned the Corporation to be admitted to the same privileges in the Almshouse in Boston granted to the other Professors and the Corporation having thereupon voted that they did not think it expedient to act upon the application until Dr. Waterhouse signified to the Corporation his agreement to conform to the permission of the Corporation & Overseers relating to the extension of the Medical establishment to Boston

I therefore hereby signify my agreement to their act of extending the medical establishment to Boston, & repeat & renew my petition for the same privileges with the other medical Professors and am with high

respect their humble servant

Benjⁿ Waterhouse Prof. of Th. & Prac.
of Phyc."

The School opened in Boston the first Wednesday in December 1810, at 49 Marlborough Street(now WashingtonStreet). The first public lecture, introductory to all the branches, delivered in Boston, was by Professor Waterhouse. The Doctor tells us that during this winter he had only five pupils which did not pay his expenses, but that he never missed but one lecture, which was better than the other Professors who lived in Boston, and that he lectured as carefully to these five as though they were 500. In a letter to Dr. Lettson dated Dec.30 of this year he says:- "We have transferred our Medical School from Cambridge to Boston, and I go in every morning at this season, and give a medical lecture one hour and a half after sunrise; and three evenings in a week I give a lecture on Natural history in Boston, in one of their public halls, and out again to sleep, flying over the snow and ice in my sleigh, which I most commonly drive myself, and the next morning I am off again a little after sunrise. I can leave to my children an example of industry, if nothing more."

In September 1811 the Doctor removed "with his family to Boston, and took one of the best houses in that town, having spacious rooms in which to give his Lectures and within three minutes walk of the other lectures." This house was on Milk St. and was owned by the Old South

Notwithstanding the fact that Dr. Waterhouse had complied with the requirement of the Corporation that he should agree to the removal of the Medical School to Boston in order to obtain the privilege of the Almshouse, his application was referred to a committee consisting of Mr. Lowell. Hearing nothing for some months in regard to the matter he inquired of one of the Corporation as to the situation and was advised to see Mr. Lowell, which he did. The following account of the interview is another evidence of the acrimony of those troublous times.

Boston, Feb. 19, 1812.

"Copy of a narrative which I have had by me ever since Apr.

1811. It is in the form of a Deposition, as I intended to make oath to it before I delivered it to the board of overseers."

"I, Benjⁿ Waterhouse, Prof^r of the Theory & Practice of Physic in the University of Cambridge, testify and declare, that, having been officially informed that John Lowell, Esq^r Fellow of the Corporation of Harvard College, had been appointed by that Rev^d & Honorable Body a committee to consider and report on my written request, to be by them recommended and admitted to the same privileges in the Almshouse in Boston with the other Medical Professors, agreeably to a plan arranged between the Corporation of one & the overseers of the other.--- I waited several months in the expectation of hearing something from him, supposing that to be the regular course of the business. I enquired several times of such members of the Corporation as I met with, if Mr. Lowell had made any report or said anything to the Corporation on the subject. As I did not know how to proceed, I, at length, called on the Rev. Dr. Lathrop, and, after stating the case, I asked him how I should proceed?-- When he advised me to call on Mr. Lowell, & enquire of him the state of the business committed to his attention.-- I accordingly called on him the next day, at his usual place of resort, the Suffolk Insurance office, and then I broached my business to him respectfully; for I had not that acquaintance with the gentleman to do business with him otherwise than ceremoniously. He asked me why I had not called on him before. I told him that I had waited for him to proceed first in it. To which he replied, it was your business, Sir, to call upon me. Did you expect that I was to run after you? I made the best apology I could; and reminded him that I had several times made written applications to the board to which he belonged to be by them recommended to the privileges of the Almshouse with the other professors; and that the Overseers of that establishment were much inclined that I should. He then said a few words on what he and Judge Parsons had done in the business. But he had not proceeded far before I perceived that he was determined to be insolent; for whenever he had occasion to mention the Corporation, instead of that simple and honorable term, he

chose to say Your Masters: and that in an insolent tone & gesture, and extending the fore finger of his right hand, several times very near my face.-- All this induced me to be very deliberate, very guarded & very cool: ~~for-I-was-well-aware-that-I-had-to-do-with-a-man-of-strong-prejudice-and-check-fall-of-the-wild-fire-of-~~*

I told Mr. Lowel, that on my application to the Corporation for this privilege in the Almshouse they had declined acting upon it until I should signify my willingness to conform to or approbate the extending the medical establishment to Boston; & that I had accordingly done it, & thereby removed every objection, and that I was desirous of the privilege. To this he replied in an affrontive manner-- 'He did not consider this as your serious wish, but one of your back handed fetches to embarrass the business,' or to that effect, 'for living ~~in~~ in Cambridge you can have no such intention.' I replied that I had concluded to remove to Boston & that I was entirely in favour of the plan for the removal of the Lectures to the capitol. To this assertion he returned a flat & rude contradiction, and said that I had written a caveat to the Corporation, to the contrary of my assertion. As I had a copy of the letter he alluded to in my pocket, I took it out and endeavored to convince him that he was mistaken; but to no purpose. Here I intended to have closed the conversation; but he chose to fly off from the business we had been speaking of, to a sort of general abuse. He accused me of quarrelling with Judge Davis; and he discontended vehemently and bitterly on a certain half official & half personal correspondence between me and the late Dr. Webber, which I heard for some time without reply; for I never was more cool & guarded than in this conversation. He still continued to use to me the term of 'Your Masters, the Corporation,' which I constantly answered with a bow. He then expatiated on what he would have done had he been a member of the Corporation when that correspondence took place. I, at length suggested to him that he was totally ignorant of some antecedant personal irritations, which others knew had preceeded that correspondence; and that he, or any other member of the Corporation been made acquainted with them, they would cease to wonder at some pretty decisive expressions in my letter. I told Mr. Lowel, that before he pronounced so positively on these subjects, he ought to be informed of some irritations from some other members of the Corporation. And then I began to instance some irritating behaviors in the late Treasurer Jackson. We had then come out of the insurance office, and were walking in the street. He very soon stopped me short, & pronounced a strong, & I believe just eulogium on Mr. Jackson, (my remarks related to instances of extreme petulance, & symptoms of strong prejudice), interspersed with remarking now & then, that I had forgot who I was talking to. I was proceeding to give him an instance of Mr. J.'s behaviour towards me, in which there was nothing severe or illnatured. But here Mr. Lowel flew into a violent passion. On which I checked my observations by remarking that Mr. Jackson is not here to answer for himself. But Mr. Lowel thought fit to blow his passions up to the pitch of rage, & with violent gesture & emphasis pronounced me, in the open street a base fellow, & concluded by calling me more than once a scoundrell!

During this torrent of abuse, & even at the very height of it, I felt neither passion nor resentment. It was rather astonishment & commiseration. An humane idea crossed my mind that checked my ~~rage~~ anger, & prevented this outrage from raising my temper. I was about go-

* These words had a line drawn through them and the rest of the sentence was so blurred as to be unreadable.

ing through the same street in which Mr. L., lives, but had passed it, a few steps unthinkingly, when he turned off. I turned back and soon overtook him, when a few words ensued expressive on my side of some feelings of resentment.

I beg the Corporation to consider that my conference this day with Mr. Lowell was neither casual nor obtrusive. It was on official business. It was proper for me to accost him, & to enquire as I had been advised. His behaviour from beginning to end was insolent. I said nothing to provoke him. He flew from the business which it was his duty to attend to, & and went to a subject that occurred before he was a member of the Corporation, the circumstances of which he was ignorant of. From the whole occurrence it appeared that he was glad to seize hold of the occasion to let me know & feel, that he was one of my Masters, and the whole of it was in the insulting style & manner of an angry master talking to his servant.

A few days after this I mentioned the occurrence in general terms, to one of the members of the Corporation; and soon after that in a particular manner, to a distinguished member of the Overseers, who advised me to lay it before both boards; but I concluded to postpone it untill after certain Committees had made their reports. I related the affair to one of the Professors residing at Cambridge. Otherwise I have preserved silence on the subject. Whether a Professor thus circumstanced is under the protection of the College Legislature, they alone can determine. Be that as it may, the facts ought not to be withheld from them.

I would just remark here that Mr. Lowell never has, to my knowledge, acted upon the business committed to him." Whether he still considers my application, as one of my 'back-handed fatches!', and was determined to make the business deputed to him 'A committee of objection!', I am not able to determine."

Benjⁿ Waterhouse, Prof^r Theory and Practice of Physic

To the Honble & Rev^d

The Corporation of Harvard College.

Post Scriptum.

*****"If the Corporation ask me what ~~they~~ I wish them to do in the affair- I answer that I know not. Whatever they, in their wisdom shall think most just, & honourable. I will only beg leave to say, with all deference to the Rev^d. & Honble the Corporation, that from long, cool, & sober reflection, I do not think that a man, who could, in his official capacity, have treated me as I have here related Mr. Lowell has done, is fit to legislate for me, or to sit in judgement on any subject, in which my honor, character, or ~~feelings~~ feelings are concerned."

Benjⁿ Waterhouse, Prof. T. & P.

This document was sent to the Corporation and at a meeting Apr. 3, 1812, Mr. Lowell was requested to ~~state his side of the case~~ give his version of the affair in writing. The paper was later withdrawn, however, by the Doctor on the advice of some of the Corporation.
This was some two years after the Doctor made his first application.

Following the troubles incident to the removal of the Medical School two other matters arose which led to further controversy, increased the feelings of suspicion and ill will between the professors, led to the writing of sarcastic articles in the newspapers, and finally to open rupture. The matters referred to were the proposed establishment of a hospital for the insane and the founding of a new medical society to be called the College of Physicians.

For some time past a movement had been on foot for the establishment of a hospital for the insane for at this time there was neither a hospital of insane asylum in the State. Even after the project took definite shape and was being discussed in the Legislature it was spoken of as a hospital for "lunatics", but the final result was a general hospital now known as the "Massachusetts General Hospital."

It will be remembered that Dr. Waterhouse in his inaugural address, at the time of his induction into office as Professor, made an earnest plea for the study of insanity. He evidently did not approve of some of the proposed provisions of the plan ^{for the hospital} as shown by the following remarks:-

"An asylum for the insane had long been an object of my intention. It was a leading object of my visit to Philadelphia 3 years ago; & I have from time to time, kept the idea alive in the newspapers. I have had as much acquaintance with Hospitals as any man who hears me speak, and more too, & have paid no small attention to the subject of asylums for the insane. It is my hearts desire, and most earnest wish to see an Hospital or Asylum for those bereaft of the due exercise of reason, established in Massachusetts; but not in the town of Boston, nor situated near to a common hospital, so as to associate in our idea one with the other; and moreover (which I suppose has given unpardonable offence) I hope never to see this establishment made subservient to our Medical School. I hope

never to see a train of pupils visiting it. In a word, I hope to see it entirely disconnected with our Medical School. I hope we shall correct the fault of the Pennsylvania hospital where the screaming of the maniacs are within hearing of the patients in a fever.- I was grieved when I found that there were steps taking to mar, as I conceived, the beauty of the design. On comparing my experience, & means of information with that of others here among us, I thought that my opinions had as solid a foundation as theirs. I have uttered these opinions with decency, and have been answered by personal abuse."

Apparently the Governor was dissatisfied with some of the by-laws which were submitted to the Legislature, in connection with the charter, and held matters up pending revision. Dr. Waterhouse was charged with being responsible for this delay as appears by the following statement made by him while defending himself against certain allegations made at the other medical professors:-

"Another instance of embarrassment & danger of free discussion, was in the affair of the Hospital for the Insane, & which has excited the highest degree of resentment, & given 'a vis et acumen' to every other accusation. I mention this business of the Insane Hospital, not merely from prevalent reports, but because President Kirkland* has, since we met last here, accused me of being the author, or rather advisee of the Governor to destroy the arrangement made for carrying it into effect. He spoke I apprehended the sentiments of these professors when he said. 'You are answerable for the deprivation of the comfort, the care & the relief which hundreds of afflicted men & women would have reaped had this institution been allowed to go on.' He repeated it, that what the Governor had done, I had advised him to do. I thought I was justified in relating what the President said of me to the Governor. To which he replied,-

* of Harvard College.

'Tell the President from me that I should have made precisely the same remarks respecting the byelaws of the General Hospital had you never existed, for they were entirely the result of my own view of the subject on my first reading them.'

As usual, politics and personalities crept into the ^{consideration} discussion of the plans for the hospital and the temper in which the matter was discussed in the newspapers may be seen from the following articles:- The first appeared in the "Boston Patriot" June 26, 1811.

"The Hospital for the Insane, has been a plan that has excited much interest and has been universally advocated. But a correspondent expresses his surprise and disappointment on perusing the bye-laws as reported by the committee, on discovering that the great and main object, viz. an Asylum for the Insane, is, to a great degree, thrust out of sight to make room for a General Hospital, and that the whole is made subservient to a scheme of Medical Lectures, as will appear by an attentive examination of sect. 13, p. 23, entitled, 'THE STUDENTS.'

The reason why so many republicans were added to the corporation, was a discovery that personal views were at the bottom of the charity, which the State was to patronize and pay for. The extreme solicitude of the Medical Junta; the cunning and address used to place at the head of the memorial to the legislature, a worthy and opulent gentleman, who never read it, &c. gave rise to a suspicion, that time has confirmed; but to do away or annihilate the correcting influence of the republican part of the corporation, that honorable station is absolutely exposed to sale, the price of a vote being fixed at one hundred dollars! See sect. 1, art. 1st, part 3. We can hardly believe the Governor saw this article before it was printed."

This article was attributed to Dr. Lathhouse and was followed the next week by an unsigned communication in reply, nearly a column long, in the "Palladium," The purpose of this article was to deny and explain the observations made above and we quote enough to show its tone:-

"For the Palladium."

Messrs Editors,

"Why the writer of a piece in a "Patriot" of last week under the head of 'Hospital for the Insane,' did not subscribe himself-- 'One who had need of the benefits of such an institution,' is a matter of surprise. The public would then have noticed in the piece alluded to, very strong claims on the part of the writer to a strait jacket, and no doubt it would ^{have} formed with many persons, an inducement to aid the establishment of an asylum for Lunatics, that such creatures as this same 'Patriot' writer would then be in safe keeping.

But ^{such} stuff is allowed to be circulated through one of the great channels of public information, and of course with the approbation of the Editor of the Newspaper, from whom the public have a right to ex-

pect the constant exercise of a wary and discriminating judgement, it becomes a duty, whatever be our contempt of the author, to state the truth where he told lies, and to let it be distinctly known, that the Massachusetts General Hospital is an Institution for insane as well as sick persons-- and that it is absolutely untrue, as affirmed by the writer, that it is a mere 'Scheme for Medical Lectures.'

Referring again to the writer of the "Patriot" article this communication continues:-

"He will have it that one of his own 'Castles in the Air' is to serve as a model for the General Hospital."

Concerning the "correcting influence of the republican part of the Corporation, the article concludes thus:-

"What 'correcting influence' is here meant to be insisted on? Is a Hospital to be the theatre of political patronage? Then let the charitable withhold their money! Let the humane retire, and seek the objects of their ministering goodness remote from the turbulent scene! Or let not the office of mercy and healing be profaned with incumbents, whose principal recommendation is an infuriate spirit of party."

The controversy over the now proposed organization of a new Medical Society or College of Physicians was a very bitter one. Harrington's History of the Harvard Medical School, in referring to the matter says:-

"Scarcely had the new school* been established in Boston when a storm of the most serious nature threatened it, and came dangerously near sinking the ship. Nothing since the introduction of inoculation in 1721 had created so much misunderstanding and controversy among physicians. All the men with personal grievances, professional jealousies, and individual ambitions gathered themselves under one banner and presented a petition to the Legislature on February 18th 1811." The petition was signed

The petition was signed by twelve physicians and the same writer says of them:- "This is a fine collection of good Boston names."

The act of incorporation accompanying the petition began as follows:-

"An Act to incorporate and establish a Society for the cultivation and promotion of the Medical Art by the name and title of the

'Massachusetts College of Physicians'

* Harvard Medical School.

"As health is a blessing which sweetens all our enjoyments, and long life that which all men naturally desire, so every plan that tends to secure the one, and lead to the other, adds to the stock of our comfort and happiness.

And as it has been found that nothing more effectually promotes the honor and dignity of the profession than Societies, Colleges, or communities of Physicians bound together by good and wholesome rules, and having the publick good for their end and aim be it enacted"&c.

There were ten sections the last of which read:-

"Be it enacted-- that they cultivate and foster such liberal sentiments and views as may tend to eradicate unworthy, selfish, and monopolizing practices, and that they encourage a spirit of liberality, industry and regularity in medical education, and in practice, and that ^{the} patronize every virtue that has a tendency to advance the interest, honor, dignity, comfort and happiness of an independent and aspiring people."

The Massachusetts Medical Society at once remonstrated against the incorporation of the new Society on the ground that "the establishment of such an institution can effect no object, not accomplished by existing societies, and would so far from promoting a laudable and useful emulation, would lead to more or less strife."

The Corporation of Harvard College also appointed a committee to oppose the measure, fearing that the charter, as drawn, would give the Society power to grant degrees and thus interfere with its own Medical School.

After some consideration the whole matter was referred to the next Legislature and then began a campaign of letter writing in the newspapers in which Professor Waterhouse took an active part, some of his contributions causing him trouble at a later period. The first article to be noticed, written by the Professor, was published in the "Palladium" Apr. 23, 1811.

"Among the improvements and prospects of improvements in the science and art of medicine, we mention with pleasure the contemplated College of Physicians.

A number of Physicians, distinguished by their age and rank in the profession, have agreed to form themselves into an association for the express purpose of cultivating and communicating the results of their experience and observations; and upholding, as far as in them lies, the honor of the profession. We predict great benefit from such an assemblage of skill, experience and character -- In their petition

for an act of incorporation they say, that 'as health is a blessing that sweetens all our enjoyments, and long life that which all men naturally desire, so everything that tends to secure the one, and lead to the other, is an object worthy of legislative patronage -- and that considering the various methods of attaining and diffusing medical knowledge, not one is found so effectual and desirable, as a friendly and liberal intercourse, or honorable association of its professors; especially when their end and aim is the public good.'

For those reasons they have applied to the General Court for an act of incorporation, 'praying such powers, privileges and immunities as other medical associations of like nature and views, enjoy under the same denomination in several States of the Union.' This petition was referred to the next session, by the desire of the petitioners.

The young and ardent candidates for fame and practice, too often clash, and their interfering interests, excite animosities, and create rivalships, which sometimes end in hatreds that cramp the advancement of the profession. But happily for the noble art of Physic, nothing of the kind can happen here, because ^{most} of the gentlemen, who have been patriotically engaged in this association, have been more than forty years in the practice. Here there is no other rivalry, than who shall do the most good to those who come after them, and who shall exert themselves most to encourage such liberal sentiments as may eradicate unworthy practices. This Massachusetts College of Physicians will hold up Medicine to the public, and to posterity, not as a mere money getting trade, but a liberal profession worthy the respect and confidence of the public; and while they labour to enlarge the boundaries of the art, they will not fail to inculcate every virtue that may tend to advance the interest, honor, dignity, comfort and happiness of an independent and aspiring people."

This article evidently aroused the ire of the opponents of the new Society and was replied to in the same paper in its edition of Apr. 26, 1811, the reply being attributed to Dr. John C. Warren, perhaps "one of the young and ardent candidates."

"For the Palladium."

Mrs. Editors,-

"In answer to the singular remarks in your last paper, respecting a proposed College of Physicians, it is only necessary to state two or three facts.

1st. This College, so far as its projects are known, contemplates nothing beyond what is performed by institutions already existing in the most active and flourishing state, and amply competent to all medical purposes.

2nd. The Memorialists for this College, it is said, are distinguished by their age and rank in their profession. Some of them are so; but this respectable portion of the memorialists have arrived at that period, when men usually retire from associations of this nature. These gentlemen have, accordingly done so; and, it is well known, will take no active part in this new business. The active part of the memorialists are in no way remarkable for their age, or rank in their profession.

3rd. As to the 'hatreds,' existing between 'the young and ar-

dent candidates for fame and practice,' none have been known, before the projection of this College exposed them to public view. On the contrary, the medical profession in this State has been distinguished, by their distant brethren, for their harmony, and mutual exertions for the promotion of public objects. If the demon of discord is to be let loose, he will spring from the foundations of this extraordinary new school.

4th. It seems that the public are to be taught by this College, that Medicine is not a 'mere money getting trade,' which is as much as to assert, that it is so considered by the medical profession at present. The Physicians of this State will, no doubt, feel obliged to those gentlemen for making this discovery; and the public will duly appreciate it, when they consider the labours of the faculty during the Yellow Fever, whenever it has appeared; during the Spotted Fever; and the exertions they have made, and the risques they have incurred, in investigating these diseases, in every way practicable; their gratuitous attendance on Dispensaries, and other public charities; their attempt to diffuse the Cow Pock among the poor in 1803 and 1811; and their various publications made for the promotion of medical science and the public good. All these things will be still more justly estimated when contrasted with the deeds of agents for the new College, such as a liberal dispensation of Cow Pock matter - for a small fee; generous inoculation of seamen,- when paid for by a merchant; and the disinterested offer to vaccinate a hundred individuals in two rich parishes - at the expense of a benevolent unknown.*

April 26, 1811.

This contribution was followed a few days later, May 3, by an article by Dr. Waterhouse over the signature, "Novum Organum," which occasioned much feeling and later caused a charge for libel. The Doctor afterwards expressed regret at having written it, not supposing that it would be taken as seriously as it was.

"For the Palladium."

Messrs. Editors,-

"To a literary communication relative to the contemplated College of Physicians, some one has thought fit to publish an answer, as if any individual man, or body of men had been attacked. That which the answer calls 'singular remarks,' contained nothing personal, but were general sentiments, and such as have grown up from common observation and common sense; and, as such, they ought not to have called forth personal remarks, especially when pointed so directly that no one could mistake them, or guess wrong, because they are applicable to one person alone. What had this business of the College of Physicians to do with vaccination? If this personal attack was made by a member of any Med-

* These were flings at Dr. Waterhouse and refer to practices charged against him, which he explained and denied in the sense that they were made.

ical Society, he is a disgrace to that Society, and the deed comes under the head of those 'unworthy practices' which the College of Physicians profess to discountenance.

The writer in your last says, that the College of Physicians contemplates nothing beyond what is performed by institutions already existing. True, they contemplate nothing beyond any Medical Association in the State; they only contemplate being equal to any of them.

The writer, speaking of the College of Physicians, calls it, this 'extraordinary new school,' as if it was meant to be a rival to the Medical School of Harvard College, when it is well known that one of the Professors in that institution, one of us three pillars, is a strenuous ^{advocate} of this new College of Physicians, from a belief that it will be beneficial to the interests of Medicine in general, and to that institution in particular. To suppose that a medical Professor would advocate a plan which had a tendency to destroy an institution which he had laboured to build up the greatest part of his life, is to suppose that a man would burn up the house he had been years in building and decorating. But there is no end to the absurd suggestions of the envious and avaricious.

But it is said, that the Massachusetts Medical Society have taken the alarm, and have, in substance, declared that there shall be no other Medical Society in the State like unto themselves! and it is believed that they have appointed a committee to defeat, if they can, the application of the petitioners for a College of Physicians to the Legislature, by telling them that two Medical Societies in our State would stunt the growth of the healing art, instead of nourishing and increasing it! I once knew a town that had but one Fire Engine; and the Captain of it, as well as his Engine man, were distinguished among the crowd. The Captain was, at the same time, a leader of the singers at the meeting-house. These two offices gave him distinction in the town, and in the congregation. It was then the Engine, and the Captain of the Engine. The Doctor himself, while hurrying through the street with his pipe, to a patient in the colic, was not a man of more consequence than was Captain Squirt, driving through the street with his pipe, at the cry of fire! Of the two, the Captain was the most popular, for he did his business gratis. At length, when the town had grown and extended twice the size it was when the Engine was imported, it was the general opinion that they should have another Engine. But when they came to lay the affair before the authority of the town, to get a legal sanction to their determination, every one was in favor of another Engine, except Captain Squirt and his men. They opposed it violently and said they had for forty years done very well with but one Engine, and could go on forty years longer without the trouble of another; or in the words of the writer of your last, 'amply competent to all the purposes required.' In vain they told the Captain and his men that the town required two engines from its increase, and that the inhabitants had suffered from having but one; but he would listen to no such 'new and extraordinary' arguments. At length, one of his old friends took him aside, and said - Captain Squirt, you will injure yourself, in the opinion of all the inhabitants, if you oppose our having another Engine. It will not damage you, but only divide the labour with you, and assist you in your public services. It will take nothing from your profits; if it did, you might reasonably complain. But he replied, that he wished for no diminution of labour, for that, much as the town had grown, he was as equal to running from one end to the other as ever he was. Upon this, his friend gently reminded him, that, as he was now a little advanced, he would ^{be} able,

many years longer, to jump out of bed, as he used to do, at every cry of fire! To this the Captain hastily replied, I have thought of all that, and have provided against it. There is my son will gladly take my place, if I should, by any accident, not go myself; and though I say it, that have no business to say it, he is as smart a lad at the pipe as any one in this town. He can do as well as I can, and better too, and I wish you would tell the town so. It was easily seen that the old man was past reasoning with, and that his pride was wounded at the very idea of his consequence being ~~diminished~~ diminished by the introduction of another Engine and of another Captain. The gentlemen of the town, without regarding him, proceeded to get another Engine and another Captain. When the machine arrived, almost every gentlemen in town went to see it, and some ingenious men examined it very closely, and pronounced it a pretty thing, and an improvement on the old one; for it was found on trial, that number two could squirt higher and stronger than number one. Everybody liked it but the old Captain and a few of his men. He even went so far as to get a few of them at his house one evening to sign a paper which he had drawn up to prove that two Engines were of less service to the town than one; for that now, when fire was cried, some ran to Engine No.1 and some to No.2, which by dividing the attention of the people, which was heretofore directed to one, did more harm than good. He proved, equally clear, that, as each man was observed to praise his own Engine, it would occasion quarrels among the two Engine Societies; and, therefore, to preserve the peace of the town, it would be best to destroy one of them. But he could make no converts to his opinion beyond his own family and three or four more. Upon this, he grew very cross, and seemed to care little about his duty as Captain of the old Engine, but left it pretty much to one of his boys.

Whether it was that he perceived people laughed at him, or what, we cannot say, but Captain Squirt never lifted his head up as usual in the singing gallery. Whether he cracked his pipe, or broke his wind, we do not know, but it is certain he never sung out so loud in meeting since he found the new preferred to the old Engine."

"Novum Organum."

P.S. "I will send you another anecdote of a lot of land, in the EASTERN part of our town, which was given to our Fire Society at large; with the attempts made to appropriate it to the sole use, behoof, profit, and advantage of the aforesaid Captain and his family."

It was stated by the opponents of the new Society that its incorporation, as planned, would give it power to grant degrees and thus interfere with the Medical School of Harvard College, and that this was the real purpose of some, at least, of the petitioners. This called forth the following communication, over the signature "Moderation," by Dr. Waterhouse printed in the "Chronicle" June 17, 1811.

"The College of Physicians, and a Medical Society."

"Pains have been taken to make some of our country brethren believe

that those gentlemen who aim to procure such an establishment, contemplate a college or medical school, wherein to give lectures, and confer degrees, whereas it is only meant to be a medical society bearing that name, which is usual in other countries, and in some of the states in our own land. As unusual pains are every day taken to envelop truth in a cloud of misrepresentation, it shall be my task to try to dissipate it, so that our brethren from the country may have a fair and distinct view of the thing intended. The Massachusetts Medical Society, originated during our war with Great Britain, and was a wise and useful institution in making physicians more acquainted with each other, and in gradually rubbing off those repellant points which too often surround men, in the medical profession. For twenty years and more the Medical Society had presidents and officers that gave general satisfaction, by their disinterested and impartial conduct; and it was not until through a succession of changes, that dissatisfaction has grown up chiefly owing to a monopolizing and overbearing disposition, with now and then a no small portion of arrogance in certain individuals of it: for some who influence this society pursue the same policy with the great man in France; they treat with great complacency and even flattery all those who would servilely follow in their train, and subserve their views; but woe be to the man ^{who} dared to oppose them. Against the man of talents and of independence, provided he was not, by his standing in the capital, too strongly intrenched, the flood-gates of opposition and abuse were secretly opened. Their effects were often felt without being at once able to trace their source. Has any man, more than ordinarily distinguished for his knowledge and skill in anatomy and surgery, or in practice, come from the country into the capital, has he been kindly received or fairly treated? Have not some young men, who came from New Hampshire to Boston, and did no more (though unlawfully) than the president and other officers of the medical society have done every year of their professional lives: and must continue to do, or they must give up dissections. Have not I say such young men been pursued, harassed, and tormented by those, who from fellow feeling ought to have befriended them? Yet have they not been pursued like cats, whom mischievous boys have chased about with an intention finally to destroy? Have not some of the members of the board of health of the last year made their own observations on this head? Who hired boys to write the words 'Pork Steaks' on the walls and fences all about Boston? And for what purpose was it done? The public sentiment is commonly generous, and in the end always right. They never will countenance a combination to oppress a meritorious individual. These observations relate to individuals, and not to any incorporated society, quatenus society, yet their correction must be looked for in a new society.

There are in this Commonwealth about 460 towns, and if we allow only two practitioners to a town, it will make between 900 and 1000 physicians in the State of Massachusetts. Let us say a thousand, which is below the number. Of this number about 30 generally attend the annual meeting in this month, where they sometimes vote approbation to things which it is hardly possible they can clearly understand, or have time to digest. The consequence is the business is left to the president and council residing in Boston. But who compose this council, and what are their numbers? I will leave the answer to be made by every medical man who reads this; and will only ask if they be not found to be a family compact, whose individuals engross, or aim to monopolize all the honors and profits of the profession? Let our country brethren try brethren inquire how this politico-medical treat their

independent spirited brothers, and while they are about it, let them include Cambridge in their inquiries. Let them satisfy themselves whether the Medical professors perform their respective offices with faithfulness and ability. If everything in medical instruction goes on ably and harmoniously; let them encourage them so to proceed, if not let them investigate the cause, if any there be, of discontent, and restore harmony.

The fate of medical affairs has arrested the attention of the fathers of the profession in the capital and its vicinity, and they are solicitous for its honor and its prosperity, and hence it is, that they are desirous of establishing a new society, without the least intention or wish to meddle with the old one."

"Moderation."

These articles were followed by others, during the next six or eight months, in favor of the new society, most of them being attributed to Dr. Waterhouse, but the authorship of some of which he denied. They are very interesting, showing a mixture of medical matters, politics and personalities in keeping with the spirit of the times. In the "Boston Patriot," Oct. 12, 1811, we read:-

"Some late communications concerning the Hospital for lunatics have led to reflections upon a petition now before the Legislature, for the incorporation of a literary association under the title of the 'Massachusetts Coll. of Physicians.' *****

When the petition was presented, signed principally, by the oldest and most respectable practitioners in the neighbourhood; messengers and letters were sent thro' the state to engage certain influential members of the General Court in season to prejudice them against it before they could have any opportunity to examine the subject for themselves; and during the session those, who were supposed to have weight in the Senate and House, were daily besieged, and every endeavor made to bias ^{the bill} their judgment; and one of them actually confessed that tho' he thought ^{the bill} to pass, he should oppose it, because he had prematurely pledged himself! Those are facts which every one who will candidly enquire, may ascertain for himself; but we are happy to learn that the Governor and all the principal characters in the government are decidedly, in favor of this institution. They saw the motives of opposition to the original plan of the lunatic hospital; they see the same in this; and will doubtless act with the same resolution on both. Party spirit, private interest and personal attachment will doubtless have great influence in this as most other cases; but it is hoped that all those, who have not already prejudged the case, will maturely consider it; and there will be very little doubt on which side they will determine. ****

The establishment of this institution therefore is of importance, not only as it concerns the cause of literature and the improvement of those concerned, but as one step towards destroying this Junto of inveterate opposers to government and order."

This was referred to a few days later in the "Patriot" as follows:-

"A communication in the Boston Patriot, Oct.12,1811, has been read with much satisfaction. *****

In addition to reasons, which have been already presented to the public, in favor of the incorporation of the contemplated institution; others of more importance to medical science, might have been offered, than those, which have been derived from the well known facts, that all the literary institutions in the state are at this time entirely under the influence of a party violently opposed to government; while this party arrogate to themselves all the wisdom and erudition in the commonwealth."

The writer goes on to say that the Mass. Medical Society, while composed of men of learning and culture, did not bring forth medical articles of importance because its members were too much devoted to their own interests and too indolent as regarded the public welfare. He then continues:-

"The object of the contemplated institution is not, as has been suggested by its opposers, to introduce scisms among the faculty, and oppugnancy to medical knowledge - but on the contrary, to encourage an union, and promote scientific researches, by inciting its own members, as well as others, to a laudable and efficient rivalry in the healing art. Would not a competition between two societies engaged in similar pursuits, excite an honorable emulation? The affirmation will be assented to by all, who have not prejudged to the contrary.

If those gentlemen who oppose the contemplated college of physicians, are ambitious of the honour of being considered the first medical characters in the state, let them establish their right to the claim, not by their attempt to continue others in obscurity, who may be at least their equals; but by encouraging an emulation of those exalted talents, which they themselves would be thought eminently to possess.

The contemplated college will not object that its elder sister should take the lead in science, nor will wish herself to be debarred the privilege of entering the list as a competitor for the prize of honor and well deserved fame, if not of reward and emolument." *****

The following abstract from an article, in the "Chronicle" Dec. 23,1811, in all probability written by Dr. Waterhouse, is worth reading:-

"It appears the federal junto formed in the metropolis to oppose the College of Physicians, have styled themselves the 'Beehive;' (and in truth as far as industry in a bad cause will go, the comparison is just,) and have moreover denominated one of the Professors of Harvard College* an old drone, because, among other things equally obnoxious to them, he has favored this new institution; because he had been willing to allow other bees to form a hive for themselves, to collect their own honey and dispose of it at pleasure, without being subject as they now are, to the ipse dixit of every domineering individual.

At a late meeting of these Bees to attempt expelling the aforesaid drone from the royal hive, they endeavored to hinder him from having due time to make his defence." *****

A communication in the "Chronicle", Dec.18,1811, says:-

*Dr. Waterhouse.

"This contemplated institution seems to have given great annoyance of late to the Medico-Political Junto of our State. When it was first proposed, a tremendous outcry was raised by a few leaders in the metropolis, that the Medical Society was at once to be annihilated by it. (One would think, by the bye, that this Medical Society must have a pretty sandy foundation, if the mention of another could indeed produce such trepidation among its members;) *****

Meetings were held and members admitted, who were never noticed before, to enlist as volunteers in crushing this supposed rival; in fact every strategem was used, and every corner ransacked by the federal junto to retain the despotic power they have so long exercised in Law, Physick and Divinity; while the poor Medical Society was made a mere bugbear to frighten the young, and blind and prejudice the old.

Having done all the mischief possible with so sharp-edged a tool as this society, it is now laid aside for future use; and let this College of Physicians, the formidable Hydra, is leveling all its strength against Harvard College and the famed Medical School of New England; and one of the Professors,* a republican, who has favored it, has already been accused of high crimes and misdemeanors, because he had too much charity, liberality and love of literature, to attempt confining all the honor and emoluments of the profession to his own family dependents, he has been styled the drone in this compact of private interest against public utility; and in the eye of every friend to literature he could not have had a greater testimony of merit.

The fact however is, that all this outcry about Harvard College and the Medical Society, is mere pretence; it has been ratified by a few individuals, who having forever lost their influence in the political world, are resolved to use every means of maintaining their petty despotism in literature. The Massachusetts College of Physicians is the first institution of the kind, patronized and strenuously supported by every influential republican in the State; the first inroad upon that despotic power so tyrannically exerted for years in the republic of letters by a small well organized Junto, with "divide and conquer" for their motto, they use every artifice to draw off the attention of the republicans from the true object of the institution; under a pretence of love for the interests of literature, which they of all men least possess, are resolved to crush everything that may give others the best opportunity of improvement, honor or emolument. It is by keeping possession of every avenue of learning, that the junto are still enabled with impunity to oppose, insult and abuse our government; and the sanction lately given by the University to the insults of a set of beardless political tyros upon our venerable Governor, grown grey in the service of his country, evidently discovers the true reason of the virulent, unceasing opposition of the junto to the College of Physicians, or any other institution not under their absolute control."

"Veritas."

Again in the same paper, in its issue of Dec.30,1811, we find this:-

"The following communication from one of the most eminent physicians in the State, who is from principle an avowed opposer to Juntism,

* Dr. Waterhouse.

both in politics and medicine, will develop the true reasons of opposition to the College of Physicians. ***** As those gentlemen have adduced no valid reasons for their objections, and as an alarm has been given by the cry of schisms and division, it seems necessary to inform the public in a more particular manner, that there are a few medical gentlemen who assume the exclusive province of dictators, and expect there will be a general acquiescence to their opinions upon all occasions, while every dissenter is denounced as schismatic, ignorant and erroneous. Every new opinion is, in the language of the day, cried down; the author consequently is avoided and neglected as dangerous. Hence the door to scientific improvement is closed; for no modest enquirer after truth will, at the risque of losing his daily subsistence, deviate from prescribed forms, lest he should succumb under the censure of the inquisitorial body, who are resorted to for advice in cases of alarming danger. Hence it is, the younger class of medical gentlemen in the metropolis are beheld treading the walks of science, in the old beaten road of their predecessors; led on like a procession of geese, by their leaders. Such are the effects of fear, where independence and resolution are wanting.***** It has been observed that the members of the old society have always harmonized; this will not be contradicted; for so long as an apparent subserviency to the views of certain characters existed, there was no cause for contention;— but mark the event, as soon as a plan for improvement is suggested, the opposition of some of the medical gentlemen shows it, under a variety of forms.*****

A stimulus is necessary to rouse the old institution to greater exertions, than they have ever exhibited. The contemplated College of Physicians will become this stimulus. Where honor and fame are the prizes contended for, an emulation will be excited by a competition of rival societies."

These articles were replied to to some extent. We will print one communication, that in reply to Dr. Waterhouse's "Novum Organum" contribution:—

To the Palladium.

Messrs. Editors.

"The writer in a former Palladium, who subscribes himself, 'Novum Organum,' has diverted the town and excited considerable speculation by a well wrought fiction. But when he resorts to the air of imagination to propagate obloquy and reproach, he obviously deserts the most honorable and politic method of enlisting friends for the newly projected institution, and acquiring that respect in public estimation its pretended object demands. Is it necessary, in discussion on the expediency and usefulness of public institutions, to relinquish the manners and language of civility and decorum, and usurp the privileges of Billingsgate and Wapping? It was highly improper in the writer of that communication, to attribute unworthy and sordid motives to the gentleman, whose zeal only for the advancement and general diffusion of medical science, induced him to attempt a transfer of land, by which the intention and wish of the legislature would have been more fully accomplished. It is a physical certainty, that the nutriment that will only preserve a profusion of plants in a state of miserable existence, if

The first part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all transactions. It is essential for the business to have a clear and concise record of all income and expenses. This will allow the business to track its financial performance over time and identify areas for improvement. The second part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all assets and liabilities. This will allow the business to track its net worth over time and identify areas for improvement. The third part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all taxes paid. This will allow the business to track its tax liability over time and identify areas for improvement. The fourth part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all debts. This will allow the business to track its debt liability over time and identify areas for improvement. The fifth part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all equity. This will allow the business to track its equity over time and identify areas for improvement. The sixth part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all other financial information. This will allow the business to track its overall financial performance over time and identify areas for improvement.

The seventh part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all other financial information. This will allow the business to track its overall financial performance over time and identify areas for improvement. The eighth part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all other financial information. This will allow the business to track its overall financial performance over time and identify areas for improvement. The ninth part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all other financial information. This will allow the business to track its overall financial performance over time and identify areas for improvement. The tenth part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all other financial information. This will allow the business to track its overall financial performance over time and identify areas for improvement.

skilfully administered to one or a few will produce fruit of a delicious flavor. The same extent of patronage distributed to several institutions, enjoying the same privileges, and propelled towards the same object, will achieve less good, than when accumulated and bestowed upon one."

"C."

Harrington, in his History of the Harvard Medical School, in referring to this campaign says:-

"It is impossible to give anything like a correct idea of the bitterness with which this affair was conducted. Pamphlets, private letters, newspapers, social and political influences, as well as private solicitations were all employed for and against the bill."

When the Legislature assembled the next year the personnel of the petitioners for the new Society had changed to some extent. Several, displeased at the injection of politics, had withdrawn while Dr. Waterhouse and ~~several others~~ some others, whose names were not among the original signers, became active supporters ~~before that body~~ of the measure, before that body. At a later time the Doctor defended his course in advocating the new Society as follows:-

"All my efforts, which have not been so very zealous as has been reported, have been for the establishment of a new Medical Society, which should conduct itself with more industry & less partiality than the old one. I gave my attendance to the Mass. Med. Society for a number of years, and found, that instead of employing itself in improving physick, in making & diffusing discoveries & experiments, our time was almost wholly taken up in quarrelling; and the object of their quarrel was for a series of years our Medical School at Cambridge. I often mentioned to some of the members, that the Med. Society did by no means answer the intention of its creation. I knew what Medical Societies were in Great Britain. I had been Secretary to the old, now Royal Med. Society of Edinburgh from about a month after I first arrived there untill I left it;

The first part of the paper is devoted to a general discussion of the problem of the origin of life. It is shown that the problem is not only a scientific one, but also a philosophical one. The scientific aspect of the problem is concerned with the question of how life arose from non-life. The philosophical aspect is concerned with the question of whether life is a necessary part of the universe or whether it is a mere accident.

The second part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the various theories of the origin of life. These theories are divided into two main classes: the theory of spontaneous generation and the theory of biogenesis. The theory of spontaneous generation is the older of the two and is based on the idea that life can arise from non-life. The theory of biogenesis is the newer of the two and is based on the idea that life can only arise from life.

The third part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the evidence for and against the theory of spontaneous generation. It is shown that there is a great deal of evidence in favor of the theory of spontaneous generation, but that there is also a great deal of evidence against it. The evidence in favor of the theory of spontaneous generation is based on the fact that life has been found to arise from non-life in a number of cases. The evidence against the theory of spontaneous generation is based on the fact that life has never been found to arise from non-life in a single case.

The fourth part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the evidence for and against the theory of biogenesis. It is shown that there is a great deal of evidence in favor of the theory of biogenesis, but that there is also a great deal of evidence against it. The evidence in favor of the theory of biogenesis is based on the fact that life has never been found to arise from non-life in a single case. The evidence against the theory of biogenesis is based on the fact that life has been found to arise from non-life in a number of cases.

The fifth part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the various theories of the origin of life. These theories are divided into two main classes: the theory of spontaneous generation and the theory of biogenesis. The theory of spontaneous generation is the older of the two and is based on the idea that life can arise from non-life. The theory of biogenesis is the newer of the two and is based on the idea that life can only arise from life.

The sixth part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the evidence for and against the theory of spontaneous generation. It is shown that there is a great deal of evidence in favor of the theory of spontaneous generation, but that there is also a great deal of evidence against it. The evidence in favor of the theory of spontaneous generation is based on the fact that life has been found to arise from non-life in a number of cases. The evidence against the theory of spontaneous generation is based on the fact that life has never been found to arise from non-life in a single case.

The seventh part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the evidence for and against the theory of biogenesis. It is shown that there is a great deal of evidence in favor of the theory of biogenesis, but that there is also a great deal of evidence against it. The evidence in favor of the theory of biogenesis is based on the fact that life has never been found to arise from non-life in a single case. The evidence against the theory of biogenesis is based on the fact that life has been found to arise from non-life in a number of cases.

The eighth part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the various theories of the origin of life. These theories are divided into two main classes: the theory of spontaneous generation and the theory of biogenesis. The theory of spontaneous generation is the older of the two and is based on the idea that life can arise from non-life. The theory of biogenesis is the newer of the two and is based on the idea that life can only arise from life.

The ninth part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the evidence for and against the theory of spontaneous generation. It is shown that there is a great deal of evidence in favor of the theory of spontaneous generation, but that there is also a great deal of evidence against it. The evidence in favor of the theory of spontaneous generation is based on the fact that life has been found to arise from non-life in a number of cases. The evidence against the theory of spontaneous generation is based on the fact that life has never been found to arise from non-life in a single case.

The tenth part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the evidence for and against the theory of biogenesis. It is shown that there is a great deal of evidence in favor of the theory of biogenesis, but that there is also a great deal of evidence against it. The evidence in favor of the theory of biogenesis is based on the fact that life has never been found to arise from non-life in a single case. The evidence against the theory of biogenesis is based on the fact that life has been found to arise from non-life in a number of cases.

and had, from my office in it an opportunity of knowing its private economy & all its public doings. I was pretty well acquainted with all the Medical Societies in London, and when I compared these British Medical Societies with the one to which I belonged here, I felt humiliated at the comparison.

Such was the conduct of the Mass. Med. Society towards us three Professors, that we all concluded, at one period, to retire from it. They* may remember that period, when I reminded them of the argument I made use of to induce one of them to remain in it. I told them that one had better ^{remain} in the Society, like a missionary among the Indians, who would be able to discover & report any mischief that was brewing against us. What they did I do not recollect; but I did not visit the Society for several years; and heard nothing of their doings unless it was of a violent dispute & quarrel between Dr. Lloyd, and Dr. Spring.

I do not recollect having any other communication with the Mass. Med. Society untill the year 1801. At that time I learnt that the Med. Society had sent to London & had bought a guineas worth of vaccine matter at the London Vaccine Institution, but that on trial it had proved to have lost its efficacy. I thereupon sent them a portion of my own that I had just received from England and some quite fresh; and in the letter which accompanied it, I told the Society through its President that I was dissatisfied with the modes of distributing the matter and the manner of diffusing its benefits. I felt disposed to take their advice & go by their directions.- Their conduct on this occasion is now publishing, and the public can form their own judgment of their behaviour and mine. When I found my communications slighted, & my papers contemptuously returned, and myself treated with no more attention than if I was a horsefarmer, I

*Doctors Warren and Dexter.

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

determined to retire forever from the Society. I however preserved a profound silence as it regarded the society. And I should not now have brought the affair before the public, had not the officers of it, as I believe, republished their calumnies in a scurrilous pamphlet, which it is probable all of you have seen.

These things are related to show how little fit this Society is to lead and direct the Medical affairs of our Commonwealth of Physic. My publications are to show that my retiring from the Med. Society was not the result of whim, but of principle; and to point out the effects of it, in order to show the necessity of forming another. This has not been an entirely new idea; the fathers of the profession have long spoken of it, and lamented that there was not another central point to which the observations, experiments & discoveries of ingenious, modest & unpatronized physicians might be directed, & thence reflected back to every part of the Commonwealth.

Our oldest and most distinguished Physicians in Boston & in the country, have given their opinion that such a new society would be beneficial."

In presenting the matter to the Legislature Governor had this to say:-

"Many institutions in this Commonwealth, which have promised great benefit to the publick, would have met with more success, had similar co-operations been established. When only one of any kind is permitted it too frequently happens, that a majority of individuals composing it indulge their private views and interests, to the exclusion of men, of the most enlarged, liberal, and informed minds; and thus destroy the reputation and usefulness of the society itself. The multiplication of such institutions, has a tendency, not to prevent this evil, which is an opiate to genius, but to produce a competition, and to promote in the highest degree the utility of such establishments."

The measure was referred to a joint committee of the Senate and House which met in the Senate chamber. The room is said to have been crowded at the hearing. Doctors Waterhouse, Ingalls and Lovell represented the petitioners and a committee from the Mass. Med. Society appear-

1. The first part of the document discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all transactions and activities. It emphasizes the need for transparency and accountability in financial reporting.

2. The second part of the document outlines the various methods and techniques used to collect and analyze data. It includes a detailed description of the experimental procedures and the statistical analysis performed.

3. The third part of the document presents the results of the study. It includes a series of tables and graphs that illustrate the findings of the research. The data shows a clear trend of increasing activity over time.

4. The fourth part of the document discusses the implications of the findings. It suggests that the results have significant implications for the field of study and may lead to further research in this area.

5. The fifth part of the document provides a conclusion and summarizes the key points of the study. It reiterates the importance of accurate record-keeping and the need for ongoing research in this field.

Table 1: Summary of Data Collection Methods	
Method	Description
Interviews	Conducted with 10 participants to gather qualitative data.
Surveys	Distributed to a larger group of participants to collect quantitative data.
Observations	Used to monitor and record activities in a natural setting.
Experiments	Designed to test specific hypotheses under controlled conditions.

Table 2: Statistical Analysis Results	
Variable	Mean
Activity Level	15.2
Time Spent	45.8
Frequency	3.5
Duration	12.1

ed in opposition. After a session of some five hours the Committee voted, by a majority of one, that the petitioners have leave to bring in a bill. This result was unexpected by the opposition and hearing that some of the signers of the petition~~ers~~ had expressed themselves as having put their names to the same under a misconception of its meaning, written statements from them to this effect was presented to the Senate when the matter came before that body. Notwithstanding this the Senate voted in favor of the new Society.

In the House, however, the measure was defeated by a vote of 209 for and 218 against. Reconsideration was granted but the next day it was again defeated by a vote of 195 to 211, after a debate of some three hours. It is said that the debate on the question in both branches of the Legislature was interesting, exciting and sometimes violent, and lasted a week or ten days to the exclusion of all other business.

In the Warren Papers, in possession of the Mass. Historical Society, the statement is made that although the Profession, the Mass. Med. Society and the Harvard Med. School opposed the measure, political feeling would have carried the ~~the~~ proposed institution except that eight or ten physicians of the Democratic party voted with the Federalists; the Speaker of the House opposed it and that an immense amount of personal work was done by members of the above bodies in opposition. A memorandum on one of the same papers reads:-

"This plan^{*} was originated by Br^r - Wm Ingalls and Br^r - Benjamin Waterhouse and the Commonwealth being at that time strongly Democratic these gentlemen changed sides in politics and became active democrats,^x These two gentlemen prevailed upon other respectable persons to join them."

*For a new Medical Society.

^x Republican then meant Democratic or "Jacobin".

The statement was crossed out, as here printed. It would seem to be disproved, so far as it relates to politics, by the following passage from a letter written by Dr. Waterhouse to Dr. Lettson, July 15, 1810, which shows that Dr. Waterhouse changed his politics some time previous to this and for a very different reason.

"That party denominated the Republican, in opposition to that called Federalists, is decidedly predominant in every State of the Union, Connecticut excepted. The Republican party gains ground every day, and the other will never, I believe, domineer again. I was of this Federal party untill this year or two, as far as it regarded my voting; but I never was active or zealous; I, however, have abjured them since I find they prefer the honour of a foreign country to our own."

In the meantime, while this controversy over the proposed new Medical Society had been going on, matters reached a crisis in the relations of the medical Professors and the following letter was sent to the Corporation of the College by the other members of the medical faculty.

Nov. 11, 1811.

"We, the undersigned medical Professors, have, for some time past, suffered a great embarrassment in the management of the interests of the Medical Institution of Harvard University. This embarrassment has arisen from want of confidence on our part in the professor of the Theory & Practice of Physic. We have not believed it altogether safe to engage in any free discussion respecting the affairs of the Institution with the Professor.

We will not disguise that, in addition to this want of confidence, our feelings have been much and very unpleasantly affected by the conduct of the above mentioned Professor toward ourselves. The circumstances, which have produced these sentiments and feelings, have been of the following description, viz: The 1st, the above mentioned Professor has been engaged in the support of plans inimical to the interests of the medical Institution. 2d, In his intercourse with us that professor has, as we believe, been guilty of duplicity and want of veracity, and 3d, He has, as we believe, repeatedly published in the newspapers without his proper signature, suggestions and insinuations injurious to our characters and highly offensive to our feelings, and such as are designed to diminish our usefulness in the University.

Under these circumstances, it has appeared to us to be inconsistent with our honour, as it is with our feelings, and in some measure dangerous to the welfare of the Medical Institution, to have intercourse with him; and we have, therefore, resolved that we cannot, at present, hold any further communication with the above mentioned Professor.

All which we have thought proper to lay before the Honourable and Reverend Board, over which you preside."

John Warren.

The first part of the paper discusses the importance of the study and the objectives of the research. It also mentions the scope of the study and the limitations. The second part of the paper discusses the methodology used in the study. It includes a description of the sample and the data collection methods. The third part of the paper discusses the results of the study. It includes a description of the findings and the conclusions drawn from the study. The fourth part of the paper discusses the implications of the study and the recommendations for future research.

The study was conducted in a sample of 100 participants. The data was collected using a questionnaire. The results of the study show that there is a significant relationship between the variables. The findings suggest that the study has important implications for the field. The study also has some limitations, which are discussed in the paper. The study is a preliminary study and needs to be replicated in a larger sample.

The study was conducted in a sample of 100 participants. The data was collected using a questionnaire. The results of the study show that there is a significant relationship between the variables. The findings suggest that the study has important implications for the field. The study also has some limitations, which are discussed in the paper. The study is a preliminary study and needs to be replicated in a larger sample.

The study was conducted in a sample of 100 participants. The data was collected using a questionnaire. The results of the study show that there is a significant relationship between the variables. The findings suggest that the study has important implications for the field. The study also has some limitations, which are discussed in the paper. The study is a preliminary study and needs to be replicated in a larger sample.

The study was conducted in a sample of 100 participants. The data was collected using a questionnaire. The results of the study show that there is a significant relationship between the variables. The findings suggest that the study has important implications for the field. The study also has some limitations, which are discussed in the paper. The study is a preliminary study and needs to be replicated in a larger sample.

The study was conducted in a sample of 100 participants. The data was collected using a questionnaire. The results of the study show that there is a significant relationship between the variables. The findings suggest that the study has important implications for the field. The study also has some limitations, which are discussed in the paper. The study is a preliminary study and needs to be replicated in a larger sample.

The study was conducted in a sample of 100 participants. The data was collected using a questionnaire. The results of the study show that there is a significant relationship between the variables. The findings suggest that the study has important implications for the field. The study also has some limitations, which are discussed in the paper. The study is a preliminary study and needs to be replicated in a larger sample.

James Jackson.

John C. Warren.

John Goreham.

Aaron Dexter.

One of the histories of the Medical School speaks of this affair as follows:- "The young men practically made a concerted effort to attack the unpopular professor and cause his removal. They found him, however, a hard fighter, and it was only after a very prolonged and acrimonious debate that the old Jeffersonian Republican fell before the attacks of the young men representing new ideas in medicine and the Federalist party in politics."

The letter of the Professors was laid before the Corporation at a meeting held at the house of the Chief Justice, at Boston, Nov. 18, 1811, and the President was instructed to inform Dr. Waterhouse and the other Professors that the Corporation would attend to the matter on Dec. 11, at the hall of the Union bank, Boston, and he was also to see that the Doctor had a copy of the letter containing the charges.

In reply to the letter of the President, transmitting a copy of the complaints and notifying Dr. Waterhouse of the hearing on the same, the latter wrote as follows:-

Boston, Nov. 28, 1811.

Rev^d President Kirkland.

"I beg you, Reverend Sir, to be assured that my not answering your letter of last Saturday, enclosing that to the Corporation from the Medical Professors & their Adjuncts,- did not arise from inattention or disrespect; but from a very different sentiment.- It has so fallen out, in the course of the administration of your Predecessor, that I have, in one or two cases, answered some communications with full as much indignation as prudence. His lamented death dissipated everything like resentment, and has led me to form for myself a rule never to answer off hand, and on the first impression, any communica-

tion having the complexion of the denunciating letter of my Colleagues. I, therefore, after reading the letter to my wife & my children, and after having shown it to several friends out of doors, have taken up my pen to acknowledge receipt of it from you, and to say that I will attend at the time & place prescribed.

Two of the three charges appear ~~as~~ not to be worth my notice, or anyone's else: but one of them is sufficiently serious to excite all my attention, and the attention of my friends, & the attention of the College Legislature.

Scarcely a week has elapsed since I cleared myself from the imputation of peculation & other acts of dishonesty in the administration of the affairs of a public hospital* (~~for-that-was-the-amount-of-the-steries-told-of-me-by-John-Gellins-Warren~~)^x when I find myself accused before the Corporation of being a LIAR. The medical students here in Boston have already got hold of the story, and they are told that it will be only throwing away money to attend my course of lectures for that the Corporation are now in the act of removing me from a station which I disgrace. This and a great deal more has already reached the ears of all my family.

A few years ago, the College had in its service a Frenchman, who was a bad husband, a bad parent, a bad son-in-law, a bad neighbor, a bad citizen, and, almost every way, a bad man. College, it was said, suffered a disgrace, by retaining such a fellow in their service. Yet when they deliberated on dismissing him, a great many things were urged by good President Willard and some of the Corporation, & some of the Overseers in tenderness to his case. Those who were strenuous for his removal were reminded of the serious consequences that would follow such an event, upon the poor Frenchman; such as the destructive effects on his family - on his children, and on his future plans in life. They said dismissal for inability, or neglect of duty was one thing, but dismissal from such an Institution for immorality would ruin him in the eyes of the public, & force him to quit the country; and so it, in fact proved. This man was driven from College & from this country by the indignant voice of public opinion, and not by the intrigues of professional rivals.

Now I, who have been a Professor in your College nearly 30 years, & have still a few friends left who are not ashamed to own me, ask of the Honbl & Revd the Corporation no more tenderness, no more fellow feeling, sympathy or exercise of patience towards me, and consideration for my family, than was exercised towards this notoriously immoral Frenchman. I hope this letter may be kept entirely to yourself until such time as I can lay it before the Corporation, & that I may have the liberty of taking a copy of it.

Very respectfully,

Benjⁿ Waterhouse,

Prof^r M. &c.

P. S. I take this opportunity of informing the Corporation, that I am now giving my course of Medical Lectures agreeably to the Institution of Harvard College to seven pupils; and should probably have had three times as many, were it not that certain reports are made to circulate among the Medical students injurious to my reputation, as well as inter-

*The marine hospital. ^x This sentence appears this way in the letter.

The first part of the paper discusses the importance of the study and the objectives of the research. It also mentions the scope of the study and the limitations of the study.

The second part of the paper discusses the methodology used in the study. It mentions the data sources and the data collection methods used in the study.

The third part of the paper discusses the results of the study. It mentions the findings of the study and the conclusions drawn from the study.

The fourth part of the paper discusses the implications of the study. It mentions the practical implications of the study and the theoretical implications of the study.

The fifth part of the paper discusses the limitations of the study. It mentions the limitations of the study and the limitations of the study.

The sixth part of the paper discusses the conclusions of the study. It mentions the conclusions of the study and the conclusions of the study.

The seventh part of the paper discusses the future research. It mentions the future research and the future research.

The eighth part of the paper discusses the references. It mentions the references and the references.

The ninth part of the paper discusses the appendices. It mentions the appendices and the appendices.

The tenth part of the paper discusses the index. It mentions the index and the index.

est, which reports are false as well as malicious.

B. Waterhouse.

At the meeting of the Corporation, Dec. 11, the following "evidences" in support of the charges made by the Professors were presented:

"Evidences relative to the plans inimical to the
Medical Institution."

"Dr. Waterhouse has been an avowed friend to the project for a college of Physicians, for which a petition was presented to the Legislature of the Commonwealth at their last winter Session; during that Session he appeared before a Committee of the Legislature in the character of an Agent, and in June last he signed his name to the Petition. Now it has been well understood by the public & particularly among the Physicians in this community vicinity that, if that petition should be granted, a medical School would be formed by the new College. Of this it is true there is not any demonstrative evidence; but the establishment that the establishment of such a medical School has been contemplated, the signers of the letter to the President do not at all doubt; as little as they doubt that such an establishment, in so small a town as Boston must be injurious to the Medical Institution of the University. They conceive it would not be the part of prudence to wait for legal & demonstrative evidence of the existence of such a plan, before they began to oppose its execution, while they had such evidence as influences men in the common affairs of life.

Nor could they consider the conduct of the Professor of the Theory & Practice of Physic as otherwise than inimical to the medical Institution of the University, while he endeavored to promote the establishment of a power, which should even have authority to create a new medical school in this vicinity. Of some circumstantial evidence that petitioners for the College of Physicians do contemplate the creation of a new Medical School in this place, it may be stated;

That one of the most active of these petitioners is Dr. ^{Wm} Ingall of this Town.

That this Dr. Ingall, has already made some effort to obtain a class of Students to a course of Anatomical Lectures in Boston while the Lectures of the University have been going on there. And that this Dr. Ingalls was the only member of the Massachusetts Medical Society, who opposed a Memorial to the Legislature of the Commonwealth against the establishment of a College of Physicians at the annual meeting of that Society in June last, on which occasion Dr. Ingalls said that the College was not intended to interfere with that Society, whatever might be its operation on the Medical School of the University; or words to that effect.

True Copy of the Original.

Attest. C. Edwards, Copyist.

16 Dec. 1811.

"Evidence respecting the Duplicity."

"In the month of February 1810 Doctors Warren & Dexter conferred upon the expediency of petitioning the government of the University for permission to deliver a course of Lectures in Boston; and it was then agreed upon that Dr. Warren should propose the measure to Dr. Waterhouse. On the 7th of February Dr. Warren met Dr. Waterhouse in a visit to Mr. Johnnot at Mr. Moore's boarding house in Federal Street. When they came out Dr. Warren stopped at the gate, and there made known the proposition to Dr. Waterhouse, stated some reasons in favour of it, and asked Dr. Waterhouse's opinion on the subject; at the same time stating to Dr. Waterhouse that such a measure would probably promote his interest. Dr. Waterhouse said that he did not know that he should object to the plan. Dr. Warren then asked him to join Dr. Dexter and himself in a petition to the Corporation. This Dr. Waterhouse refused to do, as he said there were some points unsettled between that body and himself, and he would not ask anything of them until they were settled.

This conversation was related to Dr. Dexter on the same day at a meeting of the Counsellors of the Massachusetts Medical Society. On the 19th of the same February Dr. Waterhouse called, with a note from himself to Dr. Warren at the house of the latter.* Dr. Warren was at home when Dr. Waterhouse called, and so the latter was informed at the time; but he chose to deliver the note and not to stop, and said he would call again in the course of the afternoon forenoon.

As Dr. Waterhouse had peremptorily refused to unite in any application to the Corporation, Dr. Warren & Dexter had proposed a Memorial in behalf of themselves only, and this was actually lying on Dr. Warren's table prepared for signature, at the time Dr. Waterhouse left the note above mentioned. Dr. Warren immediately sent after Dr. Waterhouse & had him sought for at a number of places but could not find him.

In the evening Dr. Warren sent one of his pupils Mr. Clapp to Cambridge with the note (marked B)^x and the Memorial.

Dr. Warren was thus diligent in complying with the request in Dr. Waterhouse's note, because the Corporation were to meet the day following at which time it had been determined that the memorial should be presented. When Mr. Clapp presented the paper to Dr. Waterhouse, the latter perused it, and returned it without his signature, saying he believed he was possessor of the substance of it. Mr. C. then told him, that it would be presented the next morning, and asked if he would not sign it. Dr. Waterhouse refused to do this and said he should be glad to see one of the Professors in the morning. Mr. Clapp returned the paper to Dr. Warren the same evening with a report of the conversation.

Previous to this it had been arranged with the President that Dr. Warren & Dexter should call on him in the morning of the 20th with the memorial. On that morning they went up to Cambridge, but at an hour earlier than was appointed in order to comply with Dr. Waterhouse's wish to see one of them in the morning.

Dr. Warren went immediately to his house with the memorial, but there learnt that Dr. Waterhouse had gone to Boston about an hour before.

Doctors Warren & Dexter then presented the Memorial to the President. Soon after their return to Boston, one of them was informed

* See page 344.

^x See page 345.

The first part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all transactions. It is essential for the business to have a clear and concise record of all income and expenses. This will allow the business to track its financial performance over time and identify areas for improvement. The second part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all assets and liabilities. This will allow the business to track its net worth over time and identify areas for improvement. The third part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all debts and obligations. This will allow the business to track its financial obligations over time and identify areas for improvement. The fourth part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all taxes and other legal obligations. This will allow the business to track its financial obligations over time and identify areas for improvement. The fifth part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all other financial information. This will allow the business to track its financial performance over time and identify areas for improvement.

that Dr. Waterhouse had presented to the President a letter of protest, requesting that at least the Memorial should not be acted upon immediately. It was understood that the Corporation did delay to consider the Memorial in consequence of that letter from Dr. Waterhouse.

A true Copy of the Original

Attest, C. Edwards, Copyist.

16 Dec. 1811.

Statement relative to the meeting at Dr. Warren's

August 1810.*

"Notwithstanding the impression made on the minds of his brethren by the conduct of Dr. Waterhouse in relation to the extension of the medical lectures to Boston, he was invited with marks of particular attention to be present at a meeting of the medical professors on -- of August at Dr. Warren's in Boston.

At this meeting Dr. Jackson, who had been nominated to the Professorship of Clinical Medicine by the Corporation, was invited to attend. As soon as the Gentlemen had convened Dr. J.C. Warren brought forward the draught of a circular letter or advertisement, announcing the recent changes in the Medical Institution, and the arrangements for the ensuing season. After this letter had been read by Dr. J.C. Warren, Dr. Waterhouse took it and looked it over. He then made some remarks which were suggested by a part of it, not however in objection to the letter. In consequence of these remarks some conversation ensued which tho' offensive on his part as regarded the gentlemen present, it is not necessary to relate in this place. During this conversation Dr. Dexter retired in consequence of engagements elsewhere, and after it Dr. Jackson also withdrew. It may not be improper to remark that Dr. Jackson had attended this meeting in consequence of a written invitation without knowing the object of it and he withdrew because he did not feel himself entitled to a place in the meeting, and because the previous conversation led him to conceive that some objections might be made to his presence. After these gentlemen had withdrawn Dr. Waterhouse remarked, in conversation, that the plan for extending the medical school to Boston was not known to him until Mr. Clapp presented him the memorial at Cambridge. To this Dr. Warren replied to him that his memory was bad and reminded him of the conversation at Moore's gate after the visit to Johnnot. Dr. Waterhouse however denied all this and persisted in so doing after a repetition of the circumstances and substance of the conversation; saying at the time, that his memory was as vigorous and as perfect as it ever was. Dr. Warren then said to Dr. Waterhouse that if he persisted in denying the communication to him at the time referred to, he (Waterhouse) was guilty of falsehood.

Immediately Dr. Waterhouse rose and said that this must put an end to the conversation, but that the matter should be discussed in another place. After Dr. Waterhouse went out, Dr. Warren desired the

*Dr. Waterhouse's account of this meeting has already been given.

CONTENTS
The Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute, Vol. 34, Part 1, 1904
The Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute, Vol. 34, Part 1, 1904

THE JOURNAL OF THE
ROYAL ANTHROPOLOGICAL INSTITUTE
Vol. 34, Part 1, 1904

THE JOURNAL OF THE
ROYAL ANTHROPOLOGICAL INSTITUTE
Vol. 34, Part 1, 1904

THE JOURNAL OF THE
ROYAL ANTHROPOLOGICAL INSTITUTE
Vol. 34, Part 1, 1904

THE JOURNAL OF THE
ROYAL ANTHROPOLOGICAL INSTITUTE
Vol. 34, Part 1, 1904

THE JOURNAL OF THE
ROYAL ANTHROPOLOGICAL INSTITUTE
Vol. 34, Part 1, 1904

THE JOURNAL OF THE
ROYAL ANTHROPOLOGICAL INSTITUTE
Vol. 34, Part 1, 1904

THE JOURNAL OF THE
ROYAL ANTHROPOLOGICAL INSTITUTE
Vol. 34, Part 1, 1904

THE JOURNAL OF THE
ROYAL ANTHROPOLOGICAL INSTITUTE
Vol. 34, Part 1, 1904

gentlemen present, viz. Dr. J. C. Warren and Dr. Gorham to remember this conversation. This memorandum is now submitted to the inspection of the Corporation and a copy of it will be found in the paper marked (C). The paper marked (D)* is a copy of a note from Dr. Waterhouse to Dr. Dexter dated 26 Aug. 1810 in which he advises that the circular above mentioned should be printed and distributed on the commencement day or the day following. The circular was printed tho' not quite so early as proposed, it did not under-go any material alterations after Dr. Waterhouse saw it. His name as well as those of the other Professors was subjoined to the printed letter, without the signature of either to the manuscript copy. The paper marked (E)* is the copy of a letter from Dr. Waterhouse to the Hon. Judge Daves. It contained the copy of a letter issued in June last by all the Medical Professors excepting Dr. Waterhouse. This was prepared without any consultation with him and his name is not affixed to it. The Gentlemen who prepared it do not conceive that this is a proper place to state the reasons for their conduct in regard to this circular; nor to reply to the observations relative to them in the letter to Judge Daves. They present that letter now only for one purpose, viz., because in that it is asserted, if not expressly, yet by implication, that the first circular, that of Aug. 1810, had been issued without Dr. Waterhouse's knowledge. How far this is true may be learnt from the foregoing statement and from the note to Dr. Dexter (D)."

A true copy of the original,

Attest, C. Edwards, public Copyist.

16 Dec. 1811.

After the charges were read Dr. Waterhouse requested copies of the several documents and time to prepare a written defence. This was granted and it was arranged that he should answer the allegations "by the last Saturday in January next." At that time, the 25th., "the President being on a journey," there was no meeting but on Feb. 7, a meeting was held when the Doctor requested more ~~time~~ time, stating that "he principally wishes time, on account of the charge of writing anonymous pieces, and especially to explain the motives of his writing 'Novum Organum'". He then 'mentioned his headache' and the meeting was adjourned until the 17th, inst. On that date he again asked for more time and was allowed until the 24th. inst. when he was fully heard.

The Doctor's defence, copied by the writer from the original manuscript at the College library, covers ~~fourty~~ forty-four type-written pages. Parts of it have already been used in the preceeding pages and,

* These papers will appear later in Dr. Waterhouse's defence.

omitting more or less of repetition and detail, the remainder follows:-

"The first thing in order to be noticed in the letter of my colleagues is their assertion, 'that for some time past they have suffered embarrassments in the management of the interests of the Medical Institution of Harvard University, which embarrassments have arisen from a want of confidence on our part in the Professor of the Theory & Practice of Physic; and we have not believed it altogether safe, say they, to engage in any free discussion respecting the affairs of the Institution with that Professor.'

I am not conscious of having impeded, or any way embarrassed, any of the proceedings of the Medical school; on the contrary, I am certain that I have even promoted its interests to the injury of my own; and I have never lost sight of the great and predominant and advantage of the collective body, or assemblage of youth in that great school at Cambridge, for example, I early gave my opinion against suffering the Juniors to attend our medical courses. I saw and lamented the derangement that it occasioned throughout the two succeeding years of their college life and I was moreover of opinion that some of our lectures were injurious to the minds of these boys; & that they had a bad effect on their morals, imaginations, inasmuch that I would not let a son of mine, at 17 years of age, to attend some of our medical lectures; This feeling as it regarded the minds of my own children I extended to the children of others. It was therefore owing to me principally, that youth of the Junior class were prohibited from attending any of the Medical Lectures. This was sacrificing interest to a sentiment where the morality of the youth predominated over mere personal advantages or professional views. I know this was not pleasing to everyone of my brethren; but such was the fact, and such my motives, which may be concentrated in these words- I regarded the minds & imaginations of the children

of other people as I did the minds of my own.

To all this I may add that my general opinion was a young man had better postpone attendance on medical Lectures till after he had finished his 4 years collegiate course. (See the Lecture Dec. 1810.)

They have said that 'they believed it not altogether safe to engage in conversation with me'-- It certainly was not altogether safe if the discussion contained anything of a dishonorable cast; such e.g. as that which took place last spring just before our Lectures commenced in Cambridge. The students were told that in consequence of the removal of the Medical Lectures to Boston, a course of each would be delivered in Cambridge to those of a certain - free of all expense. And this was announced to them by the Rev'd Dr. Ware in the Chapel, and repeated by me whenever the students applied to me for information relative to our new arrangement of things. I told them that all our medical lectures would be given to them gratuitously and they had already been informed that two of the three Professors had had their salaries raised in consequence of this arrangement. But when it was told in College that the Anatomical Lectures would be of little or no consequence without the dissection of a corps, or in a word not worth their attendance; but that for 15 dollars they would be made worth their attention, an uneasiness was created, & there was a pretty general determination not to attend them on those conditions. The young men declared that they had been promised from the Presiding officer that these lectures should be to them free of expence, & some of them called on me to inquire if they had misunderstood me. I repeated what I had said to them, and it is not improbable that they may have discovered in me a surprise to obtain the fifteen dollars from them. It became the subject of much conversation. The Rev'd Dr. Ware expressed to me his surprise & mortification at this demand on the students after what he had officially announced to them in the Chapel, and asked me for

an explanation of it, which I was unable to give him. In this situation I wrote the President & expressed my sentiments with the same freedom that other gentlemen of the College did in their conversation. I well remember that Mr. Gannetts opinion entirely coincided with mine respecting the injury it would be to our Medical Institution.-- Not long after the students were induced to believe that the Rev^d Dr. Holmes & myself were fomentors of the discontent, that for a short time, prevailed among the students. The Corporation can obtain information on this subject by enquiring of some of the elder officers of the College. They will find that we were all concerned, at that time, for the honour of the Medical Department. Yet the blame was endeavored to be thrown on the Rev^d Dr. Holmes, for some things advanced in the Board of Overseers, & upon myself. This therefore was an instance of an attempt to embarrass our Medical Institution, when, in truth, it was an attempt to preserve it from the effects of some very hard accusations uttered against me.

Another instance of embarrassment & danger of free discussion, was in the affair of the Hospital for the Insane." This controversy has already been related on the preceeding pages.

"Respecting the 1st charge, viz.-- that I have been engaged in the support of plans inimical to the interests of the Medical Institution, I pronounce it to be an untruth, or a mistake; and wish my accusers to mention the instance.

That I have been engaged in plans injurious to the Medical School, of which I am one of its Professors, and to which I have been closely allied for 30 years, is an incredible thing. It is contrary to all our experience, and is opposed to the common feelings of the human heart. I have all along supposed that this accusation brought against me by my colleagues was a mere artifice, & that they themselves did not believe a word of it. I never contemplated a College of Physicians to

give degrees, and to come forth arrayed against our own Medical School; and I repeat it as my fixed opinion that the Professors here present did not believe it themselves. I consider it was a manoeuvre to engage this Corporation on the side of the Medical Society. The conduct of these gentlemen gives strength to this opinion. They have sent circular letters to every physician of any note in the State & more too; and to them has been held up the Medical Society only, as being like to be injured—not a word is uttered to them of the Medical School of Harvard College. They hear nothing but of the poor distressed Medical Society. Some clergymen in the country have been told, that the College of Physicians was to destroy the Hospital for the insane & to root up other establishments equally benevolent. But to the Corporation, & the Overseers, these gentlemen say not a word of the Medical Society; that is thrust out of sight, & left far in the background; and the Medical School of Harvard College is the only object of their extreme solicitude, and I am represented as an incendiary, a sort of barbarian, disposed to destroy the house I have taken such pains to build up, and this for the diabolical gratification of thereby destroying, or distressing those whom I hate! I more than suspect that such a representation has been made to several, and to Ward Nicholas Boylstone among the rest; a man to whom our medical school owes more than to any other that can be named. But he shall not remain long in his delusion.--

I here, before this Rev^d & Honb^l Body challenge each & every one of the Professors to produce a single word that I ever said, or any writing I ever penned expressive, or indicative that I was endeavouring to raise up a Medical School the counterpart of our Medical School, or to do anything to embarrass, or impede its progress, or to eclipse its lustre. Let them produce a single instance. See the publication in the Chronicle signed 'Moderation'."

I take it that Harvard College has no more to do with the Mass. Med. Society than with the American Acad. of Arts & Sciences; or the Historical Society, and if I had a mind to contribute to the formation of similar societies, this Corporation would have no good reason for calling me to account for it, as infringing the promise I ~~made~~ had made when I was inducted into office. By parity of reasoning they have no right to consider my advocating a new Medical Society as encroaching on my allegiance to the University. I certainly never viewed it in that light. Instead of considering the Mass. Med. Society as an auxiliary to our Medical School, I have long viewed it in a directly opposite light. I consider it as injurious to us Professors in point of interest (provided we had what we ought to have, graduation fees) and a diminution to our reputation in point of numbers.- Every officer of the Medical Society is no more than a private practitioner; and yet under the name of Censors & examiners they have been in the practice of giving a sort of minor Diploma, or license for practice, which has diverted great numbers from passing regularly through our Harvard College Medical Institution. The gentleman * now at the head of the Med. Society is now perfectly reconciled to a practice to which he was once most vehemently opposed. So differently are the feelings of men when in office, and out of it!

Having cleared myself of the 1st charge I go on to the ---

2nd charge viz.-- 'In his intercourse with us that Professor has, we believe, been guilty of duplicity, and want of veracity.'

Upon examining the written evidence to support this charge, I would remark that I have not a very clear recollection of the accidental conversation in the visit to Mr. Johnnot. I only remember expressing my wishes to do something to start forward our Medical Institution, for that Dartmouth college seemed to be outstripping us, and that I fell in

* Dr. John Warren.

with the idea of moving the Lectures to Boston. One thing I remember very distinctly, and that was the earnest manner & the apprehensive ^{he} tone with which Dr. Warren expressed to me the movements of the Medical Society, for said he if we (the Medical Professors of the Cambridge Medical school) do not remove the Lectures from Cambridge to Boston the Medical Society are determined to set up a system of Lectures, which will supplant us. He represented to me that there was such a design actually brewing in the Mass. Med. Society distinct from himself, Dr. Dexter, & myself; and that we must therefore hasten the removal of our lectures, or others would be set up in opposition to us. I do not believe that Dr. Warren then proposed to me to join Dr. Dexter & himself in a petition to the Corporation; if he had I am confident I should have acceded to it, as I had expressed my wish to remove our Lectures to Boston to Dr. Spronger a considerable time before this conversation. I deny having said that I would not sign a petition to the Corporation for the removal of the Lectures, or that I ever said 'that there were some points unsettled between that body & myself, & that I would not ask anything of them until they were settled.'

I repeatedly turned over in my mind who of the Medical Society could be brought out as Lecturers against Dr. Warren, Dexter & myself.** I concluded Dr. Jackson would take the Practice of Physic from his having borrowed from me several times, and kept for several months together my Manuscript Lectures which I had taken in England from Fordyce & had fairly transcribed & bound up, which has led me to believe for four or five years past that Dr. Jackson was preparing himself to give Lectures in my department.

I however asked three members of the Medical Society one of whom was a councillor, whether the Society did contemplate a system of medical Lectures in Boston, when I found neither of them ever heard of

such a plan. I thereupon began to suspect the sincerity of this representation. I was soon after pretty well convinced that the story told me once & again by Dr. Warren was without foundation, and this uttered by a man who now comes forward to charge me before you with duplicity & want of veracity!

In the early part of Feb^{ry} (1810) as I conjecture, I conversed with Dr. Warren again in School St. near his own door, upon the subject of removing the Lectures to Boston. In this short conversation, I told him in an unequivocal manner that I was desirous to have our Lectures removed to Boston; for that a large town & not a village was the proper place for a Medical School."

The Doctor then relates the conversation which he had with Dr. Warren, ~~in which he told the already given in the~~ preceeding pages, wherein which he told the latter that he was disposed to fall in ~~with~~ with any plan which would be for the best interests of the School, providing "no step be taken in this business of altering our medical school, nor even a plan devised for the consideration of the Corporation without it being frankly & entirely communicated to me previously to its being communicated to them," "and," continues Dr. Waterhouse, "Dr. Warren promised me that he would, & this in as emphatical a manner as that in which I had requested it."

Referring to the letter ~~as the~~ which he wrote in confirmation of this conversation, Dr. Waterhouse says:- "The reason for writing it was because my suspicion was awakened, not only by the story that the Medical Society contemplated to rival us three Professors, but on account of a report, which if true, would affect my professorship, and which realized itself before the close of the year, and which I shall speak of hereafter."

Explaining why he did not wait to see Dr. Warren on the morning he called at his house and left the letter the Doctor writes:- "I had no particular inclination to talk with Dr. Warren upon

the contents of a letter evidently written under the suspicion, of his sincerity. I intended that my letter should speak my sentiments & not my tongue. The expressions of the latter might be perverted by himself or connexions but 'black & white never lies.'"

Continuing his defence the Doctor says:- "The written evidence adduced to prove my duplicity, goes on to say,- 'As Dr. Waterhouse had peremptorily refused to unite in any application to the Corporation Drs Warren & Dexter had proposed a memorial in behalf of themselves only.' I do peremptorily deny the fact, and beg that the Corporation would patiently & candidly examine this ungenerous accusation. I beg they would not confine their judgements to a word or a single phrase, but to judge of the whole of my conduct in connection."

I here think it proper to declare that I never read attentively the Memorial presented to the Corporation ** before this present day viz. Saturday Feb 15th 1812. When Mr. Clapp brought it to me I merely run my eye over it, & put it again into his hand, ** but I never pretended to read it, as a prudent man reads an important paper previously to making it his 'act & deed.' Now let us examine this charge of duplicity, and see on which side of the account-book it lies.

It was, I conjecture about the 10th of Febr'y that I conversed with Dr. Warren, as before related, and it was on the 19th that I recapitulated that conversation in the form of a letter, and then it seems the Memorial to the Corporation lay on Dr. Warren's table ready for my signature, and the next day it was sent out to Cambridge to me. Here the Corporation will perceive, without any assistance, that the stipulation between Dr. Warren & me was violated; for he had been making his arrangements, consulting with individuals in the college Legislature, & procuring legal advice, as he afterwards told me, and all this without giving me the least intimation."

Dr. Waterhouse then mentions the visit of the pupil, Clapp, with the Memorial for his signature, comments on the fact that he was so much in a hurry that he could not stop to sit down and then referring to his own Memorial to the Corporation says:- "On this letter I remark 1st - that there is not the least indication of an opposition to the main object of the Memorial viz. the removal of the Lectures to Boston, for on that subject, I had already made up my mind.

2nd - I do not say that I never heard of the design of removing the lectures, for I had spoke of it to Dr. Warren, & to divers of the members of the Medical Society. I only say that 'I never heard of such a Memorial,' and when it was sent to me for perusal, I had it not in my hands, I believe two minutes. *** This memorial Drs Warren & Dexter had in hand probably for weeks, & had doubtless examined in all its relations, while I had not. Had Dr. Warren thought proper to have left the paper with me till morning, I should probably not have written that letter to the Corporation. Had I been allowed an half hours conference with my colleagues, it might have been sufficient; and yet my going to Boston for this purpose, has been spoken of by Dr. W. as an evidence of my eagerness to defeat their memorial, and my letter to the Corporation called a Protest and adduced here as an instance of my duplicity! *****

Referring to the letter which Dr. Warren sent him with the memorial, by the pupil, Mr. Clapp, Dr. Waterhouse says:- "This letter contains but two requests, both of which I promptly & literally complied with, viz. 'Please to peruse it, and return it by the bearer.' Dr. Warren never asked me to sign the memorial; and I am more & more convinced that if I had signed it, he would have been disappointed. From that period, I have never ceased to wish that I had signed it. It would have deprived the Prof^{rs} of Anatomy & of Chemistry of their first and leading

pretext of acting without me. ****

From this time Feb^{ry} 1810 Dr. Warren & I frequently conversed on the Memorial, & on the removal of our Lectures to Boston; & I as frequently assured him that my letter to the Corporation was not meant to prevent that plan. *** The only thing with which I reproach myself is the neglecting to recall or explain farther my letter to the Corporation. I was satisfied however that Dr. Warren knew full well that I was ready and willing at any time, to sign the Memorial, & of course that the letter in question was not wished by me to be considered as having the force of an objection to a plan in which we were all of one mind.

In July 1810 President Webber died; from the day of his funeral, I was confined by indisposition about a fortnight. During this time Dr. Warren called upon me twice, if not three times, when we conversed very fully on our medical affairs. I told him that I had fully determined to remove my family to Boston. He said in the hearing of my family that he was glad to hear it, and he thought it would be for my advantage. He then give me a minute account of the arrangements making & to be made in Marlborough Street for the conveniency of giving all our Lectures, - of the conveniences of the Anatomical & chemical Departments, and told me that I should be accomodated with a room for delivering my lectures at a reasonable rent, and give me such a picture of his plans & prospects that I was very well pleased with the whole narrative. I thought I saw our Medical School starting a fresh on fairer ground, & with brighter prospects than ever.

Dr. Warrens free & friendly conversation gained my confidence. I never before was so well satisfied by an interview with him as on that day.-- I was not backward in letting him know that he had gained my confidence, and thereupon I made him acquainted with some things I had endured within the five preceeding years which I should not have

related to any man whom I did not think my friend. I then told him that I was pleased with the idea of bringing forward his son & son-in-law; for it coincided with a favorite idea of my own. I informed ^{him} that I had a son of respectable talents & uncommon industry who meant to pursue Physic, & that I was disposed to indulge the fond idea of his being able to take my place, when I arrived at that age when it would be proper for me to relinquish it. ***** Dr. Warren appeared to be almost as ^{well} pleased with the idea as myself. I never, since the first establishment of the Medical School in 1783, felt so much satisfaction. I thought there was now a fair prospect of its going on during the rest of my life pleasantly & prosperously, and our path widening before us as we advanced in it. I viewed my removal to Boston as a happy period of my life; and had Dr. Warren fostered those feelings in me, and cherished similar ones in himself, we should not have found ourselves here this day in our present humiliated situation, adding one more instance in the eyes of the public of Physicians treating each other worse than any other profession! *****

Not many days, it might be the next day, or the day after this visit of Dr. Warren, in which there appeared such agreement and mutual satisfaction, he came again, and it appeared to me a visit 'en passant,' as if passing through the town. I however noticed a degree of embarrassment. I do not pretend to relate the conversation. It was desultory. Dr. Warren spoke of the almshouse, and that he & all the other Professors had obtained permission to give clinical Lectures in it, and then he told me of the new clinical professorship. I enquired why I was not included in the privilege of the Almshouse? How came the Prof^r of Chemistry to have the privilege & not the Prof^r of the Practice of Physic. I enquired who was the originator of the plan? for he must remember that I stipulated with him that neither he nor Dexter was to take any step in which my interest or reputation were concerned without my being previous-

ly informed of it. He said that the almshouse & the clinical professorship were the doing of the Corporation, and as it was the doings of the Corporation, he wondered that I had not been made acquainted with it. ** The very next day after this visit some account of this plan appeared in the newspaper, all of which had been concealed from me, notwithstanding our very recent conversation, by the man who comes here before you to charge me with Duplicity. *****

The written statement of these gentlemen says 'Dr. Waterhouse remarked in conversation, that the plan for extending the Medical school to Boston was never known to him untill Mr. Clapp presented him the Memorial at Cambridge' -- And this is what they have adduced to prove that in my intercourse with them I have been 'guilty of duplicity & want of veracity.' Indeed Gentlemen, a man must be driven hard, even to extremities, to bring before you, such a silly remark as this, uttered in a scolding conversation, & in circumstances not very favourable to reminiscence. The question here is not whether I am a Liar, but it is whether I am a Fool? Not one of you can believe the assertion here made by either of these Gentlemen. You must conclude that they were mistaken. I call it by no other name than a mistake. Of what weight is the evidence of an accuser? For such was Dr. Goreham. I never thought of causing any one of my children to write down Dr. Warren's conversation when he came to my house. Can you, for a moment suppose Gentlemen that I should, wide awake, have asserted that I never knew of the plan of extending the Medical Lectures to Boston untill the Memorial was shown to me by Mr. Clapp? It is possible that I may have said that I did not know the particulars of that plan, before I read the Petition; but to say that I never had any knowledge of the plan after having conversed twice with Dr. Warren on the subject, is to make me a fool. The thing is incredible. Besides, what motive could I have for such an assertion? What object had I in

view? And what was the end to be gained by it? When a man is fool enough to assert a thing that is not true, it is commonly with some design to advantage; or the hope of gaining something by it; or of avoiding some evil; but can any man ^{tell} me what probable advantage could have resulted from the speech here attributed to me?

Respecting the circular letter I was so far from impeding it, or so little desirous of embarrassing the business, that three days after ^{been} I had thus ^{been} treated by Dr. Warren, I wrote the following Billet to Dr. Dexter, with the express design of forwarding the business.

'Dr. Waterhouse compliments to Dr. Dexter, and writes this to say that he does not see, why the advertisement spoken of the other day, may not go forth on Commencement day, or the day after. Dr. Waterhouse has no ground for judging what the board of Overseers may do in consequence of his memorial to them; but he does not conceive that any alteration will be made to effect the great & leading particulars of the Circular letter, either as to form or name'

'Dr. Waterhouse cannot resist remarking, on the occasion, that had half the frankness been exercised towards him, in all this business, as he thought he had exercised towards another, all this difficulty would have been obviated. Dr. Waterhouse has but one rule of conduct towards all men, (viz. to do to others, as we would have others do to us) and that rule, he will never intentionally depart from.'

Cambridge, Sunday, Even'g 26 Aug. 1810.

To Dr. Dexter, Boston.

Does this look like an unaccommodating spirit? Are there any symptoms here of such an indisposition?

I did expect, and I had a right to expect that after these gentlemen had completed the composition of their letter, which was very imperfect when I saw it, they would have sent it to me. If they had, I should have struck out a sentence in the 3d paragraph; and proposed their reconsidering the last one, and added one respecting my own department. The first time I ever saw this printed letter, with my name annexed to it, was at Newport, in the Autumn of 1810, but I had not an opportunity of reading it through. (It was in the hands of Dr. Waring.)

My assertion is, that the circular letter, as it now stands, in this printed copy, dated Sept. 5, 1810, never was read through by me; and the copy as it now stands was published without my knowledge & not a word is said in it of my department. And yet this is adduced as an instance of my want of veracity!

My accusers thought fit to produce part of a letter to Judge Dawes; now I beg leave to read the whole of it.

To the Honorable Thomas Dawes, Esq^r.

Chairman of a Committee of the Board of Overseers of
Harvard College.

Sir,-

'If I have been correctly informed it was the advice of the oldest member of the College Legislature, that the Committee of which you are Chairman respecting matters expressed in my memorial to the Hon^{ble} & Rev^d the board of Overseers should not hurry the business, but wait a little for the arbitrator time to assist you in it. I have always thought that this opinion of the Rev^d Dr. Lathrop's was the dictate of wisdom, and that he had long seen that slow but uniform system of oppression of which I have complained.

Without thus writing, I should not have been able to transmit to the Committee the enclosed document. Not only my particular friends but indifferent observers have long noticed a determination in my Colleagues to place all the Medical professorships in the hands of young men, their sons & particular friends and if they could ^{not} remove me from my professorship (as has been tried) they meant to so conduct towards me as to induce me to resign. The enclosed circular is the second one that has been sent, through New England without my knowledge.* You & the Committee can form your own judgments upon it. I am at this time giving lectures in the Theory & Practice of Physic, agreeably to the laws of its Institution in this University, and here my two Colleagues Warren & Dexter, with their young men, all of whom were school boys, after I was a professor in this place, have issued an address to medical men & medical students, inviting them to attend their lectures, at the same time holding out the idea, that Dr. Waterhouse is no longer one of them; for that is the idea attempted to be spread abroad, and

*This needs a little qualification. The liberal construction is that I was not made a party in its composition; If I had, I should have erased some things, and added others. My own department was not mentioned in it, which would have been had I been consulted.

some have, to my detriment believed it.-

All the alteration, which has been made of late in the medical Institution, has been without my knowledge untill they had passed through the Corporation & confirmed by the Overseers; and they have all been in consequence of the memorials & petitions of two of the Professors, & not of all three as heretofore.

The resentment that has been excited by my daring to memorialize your board continues to be such, that I must put myself under its protection, or appeal to the public, which I am not inclined to do at this time.

I would also inform you that the signers of this circular letter have agreed among themselves, and announced an alteration in the time of giving the Lectures without consulting me. There are some other alterations, which can be better explained vive voci, than by writing.

If this design can be carried through with a Professor of the University, what is there to hinder the like being done to a Judge of the Supreme Judicial Court. I have seen for several years a deep laid plan to put me out of my Professorship, in order to put the son of Jonathan Jackson into it, & when I have said it, some few have considered it as groundless jealousy. But the great Arbitor, time is every day strengthening that opinion.'

With a high degree of respect

I am sir your hum^{ble} Serv^t

Benjⁿ Waterhouse, Prof. Th & Pr Phyc.

In the printed circular of June 1, 1811 sent abroad under the name of every professor & adjunct Professor, mine only omitted, there is a derangement of the order of the Professorships and the Theory & Practice of physic is put with that of clinical medicine. This apparent union, together with the omission of my name has very naturally led the public to conclude that I am no longer a professor. And the well known rumours among the medical students have not tended to lessen the probability of it. I asked the Professors in writing the meaning of this misplacing the branch of the Theory & Practice, and by whose authority it was done; but I received no answer. These are the doings of men who are crying out, with alarm, against innovations!

* Dr. Warrens wrath was excited at his own house, the moment I told him that I had presented a memorial to the overseers.

Had I been really and truly consulted in the circular letter to which my name is attached, I should have wished for one short paragraph for the Theory & Practice of Physic! Whereas there is not a single word said of it, and nothing elogized but Anatomy & Surgery & Chemistry & the Clinical Lectures at the Almshouse; a presumption, at least, that I was not consulted in it. Puff has followed after puff in all the Newspapers on these three branches, but not a single whiff for the Theory & Practice of Physic. It must be apparent to you all that these things hang together or in one network of connexion & consistency.

So much then by way of repelling the accusation of want of veracity relative to the circular letter, as expressed in my letter to Judge Daves. *****

But hasten to the last charge which is 'Repeatedly publishing in the Newspapers, without his proper signature, suggestions & insinuations injurious to our characters & highly offensive to our feelings, and such as are designed to diminish our usefulness in the University.'

While I declare the other two charges to be both without foundation I acknowledge some part of this to be true; but retort on my accusers the more serious charge of making the first attack upon me. ⁴ charge them with having published without their proper signature suggestions & insinuations injurious to my character, highly offensive to my feelings, & such as are designed to diminish my usefulness in the University.

If I can show that these men made the first attack on me in the newspapers or that I conceived & supposed they did my retaliation is justified.

These gentlemen imagined, or supposed that I wrote a piece signed 'a steady & uniform friend to the Hospital for the Insane' and under that impression published an abusive piece in the Palladium in which the Kine poek was introduced in a manner so as to identify me as the writer,

e.g. 'as you have left off private practice, who knows but your Patrons may reward your kindness by securing to you the exclusive ^{privilege} of inoculating for the Kine Pock.' Again 'There is not a single truth in your piece from beginning to end.' 'The whole is a fabrication of your own.'

In a subsequence piece these sentences appear-- 'It becomes a duty, whatever be our contempt for the author to state the truth, where he has told Lies.' Again-- 'a gentleman who has been goaded by his evil genius into every nook & crevice of the Statehouse, during the two last sessions, to hunt up information.' Again 'But our writer chooses to pervert the natural & obvious import of everything, and even blacken it with a Lie to answer his hungry purposes.'

All this was understood & felt as aimed at me. I and my connections felt it so, & it was generally so considered. I avoid mentioning the reflections, & even abuse uttered against me, by some of my accusers, about this time, in private circles; all serving to irritate. Again in the same paper. 'He must consent to forego the pleasure & advantage of holding himself up to view as an object of persecution from professional jealousy, however convenient he may have found this assumption, the Dr. would never have attracted the notice of a citizen * had his slanders been confined to the gentlemen of his profession. They best know whether such outrages should be punished with contempt, or with the Scourge'--- and to the Scourge^x they had recourse."

One of articles here referred to may have been the following, printed in the issue of Oct. 9, 1811, which is evidently a parody on the Heads of the Doctor's course of Lectures on Natural History.

* "Citizen" was the name signed to the article from which the quotation was taken.

^x A small newspaper published for a time in Boston.

Heads
of a course of Lectures on
NATURAL FOOLCLOSOPHY.

To be delivered in Boston the ensuing winter

By BENJAMIN WATERHEAD, M. D.

"Fellow of the Egyptian Academy of Arts and Sciences,-- of the Philosophical Society of Greenland; and of Yangtse-kiang-ho, and of Kka Floang-ps-chin-ku in China; Fellow of the Medical Society of the Potawot-amies;- of the Academy of Arts and Sciences, Belles-Lettres, Inscriptions, and Commerce, Madagascar; and of the National Medical School of Lapland; professor of the Theory and Practice of Physic in the University of Botany Bay, New-Holland;- and Physician in ordinary to his Honor the Lieutenant Governor of Massachusetts.*

1. Introductory. Vanity, or desire of showing what one does not possess, a certain sign of vigorous intellect; exemplified in the inhabitants of Massachusetts and China, particularly Dr. Waterhead and his Honor, the Lieutenant Governor. The importance of gratifying properly this 'thirst of the soul' in silly old people. The grand object or effort of education, is to engage the mind by nonsense, while you clear it of all common sense. The outlines of the course before us. Who first suggested the Natural Foolcology of our country. (See the Botanist, p.6, advertisement.)^x

II. Opinions respecting the creation of folly. The whole number of fools the same now as at the first creation. Concerning the PRIMARY MATTER of which fools are made; an original fund, constantly changing out of, and into all the various species of the monkey, without tails. The production of a gull, and every other salt water fowl, not a fresh creation, or calling something out of nothing; but a mutation, or change of a Professor for a State doctor. This doctrine illustrated. (See the Botanist, Advertisement^o)

III. Concerning simpletons, and their astonishing divisibility and multiplication, especially in Milk St.^p Cannot move themselves, Of that original power, which caused them to be dull; and that which

*Politics again, referring to Lieut. Gov. Gray.

^xThe Botanist was a book published by Dr. Waterhouse.

^oMeaning "Preface."

^pDr. Waterhouse lived on Milk St. at this time.

causes them to be sharp; or idleness and hunger. Of chemical attractions, and of stupidity, or the solid matter of ostriches' eggs. Of the patronage of a certain great literary character. 'Plattery, stupidity, and avarice flourish when exposed to his influence,' The fable of Midas.

IV. Concerning the EFFICIENT CAUSE, or that spirit, or principle of motion which made a cobbler a lieutenant governor. Concerning the elements of hog's-lard, rosin and flax. How far they may be considered as elements. By that term we mean the ingredients of a cordwainer's^a thread. Of that spirit which moved the doctor from Cambridge to Boston, and now 'On wings outstretch'd, o'er lumpheads hands sublime.'

V. Distribution of the brain into particular parts of the bowels. Foolosophy, or the Doctrine of the Goose Eggs. What is meant by the GREAT EGG OF NOX, NIGHT; the manner in which it was hatched, and the art of rearing its offspring. The Science of Natural Foolosophy comprehends two objects; first that of discovering, naming, and systematizing all the various classes of fools, from the long tailed baboon down to a professor of medicine; this is dry and mechanical; secondly, that of relating to their properties, manners, and relations to each other; this is useful, giving them a relish for eating and drinking. Both necessary to form a consummate idiot. FOLLY the soul of nonsense. A caution not to mistake electricity for a goose-egg; or to pursue it so far as to loose sight of the old Gray goose.

VI. Concerning the transition of a muck worm to a dnacing master; and from a tobacco plant to a segar. As every animal in nature came from an egg, Query. What egg did the doctor and his patron come from? Probably a gander's. The general doctrine of raising the wind. The anatomy of a toad's tool, demonstrated to be an organized body furnished with a queue and spectacles.^x How the infinitessimally small organized insects that inhabit the doctor's head first came there, and how they subsist.

VII. Anatomical description of a full grown Chactaw, alias, Flat head; of the seven essential parts, discoverable in the ignorance, impertinence, impudence, insignificance, self-conceit, equivocation, and deception. A biographical sketch of Waterhead, the prince of American Flat Heads.

VIII. Waterhead's system of raising the wind briefly explained, as a system encumbered with fewer difficulties than that of Didler. Of the private and public virtues of Waterhead; of his patriotism and the power which he possesses over his patron. Of the pernicious effects of sleeping in a clean room. How every democrat, from the 'supereminent Jefferson, to the meek and modest lieutenant governor, have contributed to form one grand apparatus for cleansing the mental atmosphere from the exhalations of common sense.

IX. On the noble art of self puffery. Gives a man the only fame he can call his own. The advantages of puffing. A task kindly imposed on fools, as the only means of keeping them alive. By puffery only

^a Cordwainer means shoemaker or cobbler. ^x Referring evidently to Dr. Waterhouse

can fame be achieved. Of the essence of puffery. Is it lying alone? or is it slander? or is it flattery? or a combination of all three? Of the different subjects of puffing. The Nine Pock Institution and the Hospital for Lunatics.

X. Directions how to form a Nine Pock Institution. Importance of inoculating two religious Societies. The art of pricking the skin. A digression whether-- Gray, or Waterhead have, or will be gainers by the discovery. The Marine Hospital, and the Professorship celebrated and lamented."

Waterhouse

Doctor^A continues his defence as follows:-

I had a conversation with Dr. Warren, I will not say when, or where, for I do not distinctly remember, & if I should not be right as to the when or where, he will probably rise up & flatly contradict it, and allege it to be an untruth. In this conversation, which I think was at his own house, in the latter part of the year 1810-- I told him of my intention of coming to Boston in April, & commencing a plan of a general vaccination, & a vaccine Institution, and asked him if he thought the Physicians in Boston would, or would not, be pleased with it. After some hesitation, he replied that they would probably not be displeased with it provided I did not lower my fee.

On the 4th of Feb^{ry} 1811 Lieut-Gov^r Gray put into my hands his sketch of a plan for vaccinating seamen; & for establishing a fund for the benefit of the widows and orphans of sailors. During all this time, for three or four months I spoke freely of my design of a general vaccination & a vaccine institution in Boston. I had also communicated with the Board of Health, & with other authority on the subject, so that the scheme was generally known; and it was mentioned in two of the newspapers in the form of a communication.

The Corporation will bear in mind that I am now relating causes of irritation. Some of them were the remote, & some the proximate cause of the parable of the two Engines, which has given such offence, & excited such sympathy."

The Doctor then inserts the following communication which was printed in one of the papers.

Cow Pock.

"It must give great pleasure to the citizens of Boston, to observe the zeal for the diffusion of vaccination in this town, exhibited by a great vaccinator, in all the papers of this week. What a pity it is that the plans of this disinterested philanthropist had not been disclosed to the public, till some time after it was known, that a proposal on the subject had been made before the association of Boston physicians; of which proposal, the brilliant plan, so long in embryo, seems to be little more than a copy."

"Here the 'vaccinator' is publicly, & unprovokedly held up to scorn for his affected philanthropy. Here my proposal is sneeringly called 'the brilliant plan', not disclosed till some time after it was known that a proposal on the subject had been made before the Association of Boston physicians, of which mine was little more than a copy.

Now by whom was this proposal made, which was to counteract mine? It was made by Dr. Jackson, & seconded by Dr. Warren Sen^r full three months after I communicated my plan to the latter. There could not have been devised a more mischievous plan to set the greater part of the Boston practitioners against me, on my coming to reside in this town than this, brought forward by Dr. Warren & Dr. Jackson, and to this you must add the several irritating pieces in the newspapers, all directed to injure my character as a practitioner, & a man of honour, and this several weeks before I put a stop to them all by the Parable, signed "Novum Organum".

Ever since I had the hardihood to vaccinate in the town of Boston without permission or licence from those ~~men~~ who assumed the direction & controul of our little medical world, these Boston Doctors have considered me as a football to kick about for their amusement; & I have suffered it for about a dozen years; but when I came to live among

them I thought it was high time to hint to such as I knew was the fountain-head & source of it all, to give over their game. I considered that a new generation was rixing risen & rising up around us, and that it was hardly worth while to perpetuate these little, unworthy, pityful, contemptible professional feelings to those who come after us. I was aware that we lived in unsocial times, 'When hard words, jealousies, & fears set folks together by the ears.'

All the members of the Corporation do not know, that those medical gentlemen clubed their wits & wrote an allegory, or Parable called the 'Old Drone', in which the Medical School was likened unto a Bee Hive; and five of the Professors were likened unto the busy & ever laborious, & all sagacious bee who gathered wax & honey from every flower in the medical & philosophical garden, & stored the hives with honey & exhibited a skill in the construction of the comb, that was truly wonderful; but there was in this busy hive one Old Drone, who enjoyed the sweets of it, without assisting in the labour, or even paying for the privilege of humming & buzzing in it. The allegory or parable winds up with this moral; that the whole hive ought to conspire & force the Old Drone out of it. In attempting it,* they have been stung, & they come now crying & roaring here for more help. There is a strict analogy between the disposition of bees & these people; for it is well known that bees have a mortal antipathy to old folks."

*"This allegory had a very serious tendency, as it regarded to poor old Drone. This piece was offered to three different News Papers, & refused admittance. It was carried to the Patriot by one of Dr. Warren's own family, since the Lectures began this season. Allowing that I disregarded such attacks, it does not follow that my family, male or female, are entirely callus to their malicious efforts; or that they rest perfectly easy under the nightly attacks around our dwelling, which ceased not till the Medical Lectures were finished."

Referring to the ~~last~~ ~~note~~ on the preceeding statement in the foot note on the preceeding page in regard to the nightly attacks around his dwelling the Doctor has this to say in his Journal written many years later:-

"During this movement, my house, in the centre of Boston was visited every night when the Anatomical class broke up in a species of riot such as hallowing, &c. under the windows. When people cried shame at this conduct they tried another scheme, and absolutely carried it through the Corporation viz. a new code of Lectures denominated Clinical Lectures, of wh^h Dr. James Jackson was appointed the Prof. and they went further still and obtained an alteration in our Medical institution, wh^h allowed of an attendance of these clinical Lectures to be equal to attendance on mine of the Th. & Practice for a degree. Here the plot was consummated and they triumphed, and I was put fairly or rather foully under the surface."

Dr. Waterhouse's defence continues as follows:-

"In April last I wrote a communication for the Palladium respecting the contemplated College of Physicians;* a mere literary communication in which no man was reflected on, nor any body of men. In the next paper there appeared an 'answer' to it, in which I was so alluded to that no one could mistake it. After recapitulating the great & good things effectuated by the Medical Society, in the course of 29 years, the writer, who was Dr. Warren, thought it not improper to contrast their doings with mine, which he did in these words-- 'All those things will be still more justly estimated when contrasted with the deeds of Agents, (the very term they use in their written evidence exhibited to you) for the new college'; then he specifies them, such as liberal dispensation of Cow-pock matter-- for a small fee-- generous inoculation of seamen -- when paid for by a merchant, and lastly the disinterested offer to vaccinate an hundred individuals in two rich parishes-- at a the expense of a benevolent unknown'.

I never remember any piece written against me, one excepted, at which I was so much irritated. The first relates to a charge made a-

* This article appears on a preceeding page.

gainst me & everywhere spread abroad by the President & officers of the Massachusetts Medical Society of a mean & sordid practice of diffusing the Vaccine matter. If the Physician who wrote this did not know the true state of this business, it is a disgrace to him as a medical man. If he did know the facts relating to it, and yet held me up thus, in a public Newspaper, it is a disgrace to him as a moral man. I have thought this of so much importance to my character while living, & after I am gone that I have now brought the business before the public in the Newspaper.

The publications of the Medical Society & the conduct of some of its officers has rendered me too sore to bear patiently a fresh irritation from any of them.

A few words respecting the third sarcasm viz. 'a disinterested offer to vaccinate an hundred individuals in two rich parishes-- at the expense of a benevolent unknown.' This insinuation was scandalous & deserved to be chastised as such. The anecdote was this.-- I had mentioned to some of my particular friends the plan for vaccinating seamen gratis, (as devised by Mr. Gray.) I spoke of it first to Mr. James Lloyd, but never asked him, or any one else to aid it. He immediately answered, it is an excellent scheme, & put me down as a Patron of it. When I told Mr. Bowdoin he applauded almost as much, & said that he himself would give such a sum towards it. But on the suggestion that Mr. Gray's plan did not contemplate the assistance of any purse but his own and that it might not be delicate for Mr. B. to do anything he, I thought would take no further interest in it. I called on Mr. B. the next day, and found that he had concluded to change the object of his benevolence from sailors to the indigent of the religious society with whom he worshiped. Accordingly I acquainted Mr. Buckminster with it by letter; but I found it embarrassed him; and to relieve him from it I wrote a second letter, which he

*The Pastor

laid before the standing committee of his church, and a very formal piece of business was made of it; and several physicians were deeply engaged in the discussion. The Rev^d Mr. Buckminster never answered my letter, nor gave me a regular account of the business; but somebody gave it as dark a colouring as any one could wish. It was told in one of the Insurance offices on State Street, General Will's & thence propagated through the town, that this business was all a Sham; that there was no such benevolent individual; and that it was all done to give an eclat to my scheme of vaccinating the town; and I was called on by some of the gentlemen to name the man who had made the offer, although I had previously asserted that I was strictly forbidden, by him not to mention his name, & that for good reasons. The transaction has gone abroad with this colouring, that it was of such a nature that a man strictly honorable would not have so conducted; and I suspect, by Mr. Buckminster's behaviour towards me since, that he has some such impression on his mind.

Now this ⁱⁿnocent, this praiseworthy deed, thus coloured by ignorance, or malignity, has been brought forth in the Palladium to the wounding of my feelings and the injury of my character by Dr. Warren, & that too without any provocation, and my retaliation for the libel has been worked up into a crime.

N.B.-- The transaction had so much reality in it that the Hon-ble Mr. Bowdoin insisted on my receiving the donation, as appears, by a letter from his worthy lady.-- Yet this has been published in the newspapers as one of my 'backhanded fetches.' Moreover it was thought to be so dishonorable a trick and so much against me, that the writer in the Palladium thought it worth ~~it~~ while to transfer the anecdote to the 'Scourge' where all three of these insinuations were transplanted by the original sower of the scandal.

For all this outrage on my feelings & for this injury to my

character, I applied first a few serious remarks, & then a Parable, which Divines tell us is the mildest & most gentle mode of conveying reproof & instruction. When the Magi, the Prophets, and the Philosophers of antiquity dare not present the naked Truth to their Tyrants, & other very great men, they adorned her with the drapery of Allegory; & the effect has always sanctioned the deed.

I was very sorry to see the Hovum Organum republished in the Patriot. I immediately wrote to the Printers & had inserted in the next paper a paragraph saying that it was done without the authors knowledge or approbation; and accompanied with a note to the Printers, saying, that although I had ample reason for its first appearance, as a just retaliation for a scandalous & unprovoked publication in the Palladium, there was no good reason for its re-publication now seeing there was no fresh attack.

Previously to this I was transiently made acquainted with the intention of its republication in the Chronicle; and it was not without considerable pains that I prevented its republication in that paper. It remained in type a fortnight. Since which time, some of these gentlemen have published a pamphlet containing the grossest scandal & abuse against me, in a pamphlet entitled "a reply to a Pamphlet &c."

I would now finally beg leave to ask, which of the promises that I made when I was inducted into office have I broken? Have I been deficient in my duties as a professor? I will compare my labours with any professor you have, or ever had at Cambridge.

Has my professional or private labours reflected any disgrace on the University? I as early as 1786 did what no Prof^{or} before my time or since has done at Cambridge. I published an ample Synopsis of (the physiological) part of my medical course, that you & all might see my plan & my principles. I was then without any salary, unassisted and not

well satisfied with the conduct of one of my colleagues. I therefore sent to the Corporation a resignation of my professorship. They declined accepting it, & said everything that was kind & encouraging to induce me to retain it, especially Dr. Wigglesworth & Judge Lowel. I resumed my function, and they promised to support me; or rather to assist me to support myself. I remember with gratitude their kind exertions; yet I remained there about ten years after, without one farthing of salary, suffering more privations than I ever before endured. There are, within my hearing, some living witnesses.

During this space of time, did my pursuits disgrace myself or the University?

Beside doing my duties as your professor, I brought forward Three Things which had for their end public utility rather than private emolument. The 1st was a system of Lectures on Nat^l History; the first attempt of the kind in the United States.

The 2d was the formation of an extensive Cabinet of Minerals from a very small beginning.

The 3d was the Introduction of vaccination & defending it in its disputed march, through an host of enemies, for more than ten years. And how have I been rewarded for these extra labours? I shall be brief, very brief, on this ungrateful subject.

As soon as my Natural History Lectureship became valuable, & much talked of, you took it away from me, contrary to the promises of certain individuals.---

As to the Collection of Minerals;- But I shall say nothing on this sore subject. The matter is before the Board of Overseers, who will doubtless do justice. I should have no objection to leaving the decision to the Fifteen Laymen alone; because they are all honorable men.

What has been my treatment for my labour in Vaccination? The

worst of treatment from that Medical Society, for whom you have testified such keen sensibility; and whose conduct towards me personally has reflected no credit to Physic nor increased the honor to the Profession; and whose officers have now come forward before you and charged me with

1st. embarrassing the affairs of our Medical Institution, so as to render it "unsafe to engage in any free discussion concerning them with me."

2dly. With being engaged in the support & of plans inimical to the interests of the Medical Institution.

3rdly. With having in my intercourse with them been "guilty of duplicity & want of veracity".

Lastly, with having repeatedly published suggestions and insinuations injurious to their characters, & such as are designed to diminish their usefulness in the University".

From all which they declare that it is inconsistent with their honor, & dangerous to the welfare of the Institution to have intercourse with me; and that therefore they have resolved to hold with me no farther communication.

Of the reasons for this ex-communication the Legislature of Harvard College is to judge; and on them I rely without the least shadow of anxiety.

I conclude with this remark, viz. that all that I have advanced may not be true. I am however not conscious of having perverted any fact; yet it is not improbable that I may have mistaken been mistaken as to time & place. There is I hope no glaring such glaring contradiction as to be considered as a violent & willful perverted^{ion} of the real state of the thing. What I have here written, I have written rapidly; and if it be not all true, the Corporation will be able to pick the truth out of it".

"Boston, Feb^{ry} 24 1812."

At the close of the reading of the Doctor's defense the meeting was adjourned to February 27, when the professors were heard in reply. They renewed their allegations, claiming, as regards the petition for the College of Physicians, that while it was their solemn belief that Professor Waterhouse had been deluded as to its purpose, yet if he had opposed the idea of the establishment of a new school, "he could have induced the petitioners to eliminate that privilege of power from the petition".

Regarding the charge of duplicity the professors have the following to say :- "Duplicity because while professing to Dr's Warren and Dexter that he was willing the School should be removed to Boston, but that he would not sign a petition for the purpose 'because there were some points unsettled between that body & himself.'* Yet a few days later he addressed his 'protest' to the Corporation, not to say what he had said to Dr. Warren, that the proposed plan struck him favourably, but to throw doubts and difficulties in their way - and the effect of this address by him was to induce the delay of several months on the subject, and whatever might have been Dr. W's real opinion, it is believed that you, gentlemen, considered him as opposed to the extension of the lectures to Boston, even for some time after that measure had been adopted. It is certain it was thought so by his colleagues."

The professors denied being the authors of several of the newspaper articles attributed to them by Dr. Waterhouse and Dr. Warren and his son declared that "so far from promoting the publication of the 'Old Drone' allegory they prevented the publication of it."

The Corporation then adjourned to the 11th. of March "to consider the Allegations, Evidences and observations of the respective parties."

In the meantime steps had been taken to bring about a reconcili-

* Dr. Waterhouse denied making this remark.

ation and even before the last meeting of the Corporation Dr. Waterhouse had written the following letter to that body.

"To the Honb^l & Rev^d the Corporation of Harvard College,

Gentlemen,-

Although I think myself entirely justified in repelling by a piece of ridicule, scandalous & libellous attacks on my character in the newspapers, yet I have not felt disposed to yield a hair's breadth to those who provoked this humorous chastisement; nevertheless something is due to myself.

It is selfrespect, therefore, that compels me to say, that I regret having written the parable of the Engine; and this I have spontaneously expressed to my most intimate friends ever since its first appearance, and that for the following reasons,

1st, I regret having annexed any ludicrous idea to the very name of 'Novum Organum,' as I look upon that immortal work as a sort of sacred scripture, to which no ridiculous idea ought to be associated.

2nd,- When I found that a certain man, & a certain family, were not a little wounded by this spirit of humour, I was so far from being gratified that I was sorry I ever wrote it and never supposed that it would have been felt so severely as I am told it has been. I detest above all power of expression the gross abuse and extreme severity of language that has been used towards our men in high station, & which still continues to work & disgrace the town & times we live in; & which if not stopped will change the pen into the Stiletto. Under these impressions, I should be the last man to attack a private character so as to give severe pain or occasion unhappy feelings. I feel acutely, and resent quickly: But I am not one of those

'who for the sake of saying something smart
Would leave a sting within a brother's heart.'

The allegory, of which so much has been said contains nothing that tends to impeach the sense, the integrity or the professional skill of any man. And when I wrote it I really considered it as descending from the high & fiery region of caustic remark down to the mild and moderate one of allegory or parable; for commentators and Divines tell us that the parable is the mildest and gentlest mode of reproof & instruction; and I certainly did not adopt it because I thought it a severe one.

The Corporation already know how much I condemned the republication of the Novum organum in the Patriot. I never knew who did that improper thing. **** That I have here written I have mentioned to several of my intimate friends, and feel free to say it to the Corporation; but am not yet disposed to say as much to those who gave the first public provocation.

Seven months passed between the alleged injury & the complaint; and I have reason for believing that these complaints were brought forward partly by way of diversion from the business of the college of Physicians; and partly to shake my character for veracity, previously to my already commenced publications respecting the Medical Society, but chiefly to induce the Corporation to sanction their darling object a non-intercourse, that fulcrum on which they mean to rest the lever that is to effectuate my dislocation!

I shall have no occasion to meet my brother Professors that I

know of before next August. I have met them lately in the examination of some candidates; and the President can inform the Corporation that I voted in the majority. As I never have, so I never will allow any of those personal bickerings to affect my professional duties, whether as a teacher of Physic, or a private practitioner of it. I should have no more hesitation in meeting Dr. Warren in consultation, in a sick chamber, than I should to meet Holyoke, Danforth or Jeffries.

I have been rather sorry that I left with the Corporation the paper I read to them the last meeting but one, when I was too much unwell to do business, because there are some errors in it. One owing to a wrong impression respecting a continuation of the Lectures, and which a recurrence to a circular letter has corrected; and the other owing to a misunderstanding & misinformation of the term 'Emeritus Professor' by the person who used it. Whatever appears in that paper like a charge against any of the Professors I should wish to recall; as I intend to bring a few charges against two of them, at least, which will be done with more precision & specification than in that hastily written paper. The Corporation will please to consider that I am one, alone; while there is against me a combination of several; and that I am ignorant of legal forms, and liable like all other men, to be mistaken, and that I labor in this business without any assistance.

All these things will doubtless be taken into consideration by the Legislature of the University, towards which I look with perfect confidence, and with a high degree of respect the Corporations very humble serv^t,

Benjⁿ. Waterhouse, Prof. of Theory & Practice of Physic.

Boston, Sunday eveng.

23^d Feby., 1812."

Dr. Waterhouse a little later wrote the following letter to Ward Nickolas Boylston.

Boston 7th of March 1812.

Dear Sir:-

"As you & I have lamented together, several weeks ago the unhappy differences between me and some of my Colleagues, and as I know, that next to myself, there is no man who has a stronger desire to see them removed than Mr. Boylstone, I write this to you as one step towards a restoration of harmony between Dr. Warren & myself.

I will not recapitulate the many & various irritations that have arisen on both sides, for a considerable time past. * * * The matter has been before the Corporation, and the venerable Judge Wendell has been permitted by the Corporation to act the part of a mediator; and he offers to call on Dr. Warren if I desire it; but considering his years & his lameness, I am unwilling to put him to that trouble, and wish to substitute you in his place, knowing your desire to see all things going on harmoniously in our Medical School.

I wish you to ask Dr. Warren if the following extracts from

two letters which I wrote to the Corporation will afford him satisfaction.,-"

The first extract is from the Doctor's letter of February 23rd., above, in which he expresses regret at having written the parable of the Engine. The second extract is from a letter dated March 3rd. and is as follows,-

"I again repeat that the parable of the Engine was begun with more mollified feelings than the commencement of the piece; and that I had no idea that it would have occasioned the keen sensation that I found it produced. I thought it would terminate the business with a laugh; and I earnestly wish that the person who felt it most would try to forget it; for it is not my disposition to give pain to any organized being capable of feeling it. We are all too apt, perhaps, to magnify injuries.

'Shall one dead fly cause the whole pot of ointment to stink?'"

The Doctor concludes his letter to Mr. Boylston as follows,-

"Now my dear sir, if you will be so good as to take this letter and show it to Dr. Warren, and then will inform me of the result, it may probable lead to another step, which may finally terminate the difference. A man however provoked, should never be above saying that he is sorry for a thing, if he, in fact is so. A man who throws a stone at another, the one thrown at him in return may, by hitting him in a tender place, do him more damage than was imagined."

Yours very Respectfully

Benj. Waterhouse.

At the meeting of the Corporation on the 11th. of March it was "agreed to postpone any further consideration of it until some future day, to give opportunity for Dr. Waterhouse to take measures on his part to restore harmony and confidence between the other Medical professors of the Medical School of the University and himself."

On the day of this meeting the Doctor wrote President Kirkland as follows,-

Boston, Mar.11,1812.

Rev^d President Kirkland.

Sir,-

"I here return my two letters that I took from you day before yesterday, after transcribing certain parts of them into a letter addressed to Ward Nicholas Boylston, Esq., who has at my request, undertaken the friendly office of going with it to Dr. Warren agreeably to an intimation from the Hon^{ble} Judge Wendell.

I suspect that I may have misunderstood Judge Wendell, or he the Corporation, respecting a limitation of time; for as the Corporation have been informed by me in my letter to them the 23rd of last month that I intended to bring certain charges against certain Professors, with more precision than I ever attended to. If that was not clearly understood I repeat it now. As yet the Corporation has heard but one side. They have heard my defence but not my charges, and until they hear both, they will hardly venture to make up judgment. My commenced negotiation through Mr. Boylstone will not, I conceive be affected by it, as it relates to but one thing. There is another thing I shall insist on most strenuously, and that is, that the Committee chosen to inquire into the truth of certain rumors respecting my conduct as Physician of the Marine hospital, should make their report to both boards as soon as possible. I shall write to the Corporation particularly on these subjects and only mention them now, lest any steps be taken that would, or may be construed as foreclosing, or preventing this highly necessary step. I consider this business of more importance to my character than any of these charges from the Professors; because these are generally known to have originated from that rivalry which has shown itself at Edinburgh, Philadelphia & wherever there have been Medical Schools, and are daily exposing themselves as such.

I write this more particularly to enquire of you, when there is to be the next Corporation meeting, as I have several papers of importance for their consideration, previous to any business, that solely concerns myself.

I am very respectfully, &c, &c.

Benjⁿ Waterhouse.

President Kirkland's reply to this letter was evidently not satisfactory to the Doctor for a few days later he wrote again as follows,-

Boston, 14th of March 1812.

Rev^d President Kirkland.

Sir,-

I received your letter by M. Faucon- I do not see how the Corporation could have concluded that all parties had been admitted to a final hearing. They heard my accusers, and my defence. In this defence, there appeared here & there, incidently, something like charges

against some of the other professors; but I have I think, expressly mentioned, in one of my late letters to you, or the Corporation, or intimated it, for I have no copy of it, my intention of presenting certain charges against certain professors. I cannot see anything in justice, in usage, or in the nature of the thing itself, which should now preclude me from exercising this privilege. I have advised with some of the most distinguished members of the Board of Overseers on this head, and feel therefore pretty well confirmed in my opinion, that the college legislature will be as well disposed to attend to my complaints against any of my colleagues, as of theirs against me. I must however inform you that Mr. Boylstone as the common friend of both parties, & the generous friend of our Institution, has undertaken the office of a mediator, and conciliator of certain points between Dr. Warren & myself, and this with the knowledge of Judge Wendell.* In order that Mr. Boylstone may see the whole ground, I have enclosed to him certain charges which I had contemplated to present at the next meeting of the Corporation. Should anything spring up to prevent this, I shall not be sorry, for I love peace rather than war; but not to such a degree as to sacrifice honor & conscience to it. I have said it, and I repeat it, I never will be behind any of my colleagues in an accommodating spirit, but I will not be trampled upon by them, and if I have injured any of them, as I believe I have one of them, I will not refuse reparation: I have examined my own heart on this business, and made up my mind.

I shall send to the Corporation a communication^x in which the Professors are not concerned. I took it with me to the Corporation on 20th Feb. but did not deliver it to you, as I thought it would break in on other business. Together with this, I hope the joint Committee appointed to inquire into the truth of certain rumors respecting my administration of the affairs of the United States Hospital, may make their report; to which end I have called last evening on the Chief Justice, who I hope is satisfied that I have 'wiped myself clean' from any foulness that rumor cast upon me. I wish that every Committee in both boards had, or would make up their report in the course of the coming week, so that I may come, if needs be, to a final settlement with the immediate legislature of Harvard college. My meaning here is to be prepared for any event, and am Rev^d Sir

Your humble Serv^t

Benjamin Waterhouse.

About a week after writing the above letter Dr. Waterhouse sent the following communication to Judge Wendell.

Boston, 20 of March 1812.

Dear Sir,

"Agreeably to your friendly intimation I wrote a letter to Ward

* I have just now heard that Mr. Boylstone has had a conference on the subject with Lieut - Governor Gray to whom I had communicated the affair.

x Probably his letter, printed on the preceeding pages, describing his interview with ~~Judge~~ John Lowell, which was laid before the Corporation April 3rd.

The first part of the paper discusses the importance of the study of the history of the United States. It is argued that a knowledge of the past is essential for a full understanding of the present. The author then goes on to discuss the various factors that have shaped the development of the United States, including the role of the government, the influence of the economy, and the impact of the culture. The author concludes by stating that the study of the history of the United States is a task of great importance, and that it is one that should be undertaken by all who are interested in the future of the country.

The second part of the paper discusses the importance of the study of the history of the United States. It is argued that a knowledge of the past is essential for a full understanding of the present. The author then goes on to discuss the various factors that have shaped the development of the United States, including the role of the government, the influence of the economy, and the impact of the culture. The author concludes by stating that the study of the history of the United States is a task of great importance, and that it is one that should be undertaken by all who are interested in the future of the country.

Nicholas Boylstone Esq. which is here inclosed and marked No.1. You will I presume find it according with your wishes. I selected Mr. Boylstone from his well known friendship to our Medical Institution, & to all concerned in supporting it. He expressed a lively pleasure at the idea of being instrumental in restoring harmony. He called on Dr. Warren with my letter, who appeared not to be dissatisfied with it. Dr. Warren wished to show it to the other Professors, but Mr. B. had not my permission to leave it with him. I thought however that Dr. Warren's family might see it, but I did not see the propriety of showing it to any one else, I nevertheless consented that it might be shown to them. My second letter marked No.2. was written from a feeling of delicacy as it regarded you. Mr. Boylstone appears to have possessed a nice discernment of the whole affair, and to have conducted with great judgment. There was one thing that seemed for a moment to embarrass him, and that was my communicating to him, that I, all along intended to present certain charges against some of the Professors. I conceived the natural course of the business was for me to repel their attack, & by making such a defence as truth would justify; and when that was finished, then I conceived that the Corporation would be both ready & willing to hear my complaints. I was determined to keep nothing back from Mr. Boylstone and therefore I sent him a copy of the charges I intended to exhibit, and which I now had by me sometime. The sight of these embarrassed him, as it appeared to him something like twisting the olive branch around the sword. In this stage of the business, he very judiciously conferred with my friend the Lieut. Gov^r Gray to whom I had communicated the affair. After this Mr. Boylstone again waited on Dr. Warren, and yesterday the 19th he returned to me the letters & papers I had given to him with this report, which I wrote down from Mr. B's mouth, & submitted to his correction. "Mr. Warren said that he did not consider it personal, - that he did not feel it personal, - that he would not were it in his power injure Dr. Waterhouse, - that he was not implacable."

In this situation of things, I am puzzled how to act. If I send these charges to the Corporation, it may be construed into a disposition to renew hostilities, at a moment when the opposite party appeared inclined to discontinue them. On the other hand, if I did not send them, I am aware that it would not be consonant to the judgment of my nearest connections, & my best friends; neither would it be doing myself justice in the view of my own mind - I have therefore concluded to send them.

In all this business, I have kept nothing back from you, or Mr. Gray, or Mr. Boylstone; and if I have not done right, it is an error of judgment, to which we are all liable much more such a being as is your

humble Servt.

Benj. Waterhouse.

Hon^{le} Judge Wendell.

P.S. When I am suffering under the headache I use ruled paper, which gives my letters a school boy appearance which please to excuse."

Acting upon the decision as expressed in this letter Dr. Waterhouse soon after this sent his charges against the other professors to

the Corporation, accompanied by the following communication.

Boston 23^d of March 1812.

To the Rev^d & Honorable

The Corporation of Harvard & Collegial University.

Gentlemen,

"Having defended myself before your Honorable & Reverend Body against the charges of the Professor of Anatomy and surgery - and of the Prof^r of Chemistry & Materia Medica; and of the Clinical Professor of Medicine - and of the Adjunct Prof. of Anatomy & surgery - and of the adjunct Prof^r of Chemistry & Materia Medica, as contained in their letter to the Corporation dated Nov. 11th, 1811, it is now the natural and proper order of things that I make to the Corporation my complaints against these Professors. Those against the Professor and the adjunct Prof^r of Anatomy & surgery, and the rest are here enclosed. ****

Recourse to the letters in the hands of the Honble Judge Wendell will testify to the Corporation that my inclination, as well as my judgment exactly coincided with theirs, respecting some personal matters between Dr. Warren & myself; and they will doubtless rejoice to find how far resentments, irritations, and personal feelings have been done away, leaving behind nothing but official ones."

With high respect I remain, Gentlemen,

Your very humble Serv^t

Benjⁿ Waterhouse, Prof^r Th & Prac. Physic.

Boston, March 2^d 1812.

Charges against Dr. Warren.

- - - - -

"I, Benjamin Waterhouse, Professor of the Theory & Practice of Physic enter my complaint to the Hon^l & Rev^d the Corporation of Harvard University, against Dr. John Warren, Prof^r of Anatomy & surgery, by exhibiting against him the following charges.

1st. That the said Professor, after taking unusual pains to create, and as I thought, establish a perfect confidence as it respected the affairs of our medical Institution; and after having promised to take no important step in the common concerns of the Institution, without previously acquainting me, did break in upon, & destroy, in a great measure, that existing harmony by (1st) inviting me to his own house, on the 23^d of August 1810, to a conference purely official, and then & there did insult & abuse me, without any other reason or pretence than that of my having that day sent a Memorial to the Board of Overseers, respecting business in which his own professorship was not concerned: and moreover, he the said Prof^r of Anatomy did then and there falsely accuse me of quarreling with one of the Honorable mem-

bers of this Corporation; and of a general disrespect to the whole body, by declaring that I was "in open hostility to the Corporation"; these being his very words:- and farther more by telling me, in the presence of his two sons, that I uttered a falsehood, with this palliation only, that it was conditionally expressed.

2dly By taking steps for, & securing to himself & connections the privileges of the almshouse, to the exclusion of me; and this contrary to a stipulation between us, relative to our professorial matters, as expressed both in conversation, and by letter to him. That the before mentioned Prof^r of Anatomy & Surgery was the principal in falsely accusing me, the Professor of the Theory & Practice of Physic with being engaged in plans inimical to the interests of that very institution in which your complainant is a Professor;- and of persisting in the assertion long after the contrary had been proved before the Corporation.

3dly. He is charged with a breach of honor, in as much as it had been agreed between us, & ratified by the Corporation, that the avowal, & the denial of the authorship of any piece in the newspapers should be, on both sides, received upon honor, without farther question or scrutiny; not withstanding which, he the said Prof^r violated this point of honor, by going himself to the Printers of the Chronicle, & of the Patriot, to try to draw from them some declaration that might be construed into a breach of veracity; he having repeatedly asked the Printers if Dr. Waterhouse was not the author of several pieces, which I had positively denied before the Corporation.

Considering that the Corporation was in this case 'A Court of Honour', your complainant considers this deed to be an act of very great impropriety, and totally unbecoming a man in Dr. Warren's station, and rank in society.

All which is submitted to the Corporation, with the utmost deference by

Benj. Waterhouse, Prof^r of Th. & Pract. Physic.

To the Honb. & Rev^d the Corporation of Harvard College.

Charges against Dr. John C. Warren.

1st. That the said adjunct Prof^r wrote & published in the New Eng. Palladium an abusive piece in which I was designated as an 'Agent' for the College of Physicians, to my practice of vaccination so represented as to excite the scorn of the public, the whole tending to injure my character, & to narrow my usefulness in the University.

2dly. With having falsely accused me with being the writer of a certain publication in the Palladium signed C., and then, preppa propagating & endeavoring to excite a belief, that I wrote it, with the insidious intention of puclickly attacking a piece of my own writing!

3dly. With having written, or assisted in writing, or being privy to the writing & publishing a certain pamphlet without the name of the author or printer, entitled 'A reply to a Pamphlet' &c; containing scandalous assertions and insinuations against my private & professional character.

4thly. With having favoured, encouraged, and vindicated the attempts of certain young medical students to obtain a Doctor's degree in the University, by attending only one course of the Theo. & Pract. of Physic, contrary to the express law of the Medical Institution; & this too, after he knew that I had informed the Corporation, that it

* See page 347

was propagated last winter, among the medical Pupils, that a Degree might be obtained without attending more than one course of my lectures."

All which is most respectfully submitted by

Benj. Waterhouse, Prof^r of Theo & practice of Phys.

March 2, 1812.

Charges against Drs. Dexter, Gorham & Jackson.
- - - - -

"I, Benj. Waterhouse, Professor of the Theory & practice of Physic enter my complaint to the Hon^{ble}. & Rev. the Corporation, against Dr. Aaron Dexter, Prof^r of Chemistry & Mat. Medica, for having, in conjunction with the other Medical Professors, falsely accused me with being engaged in plans inimical to the interests of the very Institution in which your complainant is a Professor.

I moreover enter my complaint to the Corporation, against Dr. John Gorham, adjunct Prof^r. of Chemistry & Materia Medica, with the same attempt to injure me, as is above expressed against his principal Dr. Dexter, with the additional charge of having made a malicious use of a letter, that I wrote to him dated Oct. 9th. 1811, which was in answer to one from him, asking of me a favour; in which I assured him that I never will be wanting in disposition of accomodation, and say expressly that "none of my colleagues shall ever outdo me in an accomodating spirit." * * * *

I enter my complaint against Dr. James Jackson, Prof^r of Clinical Medicine, for having, in conjunction with the other Medical Professors accused me falsely with being engaged in plans inimical to our Medical Institution, that Institution in which I have laboured faithfully & indefatigably nearly thirty years notwithstanding which I now ~~find~~ find myself denounced by a man, who has been in it scarcely two; and who is particularly interested in my removal from office, if common fame is to be regarded; and who has doubtless been concerned in degrading my Professorship down to that of his own, as appears in the printed circular of June 1810 issued by all the Professors, myself excepted."

He then charges Dr. Jackson with a "breach of honor" in that he with Dr. Warren sought to induce the Editors of the newspapers to divulge ~~the names of the authors of several articles~~ the names of the authors of several articles after it had been agreed before the Corporation that the avowal or disavowal of the authorship of any communication should be considered final. The Doctor concludes his charges as follows,-

"The zeal which Dr. Jackson has betrayed in the prosecution of each & every charge against me is remarkable; especially when it is considered that most of them are alleged to have originated before he belonged to the Institution, and others from conversation where he was not present.

The Prof^r. of Clinical Medicine has, I believe, been concerned directly, or indirectly, in several abusive & satirical anonymous publications injurious to the character, and ungrateful to the feelings of your complainant.

All which is submitted with sentiments of the highest respect by

Benj. Waterhouse, Prof^r Theory & Practice of Physic."

Boston, March 2, 1812.

The presentation of these charges evidently had the effect of halting, for the time being, the efforts at reconciliation and at a meeting of the Corporation April 22nd. the whole matter was again discussed and several votes were passed, the last of which was as follows,-

"Therefore it appears to the Corporation that the conduct of Dr. Waterhouse has destroyed all intercourse between himself and the other Professors of the Medical School of the College, and that the interests of the College require that he cease to hold the office of Professor of the Theory and Practice of Physick in the said College, and that the President, Judge Davis, and Dr. Elliot be a Committee to report a Draught of the Vote of the Corporation to be passed for that purpose."

Therefore it appears to the Corporation that the conduct of Dr. Waterhouse has destroyed all intercourse between himself and the other Professors of the Medical School of the College, and that the interests of the College require that he cease to hold the office of Professor of the Theory and Practice of Physick in the said College, and that the President, Judge Davis, and Dr. Elliot be a Committee to report a Draught of the Vote of the Corporation to be passed for that purpose.

Renewed efforts were now made, however, to adjust matters between the professors before a final vote should be taken. A letter, supposed to be from Judge Davis, makes these suggestions to Prof. Waterhouse.

"If the Corporation are to be induced by you to revise their decision it must undoubtedly be upon the principle that you admit the facts which in their opinion are substantiated; that you allow culpability as imputed; and give assurances & pledges that will justify them in expecting a further care on your part to avoid giving just occasion of offence & blame. If upon a serious review of the subject, you can with conviction make any representations which amount to this, it may be sup-

posed that the worst consequences of this unhappy business may be prevented.

On the first article ought you not to be willing to say,- In my great desire to see the College of Physicians established I did not sufficiently attend to the danger it involved of another Medical School & as it (was?) deemed inconsistent with my obligations as a professor I am ready to say that whilst I hold the office I will withdraw my name & support from that design.

On the second should you not say - In respect to my denial of any knowledge of the proposal for extending the Medical lectures previous to the memorial being shown me, I believe that the gentlemen have stated the conversation according to their conviction. If I uttered the denial imputed, I was incorrect and have only this excuse that the conversation had become very warm. The expression in the letter to Judge Dawes was calculated to give an erroneous expression; as I have admitted & which I regret.

On the third, I do not deny that if the piece signed Novum Organum was not provoked, it had the libellous character ascribed to it & it ought not to have been written or published. Considering the feelings excited in my colleagues by my defence of the proposed college of Physicians & my unfavorable insinuations respecting the faculty I was naturally an object of their severity & should ^{not} felt the provocation to the degree in which I did feel it. The implications in the other piece mentioned I do not justify. As regards the future, if the Corporation shall see fit to revoke their measure I engage if I think shall think I have occasion to be dissatisfied with any of the departments of the University or with my colleagues to forbear appeals to the people by newspapers till I have sought redress from the proper authority. I recall any charges which I have made against my colleagues, except such as the Corporation shall think require investigation."

This was followed by this letter to Judge Davis.

Milk St., May 2d 1812.

Dear Sir,

"I have been looking out for Mr. Boylstone every day since I was at your house, and today I have learnt that he is giving his attendance on the supreme court in Worcester, and will not return till the last of the coming week. When he returns, I shall do as you advised. In the meantime I shall follow what I understand is your advice as well as Judge Wendel's respecting certain papers.

From my conversation with you, and also with the President, I have got that sort of information, which has given me a somewhat different view of things from what I had before, and which has in a great measure fixed me in certain points, that I was before not fully determined on; and I shall act accordingly. Nothing can possibly suffer by delay in the present very peculiar state of things, when it is not known whether we have or have not a legal board of trustees. May I hope then, that you will not act quatenus a committee on this business without giving me a few days previous notice. I am very respectfully

your humbl. Servt.

Benj. Waterhouse."

May 10th. Judge Davis writes the Doctor again as follows,-

Boston, May 10, 1812.

Sir,

"After communicating to you the late proceedings of the Corporation, I proceeded to suggest that an amicable adjustment might prevent a result of serious tendency to you. It was obvious that such compromise could not be expected without due acknowledgment on your part to the party injured. Having said thus much it could not be expected nor was it proper for me to advise on the mode and terms of such acknowledgment. I ought not, therefore, to have had the paper submitted to my consideration which you put into my hands on Saturday and under first impression, it was read very cursorily. But having been perused by me, tho' not with sufficient attention to enable me to judge of it with precision, I have thought I ought to communicate to you the opinion which I entertain of it, and I must say that in matter and manner it appeared to me not at all calculated to produce reconciliation nor do I think it such as the circumstances of the case require."

Your obed. Servt.

J. D.

Benj. Waterhouse M. D.

To this letter Dr. Waterhouse replied thus,-

Milk Street, 11th of May 1812.

Dear Sir,

"I thank you for your letter, which I received with pleasure & read with satisfaction. After reading once again the paper I showed you, I put it into the fire; and yesterday I wrote another more I presume to your mind, and have left it today at the lodgings of Mr. Boylstone who will probably get it tomorrow.

The letter which I have written to Dr. Warren is not a short one. There is no irritating matter in it, and it is pretty clear of recrimination. Lest there might be anything in the phraseology that should be any way disagreeable, I have begged Mr. Boylstone to put the sum substance, & spirit of my letter into his own words, being that I could subscribe to his judgment; as I happily found, that being a man of the world, he was able and willing to view things on all sides. He knows by experience, what it is, to have the worst constructions put on innocent actions. There always has been a greater degree of intimacy between Mr. Boylstone and Dr. Warren, than between Mr. B. & me, yet I should be perfectly willing to abide by anything which that gentleman should advise in this affair, because I believe he is really & seriously desirous that harmony should be restored. My opinion from the beginning has been, that take the Professors collectively, they were predetermined not to conciliate; and the opinion among the medical men is that the difficulty does not lay with Dr. Warren.

I have put some very serious questions to Dr. Warren; such as both of us ought to bear in our minds while we live, lest our offspring bitterly reproach us afterwards.

The evil times in which we live, calls loudly on the spirit of reconciliation to save us from ourselves. Each party with the self-same feelings, & the same stock of resolution & bravery are encamped on the opposite high hills of defiance; and everything should be done to induce each party to come down into the valley & there to join hands against the common disturbers of our peace & prosperity.- Without this disposition to conciliation our Commonwealth will be ruined, and with it will be destroyed our venerable Institutions, and among them our very unpopular college. Ill treated as I have been I never felt disposed to swell the strong current that is running hard against it; & which is becoming every day stronger & stronger, because it is not confined to one party.- But I meant only to thank you for your letter, and am with respect your humb^l Servt."

Benj. Waterhouse.

The letter which Dr. Waterhouse wrote to Dr. Warren, referred to in the above letter, is as follows.-

To Dr. John Warren.

May 10th 1812.

Sir.

"In consequence of a conference with some of the Corporation I have been led to exchange thoughts with some of my friends respecting the design spirit and operation of that humorous publication Signed Novum Organum which appeared just a year ago in the Palladium. To them I have spoken of the pieces which occasioned it, as well as of the personall illtreatment experienced in School Street which preceeded all; among these friends were four Physicians and some of both the old and new board of Overseers; The opinion of these gentlemen have fixed and strengthened my own and if not occasioned has at least expedited the writing of this letter which I entrust with entire confidence to our very valuable and common friend Mr. Boylston whose feelings toward us all must be of the same benevolent kind. I wrote very rapidly the Novum Organum, and it was done under the firm belief that you was the writer of that communication in the Palladium; in which I was unprovokedly traduced, and vilified, as it regarded my practice of vaccination, which had tacked to it a still more aggravating paragraph, which the printer declined inserting. This, and the treatment on the 23d of Augst 1810 may well be supposed to have excited my resentment if I had within me the ordinary feelings of a gentleman. I thought then and do still and so do others, that had you really been, as I supposed the writer of that communication which I complained of, you richly merited those strokes of humour.- But your son has avowed he was the writer of it, and if you now solemnly declare that you have no knowledge of any such production, previously to its publication, I shall not have the least hesitation in saying in addition to the regret I have already expressed, that you did not deserve the Satire; and what I say here in writing I have not the least objection to repeat in print. I have all along intended to wind up my Publication in the Boston Patriot* with

* Probably his "Independent Whig" Articles.

this very business in which I meant to do you as well as myself justice. I will do it still unless this mode through Mr. Boylston should be by you preferred.- respecting the postscript to the Novum Organum different persons have put different constructions on that part of the allegory. I have an equal right with others to give mine. + never for a moment conceived that these words viz. 'with the attempts made to appropriate it to the sole use behoof, profit and advantage of the aforesaid Captain and his family,' ever was meant his own natural flesh and blood family; but the members of the medical School of which I myself was one. I have within this day or two consulted one who ought to know better than I the meaning of that postscript, and have got his Idea in writing which I will show to any two members of the corporation. Only one of four Physicians that I have consulted, gave an opinion different from my own. I have no hesitation in saying in print that by his family was meant as I always conceived it, the Medical Professors for whose sole benefit an anatomical and other rooms were to be erected. Upon the whole, I have no reluctance in saying to you that I am willing that our common friend Mr. Boylstone should reduce all these sentiments to writing, and such is my entire confidence in his judgment, nice discernment, & sense of propriety as well as good will towards us all; that I have very little doubt but what I shall unhesitatingly subscribe to it- you will however bear in mind that I consider that this foregoing matter is a merely personal affair between you and me; and an affair that does not require you to consult the feelings of any beyond your own natural family. Not feeling any particular excitement or resentment at this particular time, I beg leave to ask you in a cool temperament, a serious question, viz. how could you pretend that the publication of the Novum Organum on the 9th of May 1811 was the first cause of a determination of a non-intercourse, when your treatment of me at your own house in Augst 1810 was calculated by you and that deliberately as I believe to produce that effect.- How came you to say to some of the Corporation that my letter to Dr. Gorham so roused up your resentments as to occasion the exhibition of those charges against me, and yet the letter which was pretended to be so very offensive was never produced against me? Mr. Lowell inadvertently betrayed the secret, and taught me that he had been consulted - to me the reason is obvious, that letter to Dr. Gorham breathed the spirit of accomodation and harmony, it struck an axe into the very root of our discords; it exhorted that young professor, for whom I had a friendship to unite with me in cultivating a spirit of mutual accomodation, and an exercise of kind offices of which I was glad to give that gentleman a fresh instance. I told him plainly that our medical school would never prosper without it. How was it that this letter was particularly disagreeable to you. (Examine your heart on this subject and at the age we have attained such an examination will do neither of us any harm.) I will answer for you- you did not wish to see from my pen nor hear from my lips a single sentence in the stile of an accomodating spirit No Sir!! Discord - division, and a nonintercourse composed the motto of you all as it regarded me - and the unprovoked ill treatment I met with at your house was a glaring instance of it, and I believe that that discordant principle has guided every step that has been taken since - If I am wrong I should rejoice if you would set me right. There is another pretty serious consideration for us both. It is hardly probable that our children will be in the background of the community. Are you quite easy at the probability that these seeds of discord already sown in their hearts, may after you and I are gone to another and a better world, grow into a root of bitterness that may

poison all their comfort! from less provocation than what some of my connections conceive I have rec^d has grown a war of an exterminating spirit. I have here spoken my feelings and shall never resume the subject; and shall only wish that this letter may remain a memorial of my sentiments & fears at this time - I return from my digression and close with saying - that, the opinion of judicious men coincides with my own, that after what I have before said was done, that your son Dr. J. C. Warren must come forward and give me the same kind of satisfaction which I am disposed to extend to his father, and then the wished for harmony will be restored and neither the honour nor interest of the Institution will suffer; but, if after this proffer or reparation for an injury unmerited, and the rejection of the extended hand of peace; the honour or interest of our institution should suffer, the public will attribute the disaster to you and to your son and not to your humble servant"

Benj. Waterhouse

Written at Cambridge May 10th 1812.

Among the papers of Dr. Warren, in possession of the Massachusetts Historical Society, is the following note to the President of the College, naming the concessions which the professors thought Dr. Waterhouse ought to make if they were to renew their intercourse with him.-

Sir,

"In our conversation this morning you asked whether there were any terms on which the Medical Professors would be content to hold official communications with Dr. Waterhouse. On this head I have consulted with my colleagues & they have all agreed with me that we shall be very ready to renew our official intercourse with Dr. Waterhouse on the following conditions, viz;

1. That Dr. W^e. acknowledge the truth of the facts stated by myself & my colleagues so far as they have in the opinion of the Corporation been substantiated.
2. That Dr. W^e. satisfy the Corporation of his sincere penitence in respect to his conduct as stated in those allegations and substantiated.
3. That Dr. W^e. give to the Corporation such assurance and security for his future conduct as that they shall be assured he will not repeat his offence against the University nor against his colleagues."

J. Warren.

Delivered to the President 15 May 1812.

Notwithstanding the correspondence noted on the last few pages, however, all efforts at reconciliation were unsuccessful and at a meet-

ing of the Corporation, May 18, it was voted that Dr. Waterhouse be removed. Two days later, at a meeting at the house of Chief Justice Parsons, Boston, the Committee appointed April 22 to make a draft of a vote to be passed by the Corporation for the removal of Dr. Waterhouse, made a full report. After stating the charges and reviewing the proceedings at the various meetings of the Corporation, the report closes as follows.--

"At a meeting holden at Cambridge the 22nd. of April last it not appearing that harmony and confidence had been restored, the Corporation proceeded to a full and deliberate consideration of the allegations aforesaid and the evidence and observations of the respective parties: when they passed votes of the tenor stated in the result of the next meeting and adjourned, with a view at said next meeting of deciding ultimately on the conduct of Dr. Waterhouse, and on his relation to the University. On the 18th. of this present May the Corporation met and resumed the subject aforesaid when they came to the following result:

'1st. It appears that Dr. Waterhouse from the beginning supported the design of erecting by legal incorporation a College of Physicians: that he signed and advocated a petition for said College, which petition requested power, that if granted would have authorized the establishment of a Medical School which would have been injurious to the Medical School of the University. The Corporation have not direct evidence that such a school, under the patronage of the proposed College of Physicians, was intended by Dr. Waterhouse: but the circumstances under which he advocated that College with such authority fully authorized his colleagues to institute a complaint against him on that ground: and he continued to advocate it: after he had knowledge of the institution of said complaint, and a hearing thereon before the Corporation: nor did he ever withdraw his name and support from the application made to the Legislature for a College of Physicians with power adequate to the establishment of another Medical School, notwithstanding, that at his inauguration he 'declared and promised in writing that he would not only endeavor the advancement of Medical knowledge in the University, but consult its prosperity in every other respect.'

'2d. It appears from the evidence adduced that Dr. Waterhouse in, and respecting his intercourse with his colleagues evinced a want of veracity--- first by asserting that he had no knowledge of the plan for extending the Medical School to Boston, until a memorial for that purpose was sent to him from Cambridge: when it was proved to the Corporation that he had previous notice of that plan: secondly he affirmed in his letter to the Hon. Thomas Lawes that two circular letters of the professors had been issued without his knowledge, when it was proved to the Corporation that the first circular letter was emitted with his knowledge and approbation.

'3dly. It appears from the evidence adduced that Dr. Waterhouse did, in the New England 'Palladium' of May 3, 1811, over the signature of 'Novum Organum' without any reasonable provocation, publish a false, scandalous and malicious libel against the Professor and Adjunct Professor of Anatomy and Surgery, which had a tendency to injure their characters, was of a nature to be highly offensive to their feel-

ings and to diminish their usefulness in the University: and subsequently to that publication, in a piece published by himself in the 'Chronicle' of June 17, 1811, over the signature of 'Moderation' he evidently, by implication which cannot be misunderstood, charges the Professors of the Medical School with a neglect of their official duties.

'It therefore appears to the Corporation that harmony and confidence are destroyed between Dr. Waterhouse and the other Professors of the Medical School, of which Dr. Waterhouse is the culpable cause: and that the interest and reputation of the University require that he be removed from the office of Professor of the Theory and Practice of Physick.

'Wherefore, Voted, That Dr. Benjamin Waterhouse, Hersey Professor of the Theory and Practice of Physic in Harvard College be, and he hereby is removed from the said professorship and that the Treasurer be directed to pay him his Salary to the expiration of the present College quarter and no longer.

'Voted, That the President be requested to furnish Dr. Waterhouse with a copy of the above vote and to preserve on the files of the Corporation the papers produced by either party.

'Note, Mr. Lowell declined to give his vote on the question of removing Dr. Waterhouse, and Judge Wendell, though absent at this meeting, sent to the President a note of the following tenor:"

Tuesday P.M. May 1812.

"Sir:-

As I fully agree to the result of the Corporation as was directed last evening to be fairly copied and presented to them on this afternoon. But as now by your morning's billet is postponed to a future day I presume I may set out on my journey on the morrow, after requesting that respectable body to give Dr. Waterhouse as long a space for repentance as in their wisdom and mercy to his family they shall think proper.

I am respectfully your humble servant,"

At a meeting June 3rd. the Corporation requested the President to lay the above vote before the Overseers that they "may approve same if they see fit."

Dr. Waterhouse, with his usual pertinacity, at once decided to renew the contest before the Board of Overseers and at a meeting of that body, in the Council Chamber on June 9th., His Excellency Gov. Strong gave notice that he had a letter and memorial from the Doctor which was read and referred to the next meeting. In the meantime, until his dismissal was confirmed by the Overseers,, Dr. Waterhouse took the ground

that he was still a Professor and announced a lecture as usual. This brought forth a remonstrance from the President to which the Doctor replied as follows:-

Cambridge, 17th June 1812.

Rev. President Kirkland.

Sir,

"I announced to give a lecture to the Senior class, in the ordinary course, this day at eleven o'clock, and at ten I received a line from you telling me that I 'had no official connection with the college, and not entitled to give lectures in this Institution.-' I on the contrary conceive myself to be still the Professor of the Theory & Practice of Physic, as I undoubtedly am untill there shall be a law of the college legislature saying that I am not; but there is no law complete unless the board of overseers add their concurrence. When the Corporation suppressed my Lectures on Natural history, it was in the midst of my course, yet the Corporation allowed me to finish my course. In the present case, I was unwilling to give my lecture, without consulting some of my brethren on the ground. I stated to three of them the outlines of the case: when they all stated they conceived I had a right to give my lectures untill the board of overseers confirmed my dismissal, and as two of the three said that if they were in my place, they would give the lecture, I accordingly did so; and I am persuaded that I was constitutionally right. I ought to know my duty, having pursued it in this college twice as long as any man belonging to it. Had you said, or advised, or wished, that in the existing state of things, I should have omitted the lecture, I should have conformed to your inclination, but the positive & decisive tone of your letter led me to ask the advice of those, who I supposed knew; and as their opinion coincided with mine, I gave the lecture, and am perfectly satisfied that it was strictly & legally correct.

I know that it is the opinion of some of the Corporation that the overseers are obliged, & of course must approbate the resolutions of the Corporation; and thus making the Overseers of the University little more than the ancient Parliaments of France, who were obliged to register the Edicts of their Kings. I do not know how far the Corporation consider the concurrence of the now existing board of overseers as needful to the completion of a law in calm distinction to the board as constituted in March 1810, but I suspect that this difference of opinion between you & me on this subject may be a good opportunity for the board to determine this. I shall therefore submit the case, with a copy of your letter to their consideration. There are certain points which this business of mine have protruded on public notice, and which it is thought will be for the honor & the interest of College to be examined into & settled this summer.

I have petitioned the overseers for a patient and thorough hearing or trial on the charges brought against me, and in my perplexities, I rejoice that I live in a country where this request cannot be denied me. As I have had the opinion of my brother professor, and of some others, well versed in the college code, I feel perfect confidence in subscribing myself your humb^l Servt.

Benj. Waterhouse, Prof. of the

Theory & Practice of Physic in
the University at Cambridge.

P. S. ***** I hope it is clearly understood, that I have withdrawn those papers containing charges against the Professors, and the paper relative to Mr. Lowell, and that I inhibit the Corporation acting upon them, as they are my papers & not theirs. They recommended me to withdraw them, by the mouth of Judge Wendell, as the first step to reconciliation. I accordingly sent for them. The corporation have no right to retain copies of them; but they are bound in honor to return them to me & they are requested, & enjoined not to act upon them as I at first requested, they being withdrawn, by, as I thought, the friendly advice of the Corporation."

B. Waterhouse.

The memorial which Professor Waterhouse sent to the Overseers, dated June 9th., was evidently written in haste and under the sting of his dismissal by the Corporation for on June 17th, he wrote to Gov. Strong as follows, requesting permission to substitute another in its place.

"To His Excellency Governor Strong,

Sir,-

Since the meeting of the Board of Overseers on the 9th inst., I have conversed with two of the members; and they both unite in sentiment on the subject of my memorial; and their opinion has influenced mine; and has induced me to ask leave, which I now do, to withdraw the memorial, which you did me the honor to present, and to substitute the one here enclosed dated June the 17th.

I withdraw that memorial because I perceive that as a material part of the memorial related to business not then before the board, my memorial was, in a measure, premature; and as it lies on the table, I am informed, that it is within rule to allow a memorialist, or petitioner, thus circumstanced, to withdraw his address entirely; or to put another in its place.

I have another, & perhaps a better reason. On cooler reflection, I perceive that I have not sufficiently restrained the expression of my feelings, in every part of my memorial. Charitable minds, will, I hope, excuse this: for when I looked back on the time I had spent in my lectures, instead of devoting my time to making money by practice; and when I reflected on my own incessant college-labors; and now found it all in danger of being laid waste; and that by those whom I thought ought to have encouraged & protected me, I could not but feel more than I ever felt before. If I wrote that memorial under the influence of an angry spirit, I hope I may be forgiven, by all those who recollect that he who best knew the human heart allowed us to 'be angry' provided we 'sin not.'

Indeed, Sir, I found it hard, and still find it very hard to get over the very hard & odious name of a 'Malicious Libel' given to an humorous allegory, which I was so far from ~~considering~~ considering, or suspecting to be of that cast, that I never pretended to conceal the authorship from anyone. I know not exactly what a libel is; and am ignorant of the precise line where innocence ends, & guilt begins, in the discussion of a public question, as this really was. I said, did, and wrote everything not absolutely against my conscience, to assuage any painful feelings that I had excited; & with such effect as to induce the gentleman aggrieved to say that he 'felt nothing personal against me,' yet all this, & more, had no effect on my inexorable judges! Suppose I had, in the warmth of a newspaper controversy, excited the laugh of the public against an opponent, who made the first public attack upon me is there nothing to be offered in extenuation? Must the whole 'pot of ointment' be thrown away for 'one dead fly.' I can prove that some of the members of this gentleman's family sent a piece of such a libellous character against me to three different newspapers (two federal & one republican paper) that all three editors refused its admission.

I am persuaded that there is scarcely a member of the Board of Overseers, but will be impressed with the idea, that there is something more in this business than meets the eye. If so, a fair & patient hearing before them; or their committee will discover what that is.-- But I forbear troubling your Excellency any farther on the subject; and have only to wish that all concerned in this ungrateful business, may have our ideas & feelings clarified, and rectified by passing them through the cooler judgments of the Hon^{bl} & Reverend the Board of Overseers.

With a high degree of respect, I remain your Excellency's humble servant,

Benjamin Waterhouse.

Boston, June 17, 1812.

His Excellency Caleb Strong Esq^r."

The following is the Memorial.

"To His Excellency Governor Strong and the rest of the Hon^{bl} & Reverend the Board of Overseers of Harvard College, this memorial of Benjamin Waterhouse most respectfully sheweth

That it is thirty years since he was invited from a profitable circle of practice in his native State to take upon him the Professorship of the Theory & Practice of Physic in the University of Cambridge; and he has ever since endeavored to discharge that trust with diligence and fidelity; and has, he hopes, demeaned himself as a good citizen of this Commonwealth, and of the United States.

And during the long space of thirty years, he has never been conscious of being found deficient in his duty; nor has he ever once suspected that he did not give satisfaction to those who were under his instruction, as no complaint has ever been made under that head.

And whereas the Hon^{bl} & Rev^d the Corporation did in the year 1788 solicit & contract with your memorialist to give over & above the

duties of his Medical Professorship, a course of lectures on Natural History, annually, your memorialist begs this Hon^{bl} & Rev^d Board to cause an inquiry to be made how far, how well, and how long this task was fulfilled; and how it came to pass, that this course, the labour of so many years, was suddenly put down; and why the judgement of this board on this transaction has never been carried into effect. He therefore begs that this business which has laid so long dormant in the hands of a committee, may now be called up to view, and with it the business of the Mineralogical Cabinet, that source of our discontents and divisions.

And whereas our Medical Institution has not escaped these animosities and divisions which have at some time or other disturbed nix almost all the Medical Schools we have any account of; and are the too common result of competition and rivalry; and has led to a disagreeable state of things among ourselves, and has occasioned criminations and recriminations before the Hon^{bl} & Rev^d the Corporation; and which has in the result engendered extreme discontent & dissatisfaction in the mind of your memorialist, & his friends; he therefore entreats the Hon^{bl} & Rev^d the Board of Overseers not to concur with the vote of the Corporation without giving him a full & patient hearing and trial, either by their committee, or in person before them, or both, as they in their wisdom may think best.

And whereas the Board of Overseers has from deaths, and other changes outlived a knowledge of the several facts relative to your memorialist, he begs leave to observe to them, that there are, or were, two or three committees appointed, relative to compensation for injury sustained by the suppression of his lectures on Natural History, that has never to his knowledge reported; and another relative to injury sustained by taking from his Medical Professorship the most popular & lucrative branch of it, & giving it to another; as well as a third committee relative to the Cabinet of Mineralogy, all which have a bearing or connection either remotely or immediately with this last transaction of the Corporation concerning him. He therefore most earnestly & emphatically entreats this board not to concur with the votes of the Corporation relative to the charges of the Medical Professors, untill they have given themselves time & opportunity of looking back and examining those several acts & occurrences, anterior to affairs to which these votes appear, on first view, to relate merely; but ~~has~~ which have a material influence and bearing upon them all.

Your memorialist begs that this Hon^{bl} & Rev^d Board would allow him sufficient time to collect, arrange and lay before them or their committee a series of facts & circumstances needful to a clear understanding of these long existing difficulties.

And whereas your Professor is now about midway in his course of Medical Lectures at the University; and about the middle of his course of Natural History in Boston; he has therefore not time at present, for furnishing to this board papers absolutely necessary to the clear understanding of this business: Therefore he asks this Rev^d & Hon^{bl} Board, so to order it, that their committee, should they please to appoint one, may report upon it at the November session. From all these considerations your memorialist petitions this Hon^{bl} & Reverend Board, as the regular & legal tribunal in such cases, to give him a hearing on each & every head of the allegations, or complaints, brought against him, and that this hearing or examination be made before a committee; or else that he be permitted to meet his accusers face to face in the presence of this Honorable & Reverend body.---

The first part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all transactions. It is essential for the business to have a clear and concise record of all income and expenses. This will allow the business to track its financial performance over time and identify areas for improvement. The second part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all assets and liabilities. This will allow the business to track its net worth over time and identify areas for improvement. The third part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all taxes paid. This will allow the business to track its tax liability over time and identify areas for improvement. The fourth part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all debts. This will allow the business to track its debt liability over time and identify areas for improvement. The fifth part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all equity. This will allow the business to track its equity over time and identify areas for improvement. The sixth part of the paper discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all other financial information. This will allow the business to track its overall financial performance over time and identify areas for improvement.

Amidst his discontents he rejoices that he lives in a country where this request cannot be denied him. All which is submitted with the highest degree of respect and deference by

Benjamin Waterhouse, Prof. of the Theory
and Practice of Physic in the University
at Cambridge.

Boston, June 17, 1812."

On June 18th. the Overseers held a meeting to which the vote of the Corporation removing Professor Waterhouse was communicated. The latter was allowed to withdraw his memorial dated June 9th. and substitute the one dated June 17th. and a committee was appointed to consider and report what mode "of proceeding shall be adopted" relative to the same. This committee reported at a meeting of the Board held just a week later recommending that a committee be appointed "with instructions to proceed, without unnecessary delay, to hear the original complaints on the charge they exhibited to the Corporation against Dr. Waterhouse, and his answer thereto; and the evidence the said parties shall respectively adduce; and to report, for the consideration of the Board, a statement of the facts which shall be proved by said parties." This report was adopted and the "Honl. Dr. Fiske, Honl. Mr. Dana, President of the Senate, Rev^d. Dr. Porter, Rev^d. Mr. Foster of Brighton, and Honl. Thomas Hazard Jr." was appointed as the committee.

The committee reported to a meeting of the Board held July 27, that it "convened at the Academy's Room, in the State house on the 7th instant (excepting the Rev. Mr. Foster of Brighton) and proceeded to a hearing of the parties, who were all present, and beg leave to report, that after a full hearing of the said parties, they were not able to agree on a statement of facts,- that they had adjourned to meet on the first thursday after the commencement of the Session of the General Court, in October next, unless otherwise ordered by the Honl. and Rev'd Board."

The committee was then discharged and the question of concurring with the Corporation with in the removal of the Professor was discussed but, no decision being reached, further consideration was postponed to an adjourned meeting which was held on the 30th. inst.

The day before this meeting Professor Waterhouse wrote to Lieut.-Gov. Phillips, in the absence of Gov. Strong, "& the rest of the Board of Overseers" , the following being extracts from the letter.

"They must consider that I stand alone, in a thick atmosphere of professional prejudice, as well as oppressed by a wretched bias of party prejudice. But in the midst of it all I am not dismayed; but ~~boldly~~ boldly declare before the highest authority in the Commonwealth & will repeat it before the publick, that I have faithfully and industriously performed my duty as a Professor, with a very scanty reward.****

I cannot however, too strongly my utter disapprobation of a doctrine attempted to be established - viz.- that if five professors can agree together and the sixth cannot, that the sixth, shall for that reason, be discarded. I am confident the Board of Overseers will never give their countenance to a doctrine capable of producing so much mischief. *****

I would beg leave here to remark that had all three charges been substantiated, with a due allowance of the warmth of a newspaper controversy, the sentence of dismissal is rigorous beyond all example in this country for more than a hundred years past. It is unlike the spirit of our laws and the habits & feelings of the present race of literary men. **** the question

Respecting of resigning and coming to an amicable composition, I would observe, out of respect to the opinion that may have arisen in the breast of friendship, that my family one & all are very averse (knowing what they do know) to anything like an unqualified resignation. They declare their readiness to submit to any mechanical employ for support (for they well know that I have never laid up a cent for old age) than that I should do anything, that would give malice itself reason to say, that I did not leave the service of the University with a character as pure as when I entered it.

This affair is the subject of much conversation, at this time, and will probably excite no small attention, as different people have taken different views of the subject.

I close this letter with repeating, that I feel conscious of being clear from all the charges brought against me by my accusing brethren, excepting that of substituting ridicule for argument, which to make the most of it was a folly and not a crime; and in consequence of the first attack; and that I entreat this Hon^{ble} & Rev^d Board to postpone the final hearing of this business to the next session of the Legislature when all the Gentlemen who have sat on this business in committee will be present as also all those before the business was originally brought."

This ~~existing~~ letter was presented to the meeting on the 30th. and after being considered it was moved and seconded that the Board con-
cur with the Corporation. This led to ^{an} extended discussion which result-
ed in a modification of the motion, which after giving a summary of the
vote passed by the Corporation and the findings of the committee closes
as follows,- "and this Board being convinced, that under existing circum-
stances his continuance in his present office will not consist with the
harmony requisite to be maintained among its members, and with the inter-
ests of the University, and that it is therefore unnecessary for them
farther to examine into and decide upon the facts and reasons alleged by
the Corporation for the said vote:-

Therefore voted, that this Board do concur in the said vote of
the Corporation, removing him from his said Professorship and for the
payment of his salary."

It was ordered that the vote be taken by yeas and nays and re-
sulted in fifteen votes being cast in the affirmative and three in the
negative.

Dr. Waterhouse sent a letter and memorial to the Board remon-
strating against this action but after several adjournments, at a meeting
held October 27th., he was given leave to withdraw them and this appar-
ently ended the matter.

In commenting later, in his Independent Whig articles, on the
procedure of the Overseers the Doctor writes,* "But when the Board met
~~procedure of the Overseers~~
in July, and eighteen members only present, they voted to discharge their
committee from any further service; and adjourned for a few days to take
up that business, but without giving Dr. Waterhouse any notification; and
then they concurred with the Corporation on a different principle from
that which the Corporation sat out with. There were present at this
meeting nineteen members; of which number four only were Senators; and

four were members of the Corporation, that is, men voting approbation of their own acts! A strange system of legislation! Here the concurring members amounted to about one fifth of the whole number of the Board! The famous Arch-Bishop Laud himself could hardly have wished for a more convenient system for crushing an Independent Whig. *** Upon observing this strange conduct, Dr. Waterhouse and his friends avowed their determination of appealing to the public, as the only mode left in a country where the press was free to utter the voice of complaint.* We should here remark, that Dr. W. presented another memorial to meet these injurious proceedings; but that memorial was suppressed, or rather arrested, for it was read at a very small meeting, and put by and kept in the pocket of one of the members, until they had finished the business which his memorial remonstrated against."X

Soon after Professor Waterhouse's dismissal he was appointed, by President Madison, to the office of Medical Superintendent of the nine military posts of the U. S. Army in New England, extending from Castine, Me., to New London, Conn. In his introduction to his "Junius" the Doc-

"A Member of the Corporation, a most worthy and upright man, when told by Dr. W. that he intended to lay his complaint before the public, replied 'I do not much wonder at it. I do not advise you to do it. Kind, I do not advise you to do it; but if you do, Pray do it dispassionately.' This good man added, 'I have witnessed this persecution with pain, and I have remained in the Corporation two years longer than I wished, on purpose to protect you.' I wish my dear sir, you had never written the NOVUM ORGANUM."

X "The Board of Overseers, at this time, consisted of the Governor, Lieut.-Governor, Council, Senate, and Speaker of the House of Representatives of the Commonwealth, and the President of Harvard College for the time being, with fifteen ministers of the Congregational churches and fifteen laymen."

The first of these is the fact that the
government has been very successful in
its efforts to reduce the deficit. This
has been achieved by a combination of
increased revenue and reduced expenditure.
The second is the fact that the
government has been very successful in
controlling inflation. This has been
achieved by a combination of
tight monetary policy and
fiscal restraint. The third is the fact
that the government has been very
successful in maintaining a high level
of employment. This has been
achieved by a combination of
active labor market policies and
fiscal expansion. The fourth is the
fact that the government has been
very successful in maintaining a high
level of public services. This has been
achieved by a combination of
fiscal expansion and efficient
management. The fifth is the fact
that the government has been very
successful in maintaining a high level
of international trade. This has been
achieved by a combination of
fiscal expansion and efficient
management.



The graph shows the percentage of the population in different age groups over time. The solid line represents the 15-24 age group, the dashed line represents the 25-34 age group, and the dotted line represents the 35-44 age group. The 15-24 age group shows a steady decline from 100% in 1980 to about 75% in 1990. The 25-34 age group shows a decline from 100% in 1980 to about 50% in 1990. The 35-44 age group shows a decline from 100% in 1980 to about 25% in 1990.

tor says,- "The President of the United States saw this disagreeable condition of things, and following the example of his predecessor, Jefferson, gave me the Medical Superintendency of the nine military posts of the U.S. in New England, with as much indulgence as his duty to the public would admit. I held this pleasant station from 1813 to 1820; and from that period have withdrawn myself from every professional concern, save epistolary consultations and extraordinary cases."

In 1817 he was ordered by Gen. Miller to examine rigidly all the hospitals at the several posts in the second Department of the Northern Division, including Castine, and Portland, Me., Portsmouth, N.H., Marblehead and Boston, Mass., Newport, R.I., and New London, Conn. His entire report of this tour of inspection has been published in one of the volumes of the Massachusetts Historical Society. A few facts and extracts taken from the same will be of interest. He was very much impressed with Penobscot bay and river; its beauties and navigability, and predicted that the future capitol of the State would be situated upon its banks.

Referring to the conditions at Portland he said there was more diarrhea at this post than at all the other posts in the Department put together. "The beef, bread and water were all of the best quality, (for I always make it a rule to taste them all). I could therefore find nothing in the surgeon's department nor in the food that could account for these extraordinary diarrheas, untill I visited the barracks, and there I found that the men were not allowed to sleep on straw, but lay on the cold, hard boards."

Of the situation at Boston he writes, "As this is the most important and numerous garrison in the Department we had a right to expect a corresponding degree of attention in whatever regarded the health and comfort of the troops. The hospital is a miserable old building

not worth repairing, being pervious, I should suppose, to snow and rain. Some parts of its interior is kept pretty neat, others not. *** Here was opium enough to serve such a garrison fifty years. *** The barracks for the men of two stories. They cook in the lower rooms. Every room was ever heated by fires, when no cooking was going forward. *** The Surgeon at this garrison Dr. Dunham has ever conducted as if he did not consider himself under the controul of the Medical Director. He would make no returns to him, until he was ordered to do it by General Miller. He created difficulties and delays about supplies of medicine, and has given me more trouble, and more room for censuring him than all the rest of the surgeons together in the Department. *** When I have asked explanations, he declined giving them; and the only time he called upon me was with a view to personal altercation rather than explanation. A new hospital is absolutely needed here.

The Dungeon, or black hole has, I have reason for believing been the death of several men. I dare not express fully my feelings on this painful subject, lest I should be thought to wander from my proper department into that of the police of the garrison and jurisdiction of court martials. I cannot however resist remarking that confinement in these dungeons is a very unequal punishment. Some can live through it, but some cannot. There is something horrible in putting a man to death by the gradual torture of stifling him day and night for a month. The effluvium of human excrements in some of these dungeons is enough to sicken the strongest man. Cannot this horrid mode of punishment ^{be} commuted for some other less revolting to humanity?"

In the report of his inspection, to Major General Jacob Brown,
the Doctor says,-

"Should it be thought that I have noticed the general state of such things, as may be considered by some beyond the line of a Physician, I would say in defense of it, that I have found generally, That as to the neatness, order, and comfort of the garrison as to the med-

ical affairs thereof. ***

I question whether any plan short of that of a Physician General, will give that uniformity to our medical procedure which marks and dignifies some of the Armies of Europe, the want of which I so much lament in our own. Were I a man of more consequence, I would venture to represent this thing to the President, in a view rather philosophical than official."

In his report to the Inspector General, Col. John E. Wool, he writes,-

"There is more merit in preventing ~~diseases~~ a disease than curing it, and this is a doctrine I unceasingly inculcate to officers and surgeons in garrison.***

In some towns, as in England, the dysentery has swept off a frightful number of the inhabitants. I was induced to write a circular letter to the surgeons of all our posts, lest they should adopt the absurd and destructive practice of our citizen practitioners. Not a man has died, to my knowledge who has been treated in the way recommended in that circular. *** At present every hospital surgeon has his potion - no two think alike, and whenever they come near to each other, they commence intriguing against each other; 'hard words, jealousies and fears' are the consequence. An able Physician General would cure all this. I am confident that the establishment of such an officer would be economy as well as wisdom."

Jan. 3, 1818 he writes to John Quincy Adams, at Washington, then Secretary of State,-

"I enclose to you a scheme or plan for changing the punishment of death for that of constant compulsory labour in a military Penitentiary. It relates merely to our soldiery, as you will see on perusal. As it is intended for the eye of the President of the U.S. I thought there would be more propriety in sending it to you than to the Secretary at War; because I have done this in my quality as a citizen rather than as one of the Physicians of the Army.

This paper has grown up from many conversations with our military commanders, more especially with General Miller, who is as humane as he is brave. *** I should hardly have had the courage to have framed it, and sent it on had not General Miller requested me to give to it his entire and unqualified approbation as to its feasibility.***

The punishment of the black hole, adopted in our garrisons in the place of whipping, is a disgrace to our country. I am confident it has destroyed the lives of several. I have seen enough in my late visits of inspection to the different posts in this Department, under an order to examine all hospitals and medical matters, to warm my zeal in abolishing it, and offering something more congenial to our humane character.

I have addressed a letter to the President which you may suppress if it be improper to forward it; for I am ignorant of the rules, or etiquette in such cases."

"It will be noted that this is in accordance with the best medical practice of the present day."

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
DEPARTMENT OF CHEMISTRY
RECEIVED

FROM THE
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
DEPARTMENT OF CHEMISTRY
RECEIVED
FROM THE
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
DEPARTMENT OF CHEMISTRY
RECEIVED
FROM THE
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
DEPARTMENT OF CHEMISTRY
RECEIVED
FROM THE
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
DEPARTMENT OF CHEMISTRY
RECEIVED
FROM THE
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

In 1820 Dr. Waterhouse heard a rumour that the Postmaster at Boston was to resign and he immediately applied for the position. He wrote from Cambridge Dec. 29th., 1820 to a Mr. Bailey, a clerk in the office of the Sec. of State, asking if the rumour was true and saying such a position would be "infinitely more congenial to my habits and feelings than the small business of surgeon to a post of 50 men. *** If you could give me any information, so as to prevent me from doing anything improper, or anything that might be construed underhanded, you will greatly oblige" &c. The rumor proved to be unfounded. For a year or so after this the Doctor had quite an extensive correspondence with Mr. Bailey

For a year or so after this the Doctor had quite an extensive correspondence with Mr. Bailey* about a bill before Congress providing for the extension of vaccination throughout the country under the supervision of an officer appointed by the Government. Dr. Waterhouse had reason for believing that he would be appointed to this office but the bill was defeated. *The Historical Register of the U.S. Army says that "he was Hospital Surgeon 27 June 1813. Post Surgeon 18 Apr. 1818, and was honorably discharged 1 June 1821."*

As already stated when Dr. Waterhouse was elected a Professor in Harvard he resided on Cornhill, Boston but before 1787 he had removed to Cambridge and in 1793 became a resident of the house formerly owned by Dr. Isaac Hand situated on a street which was then the northerly boundary of the Common, but about 1800 was named Waterhouse street in honor of the Doctor. The circumstances under which he went to live in this house are given in the following letter,-

"The President having requested me to express the full meaning of a note written to him on the 8th of April in which I solicited a conference with some of the Corporation on the subject of the 'tenure on which I hold the Estate where I now live', that he might lay it before them; I transmit the following facts with a view to fulfil his request,-

When Dr. Hand died I determined, if the estate he left in Cambridge were to be sold, to possess myself of it. Accordingly, as soon

*The whole correspondence is in the possession of the Mass. Hist. Society.

The first part of the paper discusses the importance of the study and the objectives of the research. It then proceeds to a detailed description of the methodology used, including the data collection and analysis techniques. The results of the study are presented in the following section, followed by a discussion of the findings and their implications. The paper concludes with a summary of the main points and a list of references.

The study was conducted in a laboratory setting, where the participants were asked to perform a series of tasks. The data collected was then analyzed using statistical methods. The results showed that there was a significant difference between the two groups, with the first group performing better than the second. This finding is consistent with previous research in this area.

The implications of this study are far-reaching, as it provides valuable insights into the factors that influence performance. This information can be used to develop more effective training programs and to improve the overall efficiency of the system. Further research is needed to explore the long-term effects of the intervention and to identify the underlying mechanisms.

In conclusion, the study has demonstrated the effectiveness of the intervention and has provided a solid foundation for future research. The findings suggest that the intervention is a promising approach for improving performance, and that further exploration is warranted.

Table 1: Summary of Results	
Group	Mean Score
Group 1	85.2
Group 2	78.5

Table 2: Statistical Analysis	
Variable	Value
t-value	2.34
p-value	0.02

as decency would permit, I acquainted some of the heirs with my intention. Within two years, they informed me, they meant to sell it, and should of course give me the refusal of it. They asked £1000 for it; but soon fell to £800; then to £850 - and lastly to £800, below which they said they would not fall, nor did I desire it.

Upon the meeting of all the heirs however, Dr. Rand of Boston represented to them, that as I had paid close attention to his father in his last illness, and given long attendance on his mother, it was his wish, as one of the heirs to abate me £50 in the price. They not only agreed to do this, but complimented me with the offer of one of the very best pews in the meeting house at the very low price of £15. This house & land therefore was bargained to me for £750, and not to the College; and the late Thomas Russel stood ready to assist me in the purchase of it and expressed his regret since that I had not. An idea however was started and suggested to me by Dr. Tigglesworth to visit the property in the College, under certain conditions. His idea was this; - that the College should own the property and rent it to me for the simple interest of the purchase money; and that should there be additions to the building they should be considered at the same rate, viz, the annual interest of the money laid out. Among the other advantages Dr. Tigglesworth suggested my exemption from paying taxes. Finding the scheme in general agreeable to my family, I made my proposals to the Corporation in writing accordingly, when they acceded to them in every particular, except the part which proposed purchasing the estate with the Hersean money. This, they informed me was out of their power.

This is the true state of the business. But as some who were most acquainted with this transaction are dead *** and the conditions of the bargain but faintly remembered by others, *** I have thought it not improper to solicit the Corporation to turn their attention to the subject, that the facts may be recognized, and some record made thereof. ***

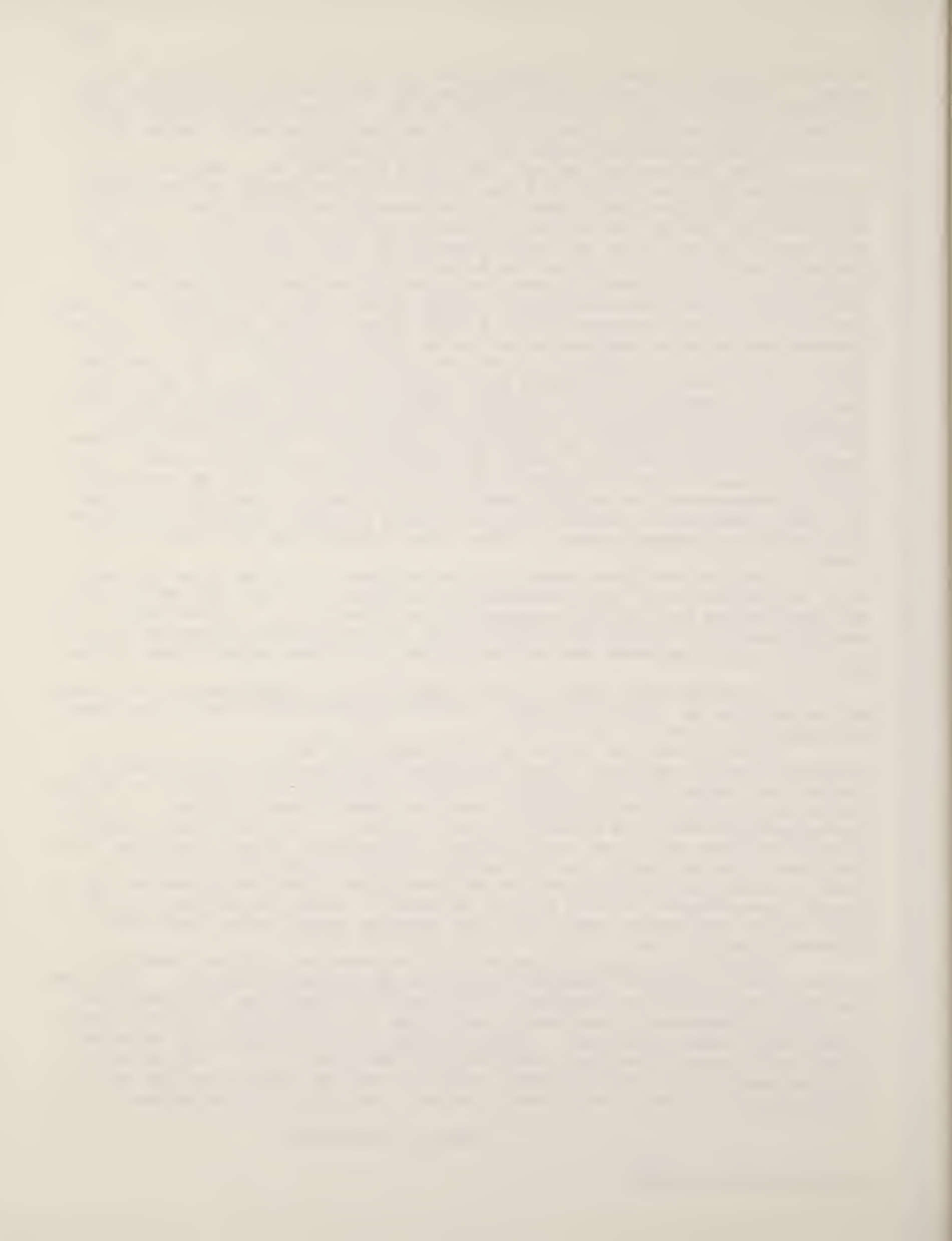
As rents have risen, & the spirit of the agreement not allowing the Corporation to raise the rent, I have resolved not to call too often for repairs.***

When I took the place in 1793 there was not a single tree or grapevine in the garden. Now there are fourteen fine fruit-bearing trees; and three kinds of grapes, with a grape fence composed of 24 red cedar posts, which with painting cost me twenty-three dollars. Also a new asparagus bed, the result of great labour. In the other grounds have been added six fine fruit trees, and several others engrafted with the best kind of fruit, not to mention several ornamental trees, so that by moderate computation, we may conclude, that the place is, by those improvements done at my own expense, & effected chiefly by the labour of my own hands, worth full one hundred pounds more than when I entered upon it.***

By the foregoing statement the Corporation will at once perceive, that I did not consider myself as an ordinary tenant. Some now in the Corporation may remember, that the sentiment was to accommodate me with a permanent & desirable residence, at the lowest possible rate their duty would allow of. Others besides Mr. Bowdoin, may remember, that Judge Lowell lamented they could do no more. *** Now several little repairs are still needed, but will not be particularised untilk the tenure on which I hold this estate is examined & recognized."

Benjn. Waterhouse.

Cambridge May 2, 1803.



A few years later the Doctor asks for some alterations in his house in a letter which gives interesting information.

Cambridge Mar. 20, 1806.

Dear Sir,-

"Having just heard that the Corporation meets here today, I am induced to write you this requesting you to be so kind as to mention the subject of the wished for alteration in my house. You saw, as you expressed it, that it would be an amendment to the rooms & I feel that it will be a conveniency beyond what a stranger would imagine. Hitherto I have had no room in my house large enough to entertain ten people with any sort of comfort. Besides the conveniency in my best parlour, it will accomodate me in my back room, which I have for a series of years made use of as a Lecture room for my medical class. During the 24 years that I have been giving medical lectures in this College I never put the College Treasury to the expense of a single cent for any room in which to give my medical Lectures; the one in my house answers all my wishes with this proposed alteration; for by it I shall have more room & more light; the last being an important requisite to a myopic Professor.*** This proposed alteration will therefore not only accomodate me as it regards my family, but will also accomodate me in my official relations: the expense of which will probably be somewhere between 70 and 100 dollars.

There is no house the College owns that has been so little expense to them as mine. *** My improvements in the garden & orchard have made the place I occupy more valuable by perhaps 300 dollars as I can demonstrate.-- Moreover, the Concord turnpike has cut off a certain portion of land on which I used to raise my early potatoes, the damage has I suppose been paid into the College Treasurer while I pay them the same rent. Should not that defalcation be made up in the improvements which I now ask for?

I should be very sorry to ask the Corporation to do anything beyond the limits of their trust, but I do think when we consider what has been done from year to year in ornamenting one of their houses in Cambridge, that my request is very moderate & very reasonable.*** I beg you to accept the respectful & friendly salutations of your very humble servt"

Benjn Waterhouse.

Honrl Judge Davis.

In February 1809 Dr. Waterhouse bought this property, together with two other small pieces of land making about eight acres in all, of the College. In 1821 the Doctor conveyed the place to his father-in-law Thomas Lee and in 1827 the latter deeded it to his daughter, Mrs. Waterhouse, "in consideration of the love and affection I bear towards her,

1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20	21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30	31	32	33	34	35	36	37	38	39	40	41	42	43	44	45	46	47	48	49	50	51	52	53	54	55	56	57	58	59	60	61	62	63	64	65	66	67	68	69	70	71	72	73	74	75	76	77	78	79	80	81	82	83	84	85	86	87	88	89	90	91	92	93	94	95	96	97	98	99	100
---	---	---	---	---	---	---	---	---	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	----	-----

and of her particular care and attention to me which is acknowledged."

With the exception of some two years, 1811-1813, when the Doctor resided on Milk street, Boston, he probably made this house his home from the time he moved into it in 1793 until his death, and it became known as the Waterhouse house and is so referred to in various guide books of Cambridge. The house is still standing (1919) and is No. 7 Waterhouse St.

A book entitled "Harvard and its Surroundings" by Moses King, published in 1882, describes the old house as follows,-

"Waterhouse House, which bears the marks of great age, and is probably one of the oldest houses now standing in Cambridge. It resembles the houses built by the early settlers, and has an admirable location looking over the Common toward the College Yard. Some relics of the 'American Jenner,' and of an even earlier occupant than he, still remain here. In one room is a clock surmounted by the symbolic cow. At the head of the staircase stands an old clock with an inscription which shows that Peter Oliver, former chief justice of the province, presented it in 1790 to Dr. Waterhouse. The old time-keeper requests its possessor to wind it on Christmas and the Fourth of July. In another room hangs a crayon portrait of Mrs. Waterhouse, the doctor's mother, painted by Allston when a student at Harvard."

At the time the above was written the house was occupied by the Misses Ware, granddaughters of the Doctor, whom, we are told, continued to live there until about 1903.

A "Historical Guide to Cambridge" by the Cambridge chapter of the D.A.R. in referring to the house and family says the "Doctor's descendants still own a ~~set~~ tea set, of the so called Lowestoft ware, said to have been sent by 'Dr. Jenner of England to the Jenner of America.' A cow standing in a meadow, surrounded by a gilt line, is painted on each piece."

As already stated Dr. Waterhouse spent the last part of his life without professional cares. Perhaps the most interesting view of these years may be had through abstracts from his Journal, now in possession of a descendant, Mrs. William Roscoe Thayer, of Cambridge. The

The first part of the paper discusses the importance of the study of the history of the English language. It is pointed out that the English language has a long and varied history, and that it is important to understand the changes that have taken place over time. The second part of the paper discusses the importance of the study of the history of the English language. It is pointed out that the English language has a long and varied history, and that it is important to understand the changes that have taken place over time.



The third part of the paper discusses the importance of the study of the history of the English language. It is pointed out that the English language has a long and varied history, and that it is important to understand the changes that have taken place over time. The fourth part of the paper discusses the importance of the study of the history of the English language. It is pointed out that the English language has a long and varied history, and that it is important to understand the changes that have taken place over time.

pages containing the first part of this Journal have been torn out of the book, the first entry remaining being in the year 1828. Then there seems to be jump until 1833. It is a book in which he enters his reminiscences, reflections, the events of the day &c. It is very human, gives much information of the times and often shows a tendency to heart searching and a review of his acts which indicate an inherently religious nature. Space will permit us to use only a comparatively small portion of the matter and we have selected the items which we think will be most interesting and which reveal, to some extent, his home life and character. In one of the early entries he says,-

"I am a friend of mankind & of merit. I do all the good I can. I abhor cruelty and hate injustice. I adore the order of things so far as I can see it in the Universe and of course the Creator & Legislature of all things visible & invisible.

Good spirits - a cheerful disposition, and the habit of looking on the bright side of things have carried me cheerfully on to old age with no pain and as people say with none of its infirmities. Is it the flame of life? Is it the spirit in man that carries the fibre - the matter of his person to unusual longevity?

During the years 1830, 31, and 32 it has been my hearts desire that my only remaining son, bearing my own name who has preached more 8 years past in London, Exeter, Calm- and Tarminster should return home to his native land. He arrived at New York 24 Aug. 1833 and about a month after in Cambridge where he has given evidence of his talents & extraordinary acquirements. I am convinced that he can do anything as a preacher. He is able to lead in matter and in a chaste manner, provided he bears in mind the golden maxim of Junvenal - *Nullam, Numen ab est si sit Prudentice.*

Oct. 29, 1835. Went to Quincy by invitation to dine with my old, intimate and long tried friend John Quincy Adams without any other company and had nearly three hours private conversation with that great, good and upright man upon two of the most important topics of my life. Mar. 5 1836. He tells of reading Pope's translation of Homer's Iliad and Dryden's Virgil. "Slavery-ships, and the cruel whippings of the negroes in the West Indies, and in the South have too long disgraced this quarter of the world."

I cannot kill poultry to eat that I have bred and fed who know me as their benefactor. I inculcated the like feeling in my children. Mar. 10, 1836. I am not quite fixed in my opinion of the true character of the Carthaginians." He then takes two or three pages to philosophize on the matter.

"I am constrained to say that after the history of the American Revolution the history of Andrew Jackson's Presidency is in me the most gratifying. I have kept my eye upon him through his whole career, and have changed my opinion of his character, and have no hesitation in pronouncing him the best President of the U. S. that we have ever yet had.*** I as much believe that Andrew Jackson has been raised up by a benefi-

*About Commodores Elliot and Decatur.

The first part of the paper discusses the importance of the study of the history of the English language. It is noted that the English language has a long and rich history, and that the study of its development is of great interest to scholars and students alike. The paper then goes on to discuss the various factors that have influenced the development of the English language, including the influence of other languages, the influence of social and cultural changes, and the influence of technological advances. The paper concludes by noting that the study of the history of the English language is a fascinating and important field of research.

The second part of the paper discusses the importance of the study of the history of the English language. It is noted that the English language has a long and rich history, and that the study of its development is of great interest to scholars and students alike. The paper then goes on to discuss the various factors that have influenced the development of the English language, including the influence of other languages, the influence of social and cultural changes, and the influence of technological advances. The paper concludes by noting that the study of the history of the English language is a fascinating and important field of research.

The third part of the paper discusses the importance of the study of the history of the English language. It is noted that the English language has a long and rich history, and that the study of its development is of great interest to scholars and students alike. The paper then goes on to discuss the various factors that have influenced the development of the English language, including the influence of other languages, the influence of social and cultural changes, and the influence of technological advances. The paper concludes by noting that the study of the history of the English language is a fascinating and important field of research.

cent Providence for the welfare of our Nation as that George Washington was the American Moses.

Within ourselves the most important & serious matter is the gnarled question of Black-slavery, the retributive curse of the South begun and entailed on us by the British.

Napoleon Bonaparte was my favorite before he went to Russia, and my Admiration when a prisoner in the dreary Island of St. Helena.

Mar. 15, 1836. It has become apparent to me since this year came in that what I have written for insertion in the Free-Press or Advocate has either lacked their former viset acumen or my expressions of zeal became too cool for the times, as their insertion is evaded. Perhaps symptoms of old age^a appears to them more glaring than to me. If so I thank them for preserving me from exposure; and shall take care by my silence to escape it. And whatever I shall hereafter commit to paper shall be more in the Journal style to be confined within doors than for the Public eye. I hope to bear in mind the anecdote of the Bishop of Toledo in Cill Blas. The eye can see everything but itself.

About this time the Doctor visited Ex-President Jefferson at his home at Monticello, and in describing his visit says,-

"I never shall forget his colored Domestics of all ages collected around him like barn-door fowls and their chickens around their daily feeders;- nor his good humored contrivance to collect in his long entry, his servants of all ages, size and complexions to let them see the man, who, as he told them, had found out the means of saving them, and all others, from the horrible Small Pox. There was a Paternity in all his conduct, manner and mode of address to them that I never before witnessed anywhere, and w^o I never suspected to exist between the slave-holder, and his dependents. Indeed wherever I went in Virginia, I saw a thinner wall of separation between the blacks and the whites than ever I saw in New England. My veneration for the Patriarch Jefferson was increased by this visit."

On his return from Monticello he visited Ex-President Madison and writes thus,-

"I spent three days with the venerable and amiable Ex-President Madison, who appeared to me as amiable character as that of Pothergill, with this difference, that Madison had fewer traits of Aristocracy in his composition than the greatest Physician of the age.

The Hero of New Orleans (Gen. Jackson) to my surprise, for I too had my predudices, has done more to sustain, and spread abroad these our United States than any other man since the days of Washington. Of our six Presidents Andrew Jackson is the most extraordinary character, and the most suited for the high station of the chief magistracy of the American Nation.

The Christian Religion or the Doctrine of the Bible - old Testament and the New, or in other words the worship of One God, instead of the divided Gods of the Greeks and Romans may keep us out of that dark Cimmerian darkness which covered the world after the destruction of the Grecian and Roman Commonwealths. Should the liberated Blacks of the South join with the Red men of the Forest, both using gun Powder, we must look to our ships for safety.

Then I look back on the past year (1835), I have to pronounce

^aHe was then eighty two years old.

The first part of the paper discusses the importance of the study of the history of the United States. It is argued that a knowledge of the past is essential for a full understanding of the present. The author then proceeds to discuss the various factors that have shaped the development of the United States, including the role of the government, the influence of the economy, and the impact of the culture. The paper concludes by emphasizing the need for a continued study of the history of the United States in order to ensure a bright future for the nation.

The second part of the paper discusses the importance of the study of the history of the United States. It is argued that a knowledge of the past is essential for a full understanding of the present. The author then proceeds to discuss the various factors that have shaped the development of the United States, including the role of the government, the influence of the economy, and the impact of the culture. The paper concludes by emphasizing the need for a continued study of the history of the United States in order to ensure a bright future for the nation.

The third part of the paper discusses the importance of the study of the history of the United States. It is argued that a knowledge of the past is essential for a full understanding of the present. The author then proceeds to discuss the various factors that have shaped the development of the United States, including the role of the government, the influence of the economy, and the impact of the culture. The paper concludes by emphasizing the need for a continued study of the history of the United States in order to ensure a bright future for the nation.

The fourth part of the paper discusses the importance of the study of the history of the United States. It is argued that a knowledge of the past is essential for a full understanding of the present. The author then proceeds to discuss the various factors that have shaped the development of the United States, including the role of the government, the influence of the economy, and the impact of the culture. The paper concludes by emphasizing the need for a continued study of the history of the United States in order to ensure a bright future for the nation.

it not an unpleasant one. I have returned to my own pleasant house, to the center of Cambridge where my six children were born, only two of whom are now living. I have been enabled to raise every domestic vegetable from under the surface of the ground and above it for my table, and grain for a pair of horses and some domestic animals. March 5, 1836. This is my birthday, being born March 5, 1754. It is somewhat remarkable that (at) eighty-two years of age, I can write from five to six hours a day, and go up and down stairs almost as quickly as ever, and sleep from six to seven hours, and have no other pain or aches, but now and then in my left foot. April 20, 1836.

Wrote a long letter to Hon. Levi Woodbury, Sec. of Treasury in response to a pamphlet upon Culture & manufacturing of Cotton. Also suggesting Com. Jesse D. Elliott as an Admiral. For we are destined to cover the ocean with a power the world has never yet seen. May 1, 1836.

Went to meeting, the Rev. William Newell preached an excellent sermon, replete with good sense, sound morals and piety, and an improved delivery, but the few lines suggested to him from Pope's Messiah was a passage rather beyond his powers as yet.

It is to be lamented that our students of divinity in this University neglect so much pulpit oratory, and the art of reading a Psalm or hymn properly - Mr. Newell is so good a young man, and so well disposed that I have taken some pains to improve him in pronunciation or rather enunciation or what Demosthenes called action. How stale, flat and unprofitable are some of the finest passages in the Bible for want of a proper delivery!

Referring to a reprint of an essay on Napoleon Bonaparte he was reading Dr. Waterhouse says it was

"Written by the Rev. William Ellery Channing, son of William Channing, Esquire, late of Newport, R.I., and grandson of the Hon. William Ellery, and old and intimate friend of my father. The Rev. Dr. Channing is a man of respectable standing for his learning, but none too diffident in his opinions. Throughout my defense of Bonaparte I never named Channing, although all knew who I meant. My animadversions had the effect I contemplated, but never any personal difference or any diminution of apparent personal respect, so that we both spoke our opposite opinions of the greatest man of the age without destroying (our) mutual respect. To my surprise, however, the Rev. Dr. has republished his Review of Napoleon and encomium of Sir Walter Scott's Life of him, which determined me to prepare my new paper numbers for publication in a volume. Channing is a respectable man, of a forward disposition, and his zeal sometimes overbalances his knowledge, as in the case of Napoleon ten years ago, and the Slavery question recently. What he says of slavery, in the abstract, coincides with my own judgment, but if pushed, at this time, may lay our Southern brethren under great embarrassments and cover their towns in blood and ashes. They in one sense exist by the Christian forbearance of New England spirit." May 8, 1836.

Wrote a letter of 8 pages folio to Com. Elliott, commanding the American Squadron in the Mediterranean. May 11, 1836.

Wrote pretty fully to Hon. John Q. Adams in answer to his. In the

cause of his country, it would seem as if he had determined to die in the last ditch. Invalid as he is, he is in himself an Rest.
May 30, 1836.

A more disagreeable spring I never knew, yet it is healthy, and the 112 doctors in Boston with the exception of about 10 or 12 are ready to eat each other up, if not trying to kill one as they have no other chance

The Annual meeting of the Mass. Medical Society of w^c I am a retired member have been very much agitated by an unwise attempt to compel their members to refuse consultation with any who are not of their association. They are trying to make an example of John S. Bartlett, M.D. He appears to me calculated to prostrate the arrogant powers of the Boston Medical Aristocracy.
June 11, 1836.

The Mass. Med. Soc. expelled Dr. J.S. Bartlett for non-conformity with their lofty, aristocratic rules.
July 3, 1836.

Yesterday wrote a pretty long and familiar letter to the Hon. Levy Woodbury Secretary of the Treasury: spoke of the feelings of the common farmer and mechanic on our overflowing treasury.
Sept. 1, 1836.

University Commencement. If the University in this place appears to be at a stand it may be owing to its riches and their lazy consequences and to its Unitarianism, that is, its coldness, or diminution of the Calvinistic heat, w^c gave a glow of warmth to everything they took hold of. If I am not mistaken, the Roman Catholics will ere long outnumber the Protestants in Mass^{ts} and Maine.

At this annual congregation of the Alumni of this seminary I think p~~ain~~ painfully of my sons. The best of them John Pothergill Waterhouse is entombed in a church yard at Charlestown South Carolina. Daniel Oliver nobody knows where, while unhappy Benjamin still lives a stranger from me though but a mile or two from me.***
Sept. 9, 1836.

Yesterday was celebrated in this place the second centennial or 200th year from the foundation of the college - a brilliant and imposing festival, whether we consider the great numbers present or the oral performances." A huge tent or pavilion containing 1200 people, where the alumni dined. I never saw so long a civic procession. The illuminations at night were beautiful, and without any disagreeable accident. President Quincy in an address of two hours did not fatigue his audience. Everything was well arranged and fortunately conducted. We may say of the whole - O factum bene! We may make one remark that none of the present day will not wonder at: the toasts and extemporaneous speeches were all complimentary & flattering, and calculated to please, or rather to hurt no one's feelings. It was all hail everybody, and during the whole I heard not a hiss from any goose or serpent whatever. Our fore-fathers were highly praised for their expressions of liberality, and no one even squeaked a malediction at any of their persecutions. They were all God's people, and therefore as good as Moses or Joshua or David or Solomon himself, - when not a mother's son was so free from vice, cruelty & injustice, as either of our Presidents, from Washington to Jackson inclusive. It appears from all quarters that the state of society and the love of loud methodical preaching far transcends the calm, ~~with~~ rational style of our Boston Unitarians. Excitement is relished and called for; in other words, there must be a bell-wether to every flock, or the sheep will leap the walls and riot on the barren commons.

It was for this anniversary that Dr. Gilman wrote "Fair Harvard."

The following entry was made in the latter part of 1836.

"Having accepted a written invitation of the R. I. Historical Society to deliver a Public Discourse before them and having rec'd a second request that I would give the Introductory Lecture during the sitting of their Legislature I went to Providence the 4th of November in my own carriage and arrived there the 5th. I avoided the rapid steam Cars, as too whirligigish for a man who wished for a cool and steady head."

He was entertained very pleasantly in the home of the Rev. Romeo Elton, a Professor of Greek and Latin and Secretary of the Historical Society.

He was very pleasantly entertained at the home of the Rev. Romeo Elton, a Professor of Greek and Latin and Secretary of the Historical Society. The Journal continues thus,-

"The good People of Providence expressed their wonder that a man of Eighty-three years of age should have ventured 50 miles from home in the middle of Nov^r and delivered a Lecture 1½ hours long and exhibited so few marks of old age.
Mar. 3, 1837.

At 12 o'clock at midnight Andrew Jackson closed his glorious career as President of these United States and retired in dignified tranquility with the blessings of a vast majority of the people of America.
Mar. 5, 1837.

This is my birthday when I enter on my Eighty fourth year of my busy life, and never suffered under any very alarming disease, or any very serious bodily accident, or any dislocation of a joint, fracture of a wound, or bloody wound. Some of my children have afflicted me and some have comforted me. My son John Fothergill was everything a father could wish, and yet the fatal consumption deprived me of him, and laid his bones in Charleston So. Car. As I never have so I never will advise a consumptive young person to leave the bosom of his family to risk dying from home.
Mar. 8, 1837.

I have just been attentively perusing the admirable address of Martin Van Buren the newly elected President of the U.S. I accord with it as my political creed. I always revered the sentiments of Jefferson and had a high idea of the integrity of my old friend John Adams, and equally so of my Dear friend his son, John Quincy Adams. I admired the amiable character of my friend and correspondent James Madison, and had an exalted opinion of General Jackson.
Mar. 28 at noon.

I am sore from head to foot. Can this be all imagination? I believe there are millions of beings in our atmosphere 'on blessed errands sent.' Are there evil ones also? If so they have, in general, kept at a distance from me. My 'fortune', so to speak, has been more favorable than reverse, and that superior power which has, very often averted evil, and sent good is a Being to whom I bow with the utmost Admiration and Gratitude. Milton understood this or I do not understand Milton. I am entirely disposed to rely on that power while I live waking or sleeping. I once thought that the use of ar-

dents was the most prosperous invention of Satan, but those who delight in hoarding have a disease of the mind, - a rottenness of the very bones, the framework and support of the finer parts of the system.
April 18, 1837.

Look into the newspapers of the day and every column is marked with words 'money! money! money!' with notes of admiration, or rather, black marks !!! of gloom and distress, when in fact the country was never so full of money as during the latter end of Jackson's administration and the beginning of Van Buren's.
May 2, 1837.

Referring to the hard times he says, -

"As to me or mine we complain not. We eat, drink temperately, sleep quietly, and thank the bountiful God of seasons for everything we have and for keeping us from a thousand ills which afflict other nations. I have indeed one great calamity, but it is beyond my control. It depends not on myself.
May 16, 1837.

Bankruptcies daily occur, like the children's play with bricks, one brick knocking down the next one to it until the whole row is prostrate in one dismal scene of obliquity. I have foreseen this state of things seven years past. Merchants and traders have not only over-traded but over-lived with what would be called, in Great Britain, extravagant living, in luxurious tables, costly indulgence of children & number of domestics, and in horses and carriages, and above all, in rash and imprudent speculations. New York, that rich and extravagant city, now feels greater calamity than her destructive fire.
June 4, 1837.

Died my valuable and long tried Friend the Rev. Abiel Holmes D.D. pastor of the 1st Cong. Ch. in this town. Abiel Holmes was really a righteous man. I feel grateful to him, and to his Father-in-law Judge Wendell for their steady friendship and noble stand when my false brethren, after working underground came out boldly to destroy me. I fought them three years; and although they effected, as I always supposed they would, (my downfall?) yet was it like Samson when he pulled down the house wh buried his enemies under the ruins. Politics favoritism together with free Masonry marked and marred all this business. I found I must in my own course deal with anatomy - chemistry & Materia Medica, offence could not be avoided. Dr. Warren and Dr. Dexter formed an alliance offensive & defensive, wh they conducted like the Masons in secrecy, and in conclave. I bore it silently and long; but at length I rose to action altho I knew they (had) the Chief Jesuit alias Chief Justice Theophilus Parsons as their aid. Strange as it may appear at this day they had a majority of the Corporation of the University on their side. The wonder will be diminished when it is known that the Revd John T. Kirkland was President and he was the creature of the Chief Justice. ^{that fact alone would} themselves strong enough they broke ground, and my two colleagues made four or five or six allegations against me wh they dare not do while Pres; Willard, Rev. Dr. Wigglesworth and Judge Lowell were living. They were kept at bay some time while the venerable Judge Wendell was in the Corporation, & his son-in-law the Revd Dr. Holmes in the Board of Overseers.*** It was a notorious & scandalous fact, that a very forward and remarkably officious medical student named Enoch Hale circulated a paper for signatures in the anatomical rooms, the purport of wh was to remove from office the Prof. of Th. & Practice of Physic in wh they made little progress.***

Referring to the fact that his fellow medical professors ac-

complished their purpose in having him dismissed by the Corporation,
he says,-

"Here the plot was consummated and they triumphed, and I was put fairly or rather foully under the surface. The Committee of the Overseers were astonished when they read the papers: One of (them) the Hon. Thomas Hazard of New Bedford, an excellent man & Senator and a member of the Society of Friends said then. If I had no other means of knowing the character of the Corporation, or Legislature of Harvard College, I should want words to express my contempt of them. Then Judge Th. Parsons, who came into the Corporation on the express condition of doing as he had a mind to, was observed to do everything to ~~xxx~~ incommode me because he knew I detested his politics and intriguing conduct, and did not fear him, we went on crossing each others purpose till 1812, when I retreated from the field of contest and published the history of the whole campaign in the Boston Patriot in 44 numbers under (over) the signature of The 'Independent Whig.' The ~~xxx~~ first President Adams read every line of them, and told me, and others that it was the most even-spun thread of any narrative he had ever read. Major Gen^l Dearborn said as much, and more.
July 4, 1837.

My notions of republican governments varies a little from what it was once. This State of Mass^{ts} is governed by an aristocracy.
July ~~24~~ 24, 1837.

I am reading Tucker's life of Jefferson. I am pleased with the author's picture of my old friend & correspondent the venerable John Adams. He certainly understood his character, and from my perfect knowledge of him, I judge of his accuracy in describing Hamilton, who appears to me a greater man than I had supposed, and therefore I do not repent of my presenting the bust of Alexander Hamilton to Harvard College.

Daniel Webster is still on the tramp, popularity hunting. How can a man of his talents act so much like a fool!

The papers of this day July 27, 1837, record the death of King William the IV of England. He died June 20th ago 71. He is succeeded by the Princess Victoria, daughter of the Duke of Kent, called when in this country His Royal Highness, Prince Edward, with whom I dined at the British Consuls, with a small select company, namely, the Rev^d President Willard - Judge Lowell, and the two British Colonels his aids.

August 25, 1837.

Another college Commencement is at hand and here am I almost as active as ever, and preparing to go to Providence. Commencement next week where they mean to make me open my mouth again before Magistrates of my native State, and what is more startling in the language of Old Rome - in the language of Terrence and Cicero. If so I shall consider it my last words but I trust not my dying speech, yet if it should be I hope the men of Rhode Island will bear in mind that I have done all in my power not to disgrace my native State - my beloved Natle solun and that I have to the last shown my gratitude to my first patron Abraham Redwood. Without Redwoods friendship I never should have seen my relative Dr. Fothergill; and without Fothergill's judicious patronage I never should have studied at Edingburgh, nor should I a very young man - an American - A New England man in 1775 and 1776, in the midst of the revolutionary contest, and in open rebellion, ~~may~~ have been caressed and favoured as I was at that famous Scotch Univer-

sity: for I was made the Secretary of the (Royal) Medical Society so long as I remained in Scotland.

And as to Redwood, I have not only sounded his praises in my public discourses, but tried to erect a structure in imitation of the elegant Redwood Library in Newport, by our Law-school in Cambridge; but it is no more like that than I like Hercules. (This was old Lane Hall.) The genius of ugliness grinned horribly at the birth of every building belonging to Harvard College. Hitherto every one of their structures have been committee-spoilt. It is a mercy that the reverend and honorable sirs have not been able to disfigure the ground or alter the river. However, I am not disposed to carp or reflect on the present conductors of this Cambridge University. They never had a more liberal or faithful set of stewards. They had more learned Presidents than Josiah Quincy, but they never (had) a better one nor one so well qualified to manage to the best advantage that noble ~~instit~~ ^{instit} establishment. I admired his liberal conduct when President of the United States Andrew Jackson visited the University, and when in despite of a mean opposition, he publicly conferred the honor of LL. D. on the venerable and old soldier, and universally applauded chief magistrate of our nation. It was an untried and somewhat trying scene to the veteran general, yet he went through it without a boggle or the least embarrassment in the Academical ceremony as well as in the religious. When the hymn was sung, written by Judge Story for the occasion, in which a distant but handsome allusion was made to the hero, he noticed the civility in a manner that marked the man of sense and the gentleman. So when he was ushered into our splendid Library, where the splendid full-length picture of John Adams, the elder, filled a large (place) on the West end, and that of his son John Quincy Adams, he noticed them both with a gentlemanlike compliancy as the pride of Massachusetts, although it was well-known they were not the favorites of each other in their political views & feelings.

President Jackson said to me on that day at the house of President Quincy that he wanted words to express his feelings and his sense of the honors conferred on him that day by the learned men of Massachusetts. 'You certainly,' said he, 'have all the means of a good education.' I myself was particularly gratified that Jackson should see proofs in the Library that we had distinguished John Adams, both father and his son, by their spacious pictures, above all the sons of old Harvard. On Jackson's return to Washington he said on all occasions that offered that he ever should bear in mind the honors of Massachusetts in general and of the University of Cambridge in particular. In all this view of things, I cannot but confess that Andrew Jackson, President of the U.S., is a very extraordinary man.
Sept. 4, 1837.

I am preparing to go to Providence to be present at their Commencement,* in the rail cars for the first time in my life and found them very convenient and not unpleasant, but not so rapid as I was made to believe. They ran about 20 miles an hour, and stopped a few minutes three times. At the end of my journey, when I arrived at the Boston depot at the bottom of the Common my friend John Pickering who undertook to take care of his old preceptor in Nat^l History, kindly called a hackney carriage for me to go with my trunk to Brattle St. where the Cambridge stages start from. A great crowd of hacks throng-

* Brown University.

ed the place, and after Mr. Pickering had seen me safe in the coach & taken leave a coach from behind ran furiously against the one I was in, and suddenly overturned the one I was in, and threw me on the ground through the door, the glass of wh^{ch} was fortunately down; my coachman fell from his seat, and I in the dust. Numbers were ready to assist me: and every one seemed surprized that I was not more seriously hurt; for the coach fell flat on its side with the axle tree perpendicularly upright, and yet I escaped without fracture, bruise scratch or bloodshed! I think of it in amazement. My strong steel watch-chain composed of a series of rings was snapped in two, while my watch remained undamaged in my fob. Such was the violence somewhere. I was, and am still wondering how I escaped a greater injury. Next to my escape of drowning in the cabin of the Don Galvez in the harbor of Havanna, this was a preservation the most providential. But my life has been full of them. But for what good purpose I am yet preserved in health, activity and good spirits, I cannot at this time say - I wait to know in humble gratitude thus far.

Van Buren sustains himself, and the honor of his country nobly. What a happy land is ours! Every President from George Washington to Martin Van Buren, great and virtuous men - faultless men if viewed wisely and judged of candidly.

Sept. 20, 1837.

Volmy's writings (he is reading his history of Arabia, Egypt &c.) strengthen the old testament history, and confirm the writings of Moses. It adds strength to scripture history - it honors the truth of ancient prophecies, and glorifies the Bible. The eagerness of Americans in searching those renowned countries of Asia & Africa, must strike every sensible native of the old world as a mark of laudable curiosity, and honorable to both.

Sept. 30, 1837.

Still reading Volmy. I still hold on to Dr. William Gordon D.D. as an honest historian. (He is thinking of Gordon's History of the Revolution.) I wish however that copy wh^{ch} he carried from this country to England his native place had been published without mutilation, but that too was trimmed up for the market, and all he said on Slavery omitted, and with it Moses Brown's honest opinion of that disgrace to the United States.

No hemisphere of our (to us) vast globe can surpass our view by night. It is glorious. Addison's hymn expresses it very well - David still better, while the view itself is beyond our powers of expression.

It is a pity our nation has not a footing of some sort in that congregation of Nations, the Mediterranean in which all the active world meet.

Oct. 24, 1837.

Reading Travels of James Bruce in Abyssinia. A cough for the first time in my life, the whooping cough excepted, sticks to me on exposure, to cold, and seems to indicate a change in my general state of health.

Setx Nov. 4, 1837.

When I spoke in public a year ago, I spoke with as much energy of voice, and ease as at any time in my life; but that would hardly be the case now.

Nov. 25, 1837.

The wane of quotidian memory is my greatest grievance. It is a fixed rule with me to use my watch key twice before going to bed. Every day week month and year seem shorter and shorter. Can it be twelve months since I publicly addressed the Magnates of my native

state?

Feb. 23, 1838.

Reading Robertson's Charles V. (of Spain.)

Mar. 5, 1838.

Who would have believed it, in Gilbert Stuart, sagacious as he was in his judgement predicted that I should never rise to more than 30, seeing all my brothers & sisters, eleven in number none, my sister Rebecca excepted never lived over 28 years, and here am I in good health & appetite, a sound and quiet sleep entering my 85 year of my life, capable of writing five, and six, and sometimes seven hours a day. I pray that I may have time to collect and arrange my papers, and omit nothing that may be beneficial to mankind, as I have no anxiety for my family.

Mar. 6, 1838.

I have just put my signature to an Address to the Congress of the United States, wh^{ch} is headed by President Quincy, denouncing the detested practice of Duelling occasioned by the barbarous death of the Hon. Jonathan Cilley. *** who fell by the hands of Mr. Graves a member from Kentucky. *** I rejoice to see such a general abhorrence of that anti-christian fashion. ** and it is praiseworthy in old and moral Harvard to bear a strong testimony against the savage custom.

May 1, 1838.

Crowds of young females have passed my door early this morning to enjoy the genial month of May. I said to myself as I contemplated this train of health & beauty pass - I hope young ladies you have on warm woolen stockings to correspond with your muffs in keeping your noses warm.

May 7, 1838.

I have this day finished reading deliberately Discourses on Davila, written by my old and venerated friend John Adams Senior and never perused a more weighty book. It is replete with wisdom, sound morality & instruction. It is not vulgar history, but the essence of history, or rather the soul of history, and not its dead, injected carcass, or cadaver.

Have just finished reading the literary character of Sir Walter Scott in No. American review of April 1833 in the usual style of the boastful Scotch. All the Scotch geese are represented Swans, and Edinburgh as I have seen it during nine months residence much misrepresented. I despise the cringing fawning style of some of the Scotch writers, yet I erred on the other side, and sometimes said in my Junius some things that had better been omitted.

May 17, 1838.

During the past winter and now, I feel more the effects of advanced and advancing age than ever before. My temper is more brittle, and my patience less, yet my thoughtfulness to restrain these paroxysms seldom or never sleeps - a cross old man is hideous, and should be attended to. When he stays here below too long, he should have the civility to behave well while he stays - My attentive wife has fixed me in her commodious easy chair, with its soft cushions, soft arms, and steel, elastic springs. Beside, I have everything I need - everything good for nutriment & comfort, and that in due season. Everybody waits on me, while I appear to wait on ~~me~~ ~~any~~ none, and yet I do, and care for everybody and every living growing thing.

I am reading the Memoirs of the Rev^d John Callender of Newport, Rhode Island, just printed in Providence. A very neat and precious thing. His sermon preached just one hundred years ago is a gem, re-

set in gold by the Rh. Island Historical Society. I just remember parson Callender's last illness and burial. Sunday.

Concluded to go to meeting - May be I may get a new stimulus to something energetic to drive away this to me unnatural sluggishness. I am struck with the perverseness the hoggishness of the female Yahoos of the present time - uneducated, proud, envious, and hating those who feed them and shelter them out of the gutter. June 18, 1838.

Read 'Men & Manners in America.' I am attached in a proper degree to Old England, and ought to be, yet I do detest the John Bulleryism of their writers on our customs and manners whⁿ they describe as inferior to their own. July 12, 1838.

Wrote to Dr. Fansher and sent him per mail this days newspapers in which I took care that he should be mentioned honorably. He was my first Lieut. in the great business of Vaccination, and deserves well, not only of his countrymen but of mankind. July 22, 1838.

Reading the Autobiography of Sir Walter Scott. I never saw Walter Scott. He was unknown to fame when I was in Edinburgh in 1775 and 1776.

I never could speak in public, unless it was on some subject whⁿ strongly animated my feeling - et ego quoque. Make me angry, and I am even eloquent, and my conversational powers are more than middling. Many unfeeling people can speak for hours with as little feeling as the Town-clock a striking.

I am still reading Lockhart's Memoirs of Sir Walter Scott, and that with deep interest. It calls up ideas and feelings of my own early life, which I regret I neglected to commit to paper. August 30, 1838.

Yesterday was the annual Commencement of this Cambridge University, and may perhaps be (my)last. I hesitated somewhat whether to attend. I only excused myself from the usual public dinner, not to take up the room and plate better disposed of to some stranger, - and, moreover, to be at liberty to invite some friends who may be uninvited by any one. As to the quantum of science and the comparative grade of it displayed, it seems rather higher than heretofore, or rather, it is more manlike, less attempts at wit, -- and yet not surpassing what was exhibited last year at Providence. Yet the stream rises as high as the source. We need a President as learned, as zealous, as industrious as Cotton Mather was in his day. Governor Everett would not, I think, accept the office after being the chief magistrate. He is able, learned and discreet, and does himself and the state honor, -- I hope the state may act up to such a pattern. *** That great, and what is still more honorable, that good man, John Quincy Adams, amidst his multiplied cares and duties, did not omit his accustomed visit to me this 30th of August *** P.M.K. day. I relished his friendly visit with manlike and child-like feelings. I was not only pleased but delighted with this evidence of his steady friendship, which commenced as long ago as 1779.

In some of the entries referring to Dr. Dexter we read, "Politics - party politics governed everything in this University."

In one of the entries, referring to Hamilton and Burr, he

writes,-

"Hamilton was burried in effigy - deified and I was fool enough to go to the mock funeral, and partook for a short space of the popular delirium.

Sept. 10, 12-13, 1838.

I, or rather we, husband and wife have been reading the Memoirs of the celebrated Aaron Burr.

Sept. 17, 1838.

I know not, half my time, what, or who of my new correspondents to regard or reject. Mr. Jefferson himself told me he was sometimes embarrassed on this head. He answered forward coxcombs, and slighted, he feared too often a vix ponderosus. How can it be otherwise in this country and in these times. If I knew my correspondent, his real character, his weight in society, one would know what and who to reply to; but in a country where every freeman is a King, and every King not a fool, how can we manage.

Jan. 28, 1839.

I have just received to my surprize and disgust a bill from the Board of Directors of the 'Boston Free Press' Directors, so denominated for that paper, when I more than once or twice kept that paper afloat, when in danger of sinking from its unpopularity, and numerous masonic enemies. While the Free Press was, as I thought, the Champion of Truth and righteousness, I occasionally helped them and they regularly sent me twice a week their paper but unasked, and I never thought of subscribing to it. I besure made cartrages and they fired them and gained the victory, and all my reward was, the reading gratuitously the Free Press paper. I have several other journals sent to me from a great distance, as Baltimore, Cincinnati, Albany without my ever ordering them or knowing the publishers. They never sent me in bills or made any demand on me. Shall I not therefore send them in my bill? It will not very much exceed \$100.

Feb. 14, 1839.

As to myself, if it were not for the slipperyness of spots here & there, I could walk a mile or two with great pleasure. It is my sight that keeps me from roaming abroad. I cannot see my way as formerly, and my age and the bible warns me from walking 'in dark and slippery places.'

Just written a communication for Buckingham's Courier in favor of Com. Elliot, who has been sneered at for bringing in the renowned Ship Constitution the Asiatic (Jack)asses for w^h he deserves high commendation. It is a better deed than if he brought so many horses. The mule the offspring of the horse & ass are invaluable. Their feed is cheaper, and their service greater. The ass has degenerated in Old England & in New from ill usage. One of the finest string of quadrupeds I ever saw was six mules in a costly carriage in Spain. The ass is not a stupid beast if treated with kindness. Cruelty disheartens him, and makes him resentful. He is used as ill as the negro, and then he behaves like one. Call a Dog mad, and everybody pelts him. The ass is the most patient and careful of our domestic animals and the worst used.

Feb. 28, 1839.

Wrote amply to Hon. J. Q. Adams. The subject chiefly Commodore Elliott, justifying his conduct, jack-asses and all; and spoke of the merits of the Commodore. He is doubtless an experienced seaman, and a meritorious commander, but he has not the address to improve the gale

or breeze wh^h may spring up in his favor. No man living, or dead has attempted to aid more than myself, and yet he never seems to make the best use of the gale or current in his favor. Perhaps he is right. His predecessors courted the federal influential men in Boston and in Washington and fetched where they looked, while Elliot has done more real service in the Charlestown Navy Yard than all the Commodores from the lubberly Nicholson down to lubberly D----. I leave them all to their own devices - their dipsoy-leads and main tacks - their trade winds, and their Mediterranean log-books, and private secretaries; and discarding them all, and stick to my faithful compass.

'Hail adamantine steel! Magnetic Lord
King of the plough and the sword.'

Mar. 5, 1839.

Of the eleven children I am the only one now left upon earth. I can do about everything as usual but make a pen, and half my time have recourse to steel ones, altho' this is written with the quill of the venerable benefactor the goose of famous Roman celebrity.

This month of March 1839 is a epoch in my eventful life. I shall read less of newspapers and write more of myself. Expect to take my leave of Buckingham's Courier. He has just returned a communication wh^h I wrote in favor of Com. Elliot, which was just right, better than burning it. * * I shall quarrel with no man, neither be cool towards any one. 'Live & let live' and affront no man for thinking different from myself.

Mar. 9, 1839.

Wrote to Hon. Levi Lincoln heretofore our prudent and worthy Governor, in favor of my old and valued friend Commodore Elliot, detailing my opinion of him as a persecuted man, by the inveterate federalists.

Mar. 11, 1839.

Dr. John Stevens Bartlett, now resident in Marblehead called on me, and read to me a very well written petition to the Legislature, now in session against the claims & conduct of the Mass^{ts} Medical Society praying them to annul the Charter of that Association, for powerful reason therein assigned. I have been applied to before to cooperate in his views, and have been solicited to consent to be named President of a new Medical Society But I am too old. To expect a man to march at their head when he can hardly stand is unwise. Beside, my wained, and waining memory would I fear in a degree render me ridiculous. I have not the courage to consent that they make me up into a man of straw, and I am not bulky enough to make a scarecrow.

Mar. 14, 1839.

I am now contemplating to aid Dr. John Stevens Bartlett to prostrate and destroy the Massachusetts Medical Society.

Governor^{Bowdoin} was in all respects the first man in the Commonwealth of Mass^{ts}. He was, after Hancock resigned, through extreme severity of gout, chosen governor of this Commonwealth. He patronized me in everything that regarded the College, or rather the University of Cambridge.

Mar. 30, 1839.

Finished 19th Vol. of Scott's Novels. A wonderful production of a most extraordinary man.

April 1, 1839.

I have lost the best of the morning by listening to a long winded tedious neighbor - whose pretensions ought to go no further than making clay into bricks - The value of time, the most valuable of all

things is no more considered than the value of sunshine.
April 13-15, 1839.

In his entries under these dates the Doctor says he was the first to patronize Samuel Thompson, called Dr. Thompson, the founder of the Thompsonian system of medicine, so called.

In another place about this date, referring to a certain treatment which had obtained some foothold in New England for nervous disorders, he writes,-

"I have gone one step towards its expulsion by denouncing the introduction of warm bathing, and those emollients of the mind, introduced originally by that idle drabble tail Clarissa Richardson, of equivocal celebrity, with her heap of anodyne poultices, long used without success, for oedematous swellings.

Nonsense has raised her head & voice in all ages of the world and regions of this globe."
April 27, 1839.

"I am indisposed not absolutely sick."

After commenting at some length on his lameness he writes,-

"I tried to walk it away, and they (his muscles) resented it; and I have concluded not to provoke the old man. If I knew how to smoke a pipe without extreme nausea, I w^d pursue it through fire and smoke. But I hate to try experiments on myself."

May 3, 1839.

Washington Allston, in some sense my elove, is now exhibiting his paintings in Boston; which, I apprehend, will add to his justly acquired reputation. I am sorry, however, to see in the newspapers laboured eulogiums on them. They speak for themselves and need no puffing by little trumpeters. He has considerately and properly sent us, as heretofore, tickets of admission. I feel an interest in his fame as a father for a son and his filial marks of respect are grateful to me.

May 10, 1839.

Reading Scott's history of Charles I. & II. I have a great deal to do and but little time to do it in, and must therefore work while it is day.

Middle of June.

One and only one dark spot of unhappyness, and that alas! I cannot alter, or alleviate, or help because it regards another person who I have not seen for at least nearly four years.

I am sorry I put off till this late hour, going on half way to 88 the history of the climacterical stages of human life.

June 27, 1839.

Went to see for the first time the Gariff (giraffe) and relish-

* Washington Allston, one of the most eminent painters America has produced, while at Harvard lived in the Waterhouse house. He made a pastel of Mrs. Waterhouse, the Doctor's mother, when she was nearly ninety years old.

ed the sight of that rare animal.
July 8, 1839.

Commenting on the over driving of horses by young men he writes,

"We have, however, great room for improvement as regards treatment of our horses and other beasts of labor. This distinguished town of Cambridge exhibits even on the Sabbath painful instances of violent and unfeeling usage of sumptuary horses by the young men from Boston, while those of the college are not free from the reproach. I never countenanced my own children in shooting of birds, or catching fish with the insidious bait, and hook for amusement. I have never failed to inculcate humanity to all that lives on my children.
August 15, 1839.

He is reading the Life of Thomas Lawrence. "Assuredly no man has been more blessed with less effort than myself."

The truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth is the perfection of biographical duty and obligation, and a heavy one it is—a fearful one to a conscientious man.

That I have not done more is my own fault. My reputation was in my own hands.

Channing of Newport, R.I. was my school mate under Master John Sims who was a native of Boston and patronized by Martin Brimmer.
August 31, 1839.

In Northcote's Life of Sir Joshua Reynolds we have an account of the Grand style, which resembles or seems like looking into an intense fiery furnace, all blazing with heat, smoke, soot and cinders, and a heap of ashes. That cannot be made intelligible to common sense, is very like that non-entity which the People call Nonsense. To get some notion of it, read the 50 last pages of the first volume of Northcote's Life of Reynolds.

This has been the best commencement I ever attended. The precocity of the youth surprised me; far beyond my own youthful day. To me they seem as if they stood in the advancement of our American world, and all this obtained without severity. On the contrary the friends of manly gratitude and self-respect.
Sept. 10, 1839.

Reading with deep interest Southey's History of the Peninsular war.

My own mother came when an infant from Wensladale in Yorkshire with her parents to settle in Pennsylvania but putting into Rhode Island through mistake, finally remained there.

It appears that Newport harbor, and its admirable inlets, outlets and convenient estuaries, will infalably render it the grand Naval Station of the Middle States.

We have destructive fires burning families out of house and home but we bring them on ourselves. They are from carelessness, and want of prudence and bad management; hot ashes & coals of fire put by in a half-bushel, or some other dry vessel. Catching their curtains afire by reading after they get into bed or some equally prudent procedure."

He then goes on to describe how many less fires they have in England, Scotland, Holland and other European countries.

Altho people very generally tell me I look and move about as

lively as two years ago, I myself know better. Constant reading of history in every sense tends to regulate my downward march.
October 4, 1839.

The history of the Lombardy poplar, a beautiful tree, introduced into Cambridge from Italy about sixty years ago by Dr. B. Waterhouse, and first reared in his garden at the north side of Cambridge Common, and which thrives now in America better than in France or in Italy. (He imported this tree about 1780.)
Oct. 9, 1839.

Judge Theophilus Parsons encouraged me to call it henceforth the Kine Pock, as being precisely synonymous (with) Cowpock. As this came so near in sound to kind, or mildest small pox, I adopted it; and it has prevailed accordingly. The members of the Mass^{ts} Medical Society in Boston, at least a majority of them persisted in calling it Cowpock, because they did in England, and because all the little ones, and Essex Junto men with their Giant at their head were not fond of calling it after my denomination, from an opposition whose origin was rivalry or professional jealousy. My name of it took with the people and universally prevailed here. President Jefferson patronized it under my designation, and so did honest, and indefatigable Sylvanus Faneuil so that what is Cow pock in England is Kine pock in these United States. It was curious to see, if not useful that our Tories or anglo-mains avoided as much as possible my designation of Kine and stuck to the cow-house. This drove me to practise a finesse which excited the laughter of the public; for I made my opponents adopt the language I wished, and pursue the very steps, and use the very language that most served my purpose. I made the Selectmen of Boston go to the expense of a public experiment to prove, the prophylactic efficacy of the Kine pock, in which all the younger part of the faculty heartily joined under a notion that it was in opposition to me, when I was in fact the Father of it. I confess it was a cunningly devised scheme in which I made them my cat's paws so completely that they could not upbraid me with duplicity without confession their own violations of honor. My victory was so complete that Dr. Charles Jervis & Samuel Danforth said to his brethren - 'Waterhouse has gone to windward of you so completely that you had better be silent.' The Boston Selectmen with Isiah Doane at their head gave me all the credit I could wish or deserved.
Oct. 11, 1839.

Nothing can exceed the abuse, or rather 'black guard' of Robert Southey, when speaking of Bonaparte's conduct in Spain. He effects to disdain to mention the wretch. He calls him the Intruder! and while he is burlesquing himself, he effects to denounce the contemptible Corsican, in insinuating, that He, Robert Southey scorns to defile English paper with so vile a creature. Now I would go a few miles, and give 25 cents to see this Robert Southey - this puffed up frog of an Englishman who speaks of Napoleon Bonaparte as a beast, void of all feelings of humanity - of a man, without seeming to know what an odious picture he draws of himself. I put Robert Southey down to the very bottom of the list of British Historians. Were I travelling I would avoid the raxx stage coach he rode in, and the packet he sailed in. I would turn on the other side of the street rather than meet the contemptible blackguard; and yet I would never injure him as a fellowman, or refuse him shelter and food if he needed - I would only show my contempt for such a base historian.
Oct. 14, 1839.

It is now 40 years since I vaccinated my own child in this very room & house where I am writing this.

Oct. 30, 1839.

Yesterday had a long conversation with the President particularly as it concerned my grandson John Fothergill Waterhouse Ware who has been recently promoted from the ranks to the office of Proctor, much to my satisfaction, as that young man has many good qualities that if I mistake not will carry him to distinction. He will be respectable as a scholar, and if I do not over rate his qualities eminent as a man, for he has discretion as well as remarkable industry. He has chosen Divinity as his profession; and figure and manners bid fair to distinguish him, and I think his judgment and cast of mind may be so cultivated as to procure honor to himself and I hope reflect credit on his treble name.

Jan. 20, 1840.

Marcus Morton elected Governor and I rejoice that he belongs not to that domineering party called Federalists.

Jan. 25, 1840.

Inconsiderate people continue to pour in upon me tedious letters of inquiry respecting eruptive complaints, and from persons I never knew, nor heard of. It is doubly tedious in these short, damp days of midwinter. Though annoying I cannot help answering them, they are so confoundedly polite & flattering, and I so vain & foolish.

March 1, 1840.

And I alive and I as well in health as at any 1st of March I ever remember. Able to write five & sometimes six hours a day, and make nothing of it.

March 5, 1840. (His eighty-sixth birthday.)

My situation in the very pleasant town of Cambridge is inferior to none. In the far-famed County of Middlesex, scene of splendid deeds of and after our declaration of independence, where General Washington first drew his sword in its glorious cause in 1775. From the front windows of my study I take in a view of the whole ground, and I yet converse with some who conversed with that illustrious man when he took command here and began his glorious career. A sensible and very respectable lady (Madam Wendell, daughter to Brigadier General Brattle, a Royalist and refugee from his country) gave me the following anecdote:

'When Boston was occupied by the British there was some firing across Charles River between the British and our militia, which much alarmed our women and frightened our children. General Washington occupied the largest and best house in Cambridge. Directly opposite resided a widow lady, Mrs. Wendell, above-mentioned, who was filled with apprehension at the firing of cannon and bombs now and then between the shore of Boston and Cambridge. Mrs. Wendell's father was what is called a Tory or Royalist, or adherent to the cause of King George. She had apprehensions not only for her own safety, but that of her father in Boston. He (Washington) therefore stopped his horse before her window and said to her: 'Madam! there is no reason for your apprehension of danger to your life here or to that of your father, from this noisy discharge of cannon and bombs*** You may rest in quiet repose, night and day, for aught I know to the contrary at present. Should danger approach you by night or day, you shall know in time, in common with your females, all to rest in safety.' And he never passed that window without a bow of protection to both Whig and Tories. So that General Gage himself, had he come out of Boston to Cambridge, could not have said more to tranquilize the fears of the female part of the community than what Washington intimated to the numerous Tories of Cambridge.'

Cambridge, the seat of the University, was the residence of nu-

merous Aristocrats, or what the opposite party called Tories, or in their more civil language Royalist, while the republicans called themselves Sons of Liberty, of whom John Hancock, James Bowdoin and Thomas Cushing were leaders, and wh^h still exist under the name of Republicans, whereof Marcus Morton the present Governor is one, and Benjamin Waterhouse is another. I record with entire satisfaction my entire Republicanism.

July? 1840?

The following was cutt out of a London News Paper, and sent over here by a Lady, on her travels in Europe.

'Humbug.'

'The learned Dr. Waterhouse, justly denominated the American Jenner, while Professor of Natural History in Harvard University, some years ago, made an artificial insect, to the limbs of wh^h he could communicate motion while he held it in his hand. After exhibiting it to the class he was lecturing, and permitting every pupil to inspect it, none of whom could tell to what class of insects it belonged, though they all believed it to be a real living creature, the Dr. thus addressed them - 'I suppose young gentlemen, you wish to be informed of the name of this bug: had you examined it more attentively, you would have perceived that it was a Humbug!'

Oct.4,1840.

Reading lately the Memoirs of Dr. J. Coakley Lettson.

Oct.26,1840.

Reading Horace Walpole's Correspondence from 1775 to 1797.

Nov.9,1840

"Election Day." He dont dare to go out in the rain to vote but sends two votes his "gardiner & coachman filled up to the throat & fingers end with good Whig principles."

Dec.10,1840.

He is reading his own work, "Journal of Dartmore Prisoner." Is much pleased with it, and writes,- "President Jefferson told several beside myself that he put the volume out of his hand only to take his food & to go to bed and so said many others; and my present or last perusal of it convinces me that they expressed what they felt. Major General Dearborn has expressed again & again the same opinion. It is a moral book. It contains valuable matter.

Many a man wishes he had written less; but I do not wish that I had burned an entire page of any of the MSS. Yet some of my own flesh & blood wished me to expunge some pages of it, and some toryfied ones never to print it at all !!! Such is the weakness of party.

Jan.22,1841.

I have rec'd annually a printed invitation to dine in public with the Professors and Governors of this University, but always declined the eating part. My brother Dr. Henry Ware senior, and I always walked together in the Procession from the Library to the Meeting house and sat together. Last year I deviated so far from my annual custom as to dine with the President, Overseers, Corporation & immediate gov^t in their tent near the estate of old Dr. Appleton, and my valued friend Parson Hilliard.'

In commenting on President Quincy's Memoirs of Harvard College he writes,- "It will be seen that I claim the credit of having commenced, established and carried a series of many years the Science of Mineralogy in the United States. I hope to be remembered as the fos-

tering Father of it: But my undeviating principles of Republicanism is not now the fashionable doctrine of the day wherein federalism, falsely so called, lifts up its head & triumphs.
Feb. 21, 1841.

He writes that he never resigned his professorship "and the appointment of James Jackson on to it was secret, clandestine base & fraudulent. It led that honorable man Lieut. Governor William Gray to give me one thousand dollars, besides being bondsman unasked for the rent of a house in Milk St. belonging to the Old South church.

I always made it a rule of my life to associate with those who were above myself & older as Lieut. Gov. Cushion, Dr. Bulfinch, Deacon Newel, Phillips, Rev. Dr. Mather-Parker, Byles - Chauncy & Howard, but Gov^r Bowdoin was my fulcrum on which I chiefly rested and turned; and I should by all means mention Sir John Temple, Baronet. Without taking pains to seek them I had very honorable patrons."

Referring to what he calls the "intrigues" at Harvard he says, It is remarkable that I always 'fetched where I looked,' and never once fell to leeward. I had better luck than I deserved all this life to this blessed day! My copper or Cent always turned up heads.

The best friend I ever found in Cambridge was the Rev^d & learned Dr. Ed^d Tigglesworth Prof. of Divinity. He continued my friend all his life. (He says he gave his lectures on Natural History in Harvard in 1783 at the earnest solicitation of Dr. Tigglesworth.)

That a monster of misery is an unfeeling young woman. Who, or rather what so near an angel with proper feelings.
August 18, 1841.

I distinctly remember when Peter Mumford was the travelling post-master between Boston and New York through Newport, Rhode Island, on horse-back. At length we could send to Boston for a pound of green tea; and when P.M. rode in a green chair some of our epicures, as my preceptor Dr. Halliburton coaxed Mumford to bring a salmon, when we made a feast for the Post-Master, who was then a great man and not a little courted. He wore a gold-laced hat, and was considered almost equal to the captain of a British sloop of war.
Friday Sept. 3, 1841.

Have relinquished the notion of employing a Barber. I shaved myself as sleek as ever this morning.

My respect for these British officers was lamented by my Father, who could hardly endure the sight of any of them. But when I was a child I thought as a child.
May 31, 1842.

He writes he stopped shaving himself.
Commencement Day.

To go or not to go that is the question.
June 1842.

Last night was perpetrated one of the most atrocious deeds ever known to be perpetrated in Harvard College, nothing less than the explosion of a bomb-shell of the largest size, say thirteen inches, which tore and nearly spoilt three rooms, - and called it sport. Most of the inhabitants were aroused by (it). It beats for atrocity anything I ever heard in England, Scotland, Ireland or in (any) part of America. Its baseness, meanness, and cowardice, its disgracefulness, is enough to dishonor the name of everything that partakes of the name of a college. The culprit richly merits a thick coat of tar and feathers and to be whipped at the cart's tail out of Cambridge; instead of the honors of College, nothing but dishonor and black disgrace should stick to him wherever he attempted to lurk.

Sept. 1842.

I am reading Memoirs of the R.I. bar. I knew Gen. Nathaniel Greene who was a Quaker.

My father was from Piscataqua in N.H. who are a species of Pine-knott-people, tough & hardy.
Dec. 1842 or 1843.

The curse of Newport Rhode Island was their numerous Distill Houses. Their hot fiery Rum was sent to Guenea for slaves, and they carry an increasing curse with them - I am glad that neither I nor my family at Rh. Island ever had anything to do with that debased race. I rejoice in the thought that Negro Slavery is nearly done up at Rhode Island.

The last entry, which was made April 14, 1844, is as follows,-

"All the seed which I myself have sown broad-cast has not all rotted in the ground. Some of my feeble efforts must have prospered, even at this late hour of my day. Some very useful things would probably never existed or been postponed to a late and chilling distance of time, but for my exertions. I cut the claws and wings of small pox, & in the venerable Dr. Sawyer's opinion uprooted if not destroyed several contagious disorders. ~~***~~ I am not, I hope, a boaster, but I have done my part. Perhaps the love of fame may have had its full share in (this). This passion must not be too severely condemned. It is the food, the wholesome food, of diffusing blessings throughout the land. The Bible teaches throughout the Love of Praise. Deprive men of it and you hamstring them. He who indulges honest industry is a Patriot, and a true patriot is a Nobleman, and ought to be honored. I wish we had more of them."

Professor Waterhouse died at his home, Oct. 2, 1846, in the ninety third year of his age.

The Boston & Medical & Surgical Journal in its issue of October 7th. in announcing his death says,- "Although for many years past his age and infirmities have withheld him from the arena of Medical affairs, yet during the active part of his life, very few physicians have held a more conspicuous place in the public observation."

He was buried in Mount Auburn cemetery and a granite monument stands upon the lot with the following inscriptions,- (See next page.)

First Side.

BENJAMIN WATERHOUSE M.D.

BORN 4 MARCH, 1754

IN NEWPORT, RHODE ISLAND

WHERE BEGAN

HIS CLASSICAL AND MEDICAL

EDUCATION.

IN 1775 HE WENT TO EUROPE,

IT

AND COMPLETED IN THE SCHOOLS

OF LONDON, EDINBURGH, AND LEYDEN.

IN 1782 HE RETURNED HOME,

THENCEFORTH

HIS RIPPENED POWERS

AND VARIOUS ATTAINMENTS

WERE DEVOTED

TO THE ADVANCEMENT OF SCIENCE

AND THE INTERESTS OF HUMANITY.

Second Side.

IN 1783 HE WAS CHOSEN

THE FIRST PROFESSOR

OF THE THEORY AND PRACTICE

OF PHYSIC

IN HARVARD COLLEGE.

THE APPROPRIATE DUTIES

OF HIS OFFICE

HE DISCHARGED FOR THIRTY YEARS,

AND ALSO PROMOTED

BY HIS LABORS

A TASTE FOR THE KINDRED SCIENCE

OF NATURAL HISTORY.

IN 1800 HE INTRODUCED

TO THE NEW WORLD

THE BLESSING OF VACCINATION,

OVERCAME

POPULAR PREJUDICE AND DISTRUST

BY TESTING IT ON HIS OWN CHILDREN,

AND THUS ESTABLISHED A TITLE

TO THE GRATITUDE OF FUTURE AGES.

Third Side.

HE DIED IN CAMBRIDGE

2 OCTOBER 1846.

THIS MONUMENT
IS ERECTED BY HIS WIDOW
IN TESTIMONY
OF HIS PRIVATE WORTH
AND OF HIS MERIT
AS A PUBLIC BENEFactor.

The fourth side of the monument is blank. The date of his birth on the same, March 4 is evidently an error for in his Journal Dr. Waterhouse repeatedly refers to the 5th. of March as his birthday.

The works of Professor Waterhouse, in addition to those on vaccination already mentioned, are,-

"On the principles of Vitality." A discourse, in Boston, June 8, 1790, before the Humane Society of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

"The rise, progress, and present state of Medicine." A discourse, delivered at Concord, July 6th., 1791, before the Middlesex Medical Association. Pub. 1792. 31 Pages.

"A Journal of a young man of Massachusetts, late a surgeon on board an American privateer, who was captured at sea by the British in May, 1813, and was confined first at Melville Island, Halifax, then at Chatham in England and last at Dartmoor prison, interspersed with observations, anecdotes and remarks, tending to illustrate the moral and political character of three nations." This was published in 1816, and is the book the Professor says President Jefferson said he could not lay aside, except for his meals and to go to bed, until he had finished reading it.

"A circular letter to the surgeons of the different posts in the second military department of the United States army. Pub. 1817. 24 pages.

An essay on "Tussis Convulsiva, or, whooping-cough. With observations on the diseases of children." Pub. 1822. 152 pages. Dr. Martin says this "is a very carefully and practically written volume, forgotten and excessively rare, but well worth consideration and study even now."

"Oregon, or, a short history of a long journey from the Atlantic Ocean to the regions of the Pacific, by land; drawn up from the

notes of John B. Wyeth." Pub. 1833. 87 pages.

"An essay on Junius and his letters; embracing a sketch of the life and character of William Pitt, earl of Chatham, and memoirs of certain other distinguished individuals; with reflections historical, personal, and political, relating to the affairs of Great Britain and America from 1763 to 1785." This work, a large octavo volume in which he seeks to prove that the author of these letters was Lord Chatham, was his most ambitious literary production, and was published in 1831. 449 pages. In his Journal he calls it his "opus magnum" and writes,—"I have just re-perused my Essay on Junius and his Letters, and am neither afraid or ashamed to risk my reputation on it."

The question considered in this book was, at one time, the subject of much speculation and discussion. Some idea of the interest taken in the matter may be obtained from the fact that there are some fifty books in the Boston Public Library on this topic and claiming to prove that many different men were the authors of the "Letters." In his preface or "preliminary view" Professor Waterhouse says,-

"Much has been said in America, and more in Britain, on this celebrated question,- Who was the author of those famous Letters, which appeared in the early part of the reign of King GEORGE THE THIRD, under the signature of JUNIUS?

These Letters were intended, it seems, for the English nation generally, but addressed, most of them, nominally, to certain individuals of the highest rank in it. They were of a character to attract great attention in that country and in this, by their facts, their boldness, and their splendid diction. They first appeared in a London Newspaper, entitled 'The Public Advertiser, printed by Henry Sampson Woodfall, a man well educated, complete in his business, and of discreet, steady, and respectable character in his profession." Then the Professor

continues, "We have taken hold of a gnarled question. ** This essay is a new attempt to disentangle the most important and artfully contrived secret of modern times, the development of which will open curious matter for speculation. It has already exercised the wits of the first men of the age; until conjecture has been wearied and fallen asleep. *** From that time" I found leisure ** to read all I could find that had been written by others. *** I was convinced that people looked too low for the author of Junius - among the weeds and shubbery, instead of the oaks and elms of Old England, or else I magnified the production. I compared its style and diction with the prose writings of Milton, with Swift, with the precise Gibbon and Johnson, with the luxuriant Burke, and thought I discovered something in Junius superior to any of them, - a personal ardor, a feeling, a deep experience, a self-conviction, a patriotic enthusiasm, and a martyr-like devotion in risking discovery, and all sublimed by a fire better regulated than that of Dante or Milton. I could find nothing that amalgamated with the best Letters of Junius but the best Speeches of Lord Chatham."

The Professor tells us in his Journal that he wrote a defence of Napoleon Bonaparte, in 12 numbers, against the very severe remarks of William Ellery Channing, over the signature "Layman," which appeared in the Boston Patriot. "My remarks," he says, "on Cholera Maligna appeared in the Boston Courier. Many fugitive Essays on various subjects have occasionally appeared in the Columbian Centinel, more in the Boston Patriot and not a few in the Courier.- The Independent Whig would make a volume by itself - My Essays on Painting need revision - My vindication of the character and conduct of his Excellency John Quincy Adams against the attacks of Col. Timothy Pickering speak for themselves, and are valuable history. A sketch of the life and character of Gilbert Charles Stuart and particulars of my own were lent to Mr. James Herring of New York."

** after dismissal from Harvard.*

The Professor also tells us that while he was preparing his first lectures on mineralogy "he was engaged in writing the Natural and civil History of Mass., or rather of New England, in the form of letters to Dr. John Coakley Lettison, in London. These were calculated to make two sizeable 8vo. volumes. The subjects principally treated, beside Natural History, were - the Constitution of the U.S. and of Mass., particularly of Elections. The system of free schools and of colleges, particularly of Cambridge College. Of the democratical election and the establishment of the Ministers of religion. The Militia, and of citizen-soldier, compared with the British soldier. The state of agriculture. The use of oxen, and the probability of taming the Buffaloe for the same service; and on the ill treatment of our horses, accompanied with drawings. The progress of architecture, from the rudest log house to the best houses in our sea ports, with drawings by Mr. Allston. Of Fire Societies. Of ship-building, and of the sea-faring life; and the prospect of our future naval greatness. Of insanity and suicide, comparing these calamities in America with those that occur in England. Of the peculiar character of the New England yeomanry. Under the head of Nat. History, Mineralogy was particularly treated; and under the Hist. of Cam. Col. the Cabinet of Min. was minutely described, accompanied with an accurate drawing. Mr. Lawman, book-seller in London, successor to Mr. Dilly, so often mentioned by Boswell in his life of Dr. Johnson, had engaged to print it. The Mss. was put into the hands of a learned reviser and was never seen again."

Professor Waterhouse believed that the manuscript was purposely destroyed because of criticisms of England which it contained. The drawings, mostly made by Mr. Allston to be used for engravings, were returned .

Dr. Martin, in referring to the Professor's literary activities, says,- "The mention of these works however, gives but a partial and imperfect notion of his literary labors or its results, which are to be found scattered among the various secular and medical journals of his time. Results produced, let it be remembered, because such men as he must work, must strive for the good and improvement of humanity, and their profession, not because he had any of those auspicious stimuli of success, popularity, applause and wealth which excite and reward an author. It would be hard to imagine an atmosphere more chilling and paralyzing, a sky more leaden, forbidding, even threatening than surrounded and hung over the whole literary life of Waterhouse from the first day that he yielded to the glittering bait of a professorship and the honor of being founder of the first medical school of New England."

Besides his published works and articles Prof. Waterhouse had a very extensive correspondence with Jenner, Lettson, King, Hunter and many other leaders of medicine in England and on the Continent and with several of our Presidents, Governors, Presidents of colleges, Clergymen and many of the most distinguished physicians in this country. His letters to Dr. Lettson were published in Pettigrew's Life of Lettson. They are very interesting, as revealing the state of affairs in this country at the time they were written, and extracts from them will be given later.

Among the publications referred to by the Professor in the list mentioned in his Journal, as already noted, is the series of articles over the signature, "An Independent Whig." We have quoted from them quite extensively, on the preceding pages, and ^{now} want to notice them as a whole and at somewhat more length.

As we have seen Professor Waterhouse felt that he had been unfairly treated at various times by his college associates and the col-

lege government, and he considered that he had been dealt with very severely and unjustly in being dismissed from his professorship. He believed that the seriousness of the charges against him had been unduly magnified and he particularly resented the reflections which these charges and certain remarks which had been made by some connected with the college had cast upon his honor and character.

In one place he says that in the Corporation, composed of seven members, Dr. Jackson, at one time, had a father, an uncle and a cousin, thereby implying that in any question at issue before this body or in any case of possible preferment nearly one half of its membership would be ~~prejudiced~~ prejudiced against him from the start because of family relationships.

In a letter to the Board of Overseers, dated Mar. 21, 1811, he writes, - "As to that part of the vote of the Corporation which relates to salaries & to pecuniary compensations for injury sustained in my income, they are comparatively, no object with me. I and my family consider them all as dirt in the street, compared to the desire which I and they have that this board, and the public, should know the truth, and the whole truth, respecting the Natural history business; the collection of the Minerals; and Medical matters."

Again in addressing the Committee of Overseers who were hearing him on his memorial to the Board that they would not concur with the Corporation in his dismissal he says, - "And I beg this Honorable Committee to examine rigidly, and patiently, and candidly, this ungenerous accusation of duplicity and want of veracity, for here a blemish is attempted to be fixed on my character - a stain, that, if left behind, is enough to tarnish every good action of my life. *** My ideas, gentlemen, of the sacredness of truth, may be peculiar and refined. I learnt it from the Bible. *** Your Memorialist, my Hon. and Rev. Sirs! would sooner and his days in a prison, than submit in silence, and without appeal from such a

tribunal, so partially conducted, and so unlike the genius and spirit of our laws."

When the Overseers finally voted to concur in his dismissal, "Dr. Waterhouse, and his friends, as stated on page 432, avowed their determination of appealing to the public, as the only mode left in a country where the press was free to utter the voice of complaint." This appeal was made through these "Independent Whig" articles. They were begun in the Boston Patriot Oct. 17, 1812 and were continued through forty-four numbers into the year 1814. They give practically a history of all the Doctor's activities in connection with the college together with many incidents of his life before that time which had a bearing upon his work at Harvard. It will be remembered that Dr. Waterhouse says in his Journal that the first Pres. Adams read every line of these articles and told the Doctor that it was the most even spun thread of any narrative he ever read.

The first article is wholly introductory and we will give it entire as showing, to some extent, the character of the series.

"To the Hon. the Senate, in their capacity of Overseers
of Harvard College."

"The ancient tenure of your office as overseers of the College, and your being very seldom called upon to act in that capacity are the principal reasons of that remarkable backwardness, and diffidence in the Senators from the distant counties, when convened as overseers. It has been long observed that when sitting as a Senate, the members from the country speak freely and with proper confidence; but when convened with the Governor and Council, and the Reverend the President of the College and the Clergy, the country gentlemen whisper to one another, but very few of them ever venture to speak out loud; and so they allow the Corporation, and one or two Boston lawyers, and two or three clergymen of Boston, to bring forward and ratify whatever they please. I solemnly aver that I have heard Senators again and again declare in conversation, that what with the ignorance of their powers and privileges as overseers, and what with the novelty of the scene in having the Governor, Council & Clergy sitting with them, they have sat as listeners, and allowed the business to go on without inquiry or remark, and have concurred with things they did not understand, and rat-

ified measures which, when explained, they highly disapproved; and it has long been remarked in Boston by the clergy, as a sort of standing clerical joke, that two or three of them belonging, at the same time, to both Corporation and overseers, conduct the business of the College just as they please. So that it seems that the board of overseers do very little more than register the deeds of the corporation, without ever examining them as closely as if they were acts of the general court. There be sure, many things, such as the confirmation of the choice of Tutors, and a quarterly routine of business, that from its uniform recurrence requires confirmation as a matter of course, and this has contributed in a great measure to divert the members of the Senate from this part of their duty.

Another idea has prevailed, and great pains have been taken to fix the impression strong and deep, and that is, that the Reverend and Hon. the Corporation of Harvard College, always has been, and still is composed of men of such clear discernment, and such perfectly pure and spotless views, that it was presumption to call either their knowledge or motives in question. Great pains have been taken of late, to rivet this ecclesiastico-political notion, but in vain. Whatever may have been once believed, when Willard, Bowdoin, Wigglesworth, Howard and Storer were of the corporation, we will not undertake to say; but we have no hesitation in saying that of late years, we believe as little in the infallibility of the corporation of Harvard, as we do in the infallibility of the Pope. If this notion existed seven years ago, facts, recent facts have dissipated the illusion, and have shown that there is not a corporation in the State that requires more checks and balances than this. The constitutional check to this once-conceived-infallible corporation is the Governor, Lt. Governor, the Council and the Senate of Massachusetts. This forms the civil check, to this old ECCELSIASTICAL Institution; but if, from any cause, the Senators should become inattentive and remiss in their duties, as overseers, then this board of seven Trustees may grow into a very powerful politico-ecclesiastical engine of oppression, operating wilfully and without controul.

Some have spoken unadvisedly when they have called the corporation of Harvard College, the STAR CHAMBER COURT of Massachusetts. All that we can allow ourselves to say of it is, that it is more like that famous English tribunal than any other institution in New England; as we shall hereafter attempt to illustrate.

One thing is very remarkable in this small board of seven Trustees, this self-creating body, and that is, they have surrounded themselves with a sacred halo, which while it magnifies them far beyond their natural size, is contrived so as to prevent a close examination, and their language has been and still is, 'keep far from us ye profane vulgari!' It is also remarkable that a citizen may discuss severely the doings of the Legislature, of the Executive, and of the Judiciary; but no man must draw back the sacredotal veil that conceals that sacred body, bearing the motto of 'Christo et Ecclesice,' and live; Nor not even the Representatives of the people must pry into this shaded enclosure! - You yourselves, though Senators of the Commonwealth, and the long regularly constituted ex-officio overseers, or Inspectors, of the deeds of the seven Trustees, have been discouraged from executing an important part of your duty. You are to suppose that the Hon. and Reverend the corporation of Harvard College, like the King of England, can do no wrong! and under this belief you are to concur with every act which they lay before you! Something however has been going on for two or three years in the Corporation,

and in the Medical department of the University which is like to give all this monastic dust to the winds. Without counting the cost, or duly estimating their own powers, they undertook, in conjunction with a medical combination, consisting of five Professors, beleagued together, to run down the sixth, and bury him under the surface, and then to divide among them his inheritance, without even once reflecting that such a deed cannot be perpetrated in such a country as this, where the Press is free.

To render all this more intelligible, we briefly mention that about 30 years ago, the University instituted three Medical Professorships; all with equal powers and privileges, and that these carried on their respective offices for more than five and twenty years, after which a combination was formed among these medical gentlemen to exclude one of them from office, principally with a view of introducing the son of a particular friend; and likewise the son and son-in-law of one of the professors, as shall be detailed in our next number. In the meantime, should any of the privileged order sternly enquire who is this who dares to speak so freely of the Hon. and Reverend the Corporation of Harvard College? It is little or nothing who he is, provided you know what he is. He is a man entirely American in his feelings and principles; totally rejecting all foreign influence, whether British or Gallic; an inveterate enemy to the dividers of the Union, and of the people from their Magistrates; a respecter of the clergy, so long as they respect themselves; an advocate for commerce and for its protection; an undeviating disciple of George Washington; a firm and steady supporter of American independence, and a fearless champion of the LIBERTY OF THE PRESS; or, to express it all in one word

An Independent Whig.

Prof. Waterhouse begins his second article thus,- "Taking advantage of the glorious Liberty of the Press, a citizen ventured to address you last Saturday, under the name of An 'Independent Whig' because he has every reason for believing that his Independent Whiggism has been the principal cause of that wretched persecution he has endured for six years past, from a quarter where he had a right to expect a different treatment.

In the twelfth article we find this,- "What shall we call that state of Society wherein the first magistrate of the nation shall be called in the public prints of Boston a liar?"* and even the Governor of the Commonwealth called in the newspapers a liar, a fool, and an incendiary?"

*

President Adams had been called such by the Editor of the Centinel.

After the fifteenth article was printed the following "Communication" appeared in the Patriot from which we take the following,- "It may be no very hard matter to kill the Independent Whig, and it may be possible, considering the factious and partial spirit that now and then appears, that he may be imprisoned; but if that writer be Dr. Waterhouse we venture to say, for we know the man, that you cannot scare him, nor divert him from his intention. He will tell his own story in his own way, be the consequences what they may. You may possibly take the life of such a man, but you cannot arrest his pen, nor stifle the voice of his just complaint."

It is evident from the above that these articles were beginning to arouse considerable feeling in the community and in the issue of May 15, 1813, of the Federalist paper the Columbian Centinel, there appeared the first of several articles purporting to refute many of the charges of "An Independent Whig" and claiming that the motives the writer attributed to some of the ~~other~~ professors in past controversies were not facts but products of his imagination. Dr. Waterhouse sent ~~an article~~ a communication to the Centinel in reply to these articles but the editor refused to publish it which brought forth an article by the Doctor in the Patriot of June 5, 1813, over the signature "An Injured Citizen" headed as follows,-

"Remarks on the Conduct of the Editor of the Columbian Centinel, for publishing a false and scandalous piece against a citizen and refusing to admit into his paper a contradiction of it."

The following abstracts from the remarks,-

"The piece or pieces here complained of, are clearly 'actionable;' but the citizen injured disdained to have recourse to the laws, provided the same press which spread the calumny had been left free to combat it. He told the Editor of the Centinel that he would be content that he should publish three columns of whatever his writer chose to say of him, provided he would allow him half a column in refutation of it. And what could be fairer."

Finally the Centinel did admit a short reply from Doctor Waterhouse and came the third and last article against him "containing," he says, "if possible, a greater portion of lies than the other two. A piece was sent in reply, but Major Russell refused to insert it." The Doctor comments on this as follows,- After being the slavish instrument of spreading abroad a false and scandalous publication, he excludes the refutation of it; and allows the 'Boston Rebel' to retreat behind the curtain in safety. *** An unprincipled defamer such as is the notorious 'Boston Rebel', knows that a successful lie must have a certain infusion of truth, or it will not go down, and this amalgamation is the test of his skill; as too much truth would defeat the ends of his mischief, and too little would destroy the belief of the hearer; and no man among has studied and practised this jesuitical art of deformation so constantly and so villianously, as the notorious calumniator of Jefferson, Adams, Madison, Cerry, Gray, Grundy and Austin; and no man is in a fairer road of an exemplary punishment. To try him and execute him regularly, we must go back sixteen years. All the papers were not burnt; and Col. Aaron Burr, and three or four more are still living."

It is evident that Dr. Waterhouse had his friends in this controversy for a few days later the following appeared in the Patriot.

"An injured man struggling against a combination of enemies, cannot but excite the indignation of every honorable member of society.- we believe there are but few instances, in which science has met with such malicious and disgraceful opposition as in the transactions toward Dr. Waterhouse. While his writings bear the strongest sense of sensibility for the despicable conduct of his opponents, yet the language with which he expresses his detestation, preserves the dignified character of a gentleman and a scholar.- Why has this gentleman become the object of professional persecution?- Why is he deprived of the means of subsistence, by removing him from an office, which for so many years he so honorably discharged?- It does not appear that the most trifling charges against him were ever substantiated, though viewed through the scrutinizing eye of his defamers.- It may be asked 'What evil has he done,' that such cruel punishments has followed? That his family must suffer by a deprivation of those means which he had reason to contemplate as the sources of maintenance at his advanced age? Is it generous, is it magnanimous to depress a man, who in

*The editor.

all his transactions appears laboring to promote the cause in which he is engaged? The duties of the college he must have discharged with faithfulness, as almost the whole collective anxiety of his particular Professorship has taken place within the period of his appointment. His assiduity in this branch is not the only thing which entitles him to esteem. The introduction of the Kine Pock is principally owing to him. If some of his present opponents had been as persevering to establish the validity of the system as Dr. Waterhouse, we doubt not they would have received some ample reward for their services. We hope however, this injured man will eventually triumph over his enemies, and convince the world, that even in Massachusetts science will be protected, however formidable and malicious the opposition."

"A Friend to Merit."

Here is another article published in the Chronicle.

"In perusing the publications of the 'Independent Whig', we cannot but consider Dr. Waterhouse as being unfairly and ungenerously treated by those who duty it was to assist and encourage him in his undertakings. The public have long been convinced that this gentleman has not been patronized with that liberality which others of much less merit have received. His persevering exertions to bring into repute the Kine Pock inoculation, entitle him to the highest rewards which a benevolent and grateful society can bestow. Thirty years ago if a person should have introduced a system of medical practice so effectually to check the distressing consequences of the Small Pox, it would have been considered as one of the greatest blessings the world ever enjoyed. While bounties for minor objects in the science of medicine and surgery are yearly offered from various institutions, the principal organ through which the Kine Pock has been introduced into New England States, has not only been personally calumniated, but exposed to all the pitiful effusions of malice, jealousy, and pecuniary deprivations. The Doctor will ever receive the applause of all men whose minds are enlightened with science, and will we trust triumph over the little pettifogging tricks of his adversaries."

In the same paper, June 9, 1813, in which appeared the article signed "A Friend to Merit" was a communication signed "W" evidently from the pen of Dr. Waterhouse giving further interesting comment on the Press of that day. viz.,-

"It is through the instrumentality of the press, that the great mass of the people can be influenced by truth, or by falsehood. The reception of either depends pretty much on fashion;— yes, on fashion. It was rendered fashionable among what some proudly call 'the first circles in Boston,' to denominate the old republican paper, the Independent Chronicle, the LYING Chronicle. One of the Governors appointed the Attorney General & the Solicitor General. one a republican & the other a federalist to examine the papers for libel & the Chronicle, republican, had 8 and the Centinel, federalistx paper, 51.

Whether the Press shall be finally a blessing or a curse to this

country, must depend on our taste or fashion. *** A Press conducted on fair and honest principles is the Palladium of our liberties; but a Press without morals, is, not even excepting rum, the most powerful engine of the devil. An honorable Press should be encouraged and cherished, while an immoral one that prints lies and the foulest calumnies against the officers of government, and against private individuals is a common nuisance, and should be hunted out of the community, like a mad dog."

A few days after the above was printed the following "squib" appeared in headed "An Independent Whig," so probably written by the Doctor. ~~appeared in~~ ^{appeared in} the Patriot.

"It is curious that 'the Boston Rebel' should come out in the Centinel, stating in a furious manner the heads of his intended refutation and castigation of Dr. W. and all of a sudden stop, and file off with an 'adieu to you, Monsieur Doctor!' The fact was this. When he had got to No. 2, the Independent Whig, or else Dr. W. or else somebody for him, stuck a pin in the Rebel's gizzard! upon which he drew in his carbuncled nose under his shell, and we have seen no more of him; but in his place, out comes Bobadil, with the club of the LAW upon his shoulder."

Our last reference to this series of articles will be a quotation from the thirty-fourth, written about six months after the above communications were printed. In beginning this article he writes,-

"The Independent Whig has received not a small portion of advice, by various ways, principally through anonymous letters, with now and then a threat; He thanks all well meaning people for the first, while he sets the latter at defiance. He has hoisted his colors, and nailed them to the mast; fired a gun to windward; and is determined to ask no quarters from the combined forces.

When a man finds his literary and professional property pilfered from him; and above all, his character, precious to him as the apple of his eye, and dear as his hearts blood, defamed, the first, and natural effect of his resentment would be to strike the calumniating villian to the ground: or if his feelings allowed of deliberation, his resentment might then show itself in the more regular form of the duel; or, if his anger was under still more contrroll, he might, if he chose, have recourse to the laws. But if nature had deprived him the physical, or mechanical power of the first and most natural mode of punishing a villian; and if a religious scruple should restrain him from pursuing the second; and if he lived in a district where, and at a time when he had no confidence in the Judiciary, he would then, if the Press was free, prefer laying his injuries open to the common sense, and common feeling of his honest and humane neighbors. Or, in other words, he would tell his story in his own way, through the medium of a public paper.

We will now give a few extracts from Dr. Waterhouse's publish-

ed correspondence with Dr. ~~Klatsanxx~~ Ka Lettsom continuing over a period of about twenty years from 1791 to 1811.

Cambridge, Dec.4,1791.

"I am not absolute ly certain whether I received your very acceptable present of Clavigero's History of Mexico, with some otherr publications, before I sent the papers by my friend, Dr.Senter. If they came to hand since, I have now to express my obligations for them, and to tell you how much I was pleased and instructed by that very curious History of the Mexicans."

Cambridge, Nov.25,1794.

"Dictionary Johnson has somewhere observed, that there is an inequality which happens to every man, in every mode of exertion, manual or mental; that the mechanic cannot handle his hammer and his file at all times with equal dexterity; and that there are hours, he knew not why, when his hand is out; and I verily believe it is true, for this is the third evening that I have sat down, without any visible impediment, to write to my friend Dr. Lettsom, and I have not been able to cover one page before I felt disposed to tear up what I had written, and throw it in the fire. Why is it that intellectual vigour will sometimes desert a man, merriment confuse him, and objection disconcert him - and I may add, awkwardness overwhelm him - when neither ill health, nor low spirits, can be accused as the cause? *** At this season too we make our Congressional ruperes. Here the lowest labourer dares, and often does, vote contrary to the wish of his employer; and should the rich man presume to controul the vote of his dependant or servant, he would not escape the odium of his neighbors. It is, however, to be regretted, that in general we do not sufficiently consider the superior advantages and blessings we enjoy over every other people on earth; we are happy in our habits, our morals, and our form of government. Should Heaven in mercy preserve us still longer from the desolating and immoral effects of war, I shall hope our habits of peace will, as in Holland, save us from the destructive effects of that diabolical scourge for many generations to come.

This summer I have visited the medicinal springs of Saratoga in the State of NewYork, which are so celebrated among us that thousands resort to them in the course of a season from almost every State in the Union. In a newspaper which accompanies this, you will see a short account which I have given of them. I have been not a little gratified by this journey. I went nearly 300 miles from the sea-coast, and was about ten weeks travelling what may be called a magnificent country, yet very different from what the little big men who inhabit palaces and haunt courts would consider as worthy that epithet. I passed one mountain that was 28 miles over; and had four or five towns on it. At its summit, where Great Nature dwells in awful solitude, the surrounding prospect was pleasing, far beyond my powers of description. When afterwards I rode along the spacious Hudson, and saw this vast current winding majestically between enormous mountains, with here and there a stupendous cataract, I more clearly comprehended the cause of that elevation of thought manifested by a common soldier in our army during the war. When the army was encamped on the banks of this river, a private soldier, one day when off duty, amused himself by climb-

ing one of these huge mountains. When he had reached the pinnacal, his mind was so sublimely affected with the amazing height he found himself from the surface of the ~~xxxx~~ water, and the vast extent his eye reached, that he stretched forth his right arm, and gave the following words of command: 'Attention, the Universe! By kingdoms, to the right wheel-march!' This anecdote I had from Gen. Lincoln, and serves, I think, to show that situations affect the human mind more than writers on education are aware of.*** I went quite up to Lake George. ** To me it was the most beautiful picture I have yet found in the great book of Nature. I had some curiosity to see the field of battle where Burgoyne and Gates fought, as well as the spot where the former surrendered. General Gates himself happening to visit the Springs, I went with him, the Spanish Ambassador, and several others, to view this famous place. *** I always thought Burgoyne's expedition a very unwise scheme; I now saw it was an attempt worthy only of Don Quixote. An army of four times its force would not have marched to the sea-coast. When about to surrender, Burgoyne exclaimed with surprise! 'Hitherto I have fought with young men, and hired substitutes, but now I am opposed by the owners of the soil themselves;' a speech which shows how fit he was to plan a scheme of conquest in such a country. *** To give you an idea of the facility of travelling in this newly-settled country, I would just ~~xxxx~~ notice that we went from Cambridge to Saratoga in a coach and four, and returned without a single disagreeable accident; we were obliged indeed to employ oxen in some passes in the mountains. My particular excursions were made on horse-back, and often on foot.**** It is expected, I find, that I publish my excursion to Lake George; but I believe I shall disappoint them, and that for two reasons: first, it takes me much longer to write for the press than my friends imagine, and secondly, a man in my situation cannot afford it; people borrow books in this country, instead of buying them. A man who prints a work in this country, most commonly does it at a considerable loss."

Cambridge, Dec. 18, 1792.

"I am pleased, much pleased, with Dr. May's Treatise on Consumptions. I have been long dissatisfied with the old mode of treating this too fatal disorder, and was glad to see any probable plan that deviated from it. The first writer I have met with, who dared to deviate from the old track was Marryat, and the second is May. *** It is a disorder crowded with symptoms contra-indicating repeated bleedings."

Cambridge, Nov. 16, 1799.

"Yesterday I met with the Travels through the States of North America and the Provinces of Canada, in the years 1795, 96, and 97, by Isaac Weld, Jun., second edition, and have read the first volume, and merely run through the second, which relates to Canada. Of all the publications respecting the United States I have yet seen, it is the most despicable, and I feel mortified that such a series of malicious falsehoods should have passed through two impressions. If the design of the writer was to check the emigration of his countrymen, the Irish, I can forgive him, because we have too many already among us; but to offer that work to your respectable public as a true picture of American society and manners, is a disgrace to any man who knows the use of letters. **** It may be accounted for in another way; some young men have come over to America, from England and from Ireland, who have no

consequence in their own country, yet assume intolerable airs of importance in this; they appear to me to be of that class of men which you, in England, denominate 'Riders', who are sent by the merchants and manufacturers to settle accounts, and obtain orders. The haughty airs with which these little great men adorn themselves, are very disgusting to our quick-sighted peasantry and inn-keepers, who do not fail to tip their companions the wink, as much as to say, 'let us smoke this assuming foreigner,' and this they sometimes do to his mortification and disgust. *** Had this young traveller visited New England, and written in the same abusive strain of its inhabitants, I would certainly ~~xxxxxxxx~~ have addressed a letter to him through the medium of a London press."

Cambridge, March 9, 1801.

**** "The large seeds produce a squash, or rather pumpkin, of an admirable flavour. I found them on the Island of Nantucket, when I was called there about two years ago to see a patient.

I have filled up the box with a few ears of Indian corn; they are an uncommonly large size, and of my own growth. I grew (to use an Anglicism, which we Yankees smile at) about 160 bushels of such ears the past season. It makes the chief bread of my family; I prefer it to all others, and (behold the similarity of taste) so did General Washington; he never chose to breakfast without it. It is made with great expedition, simply by mixing it with boiling water and a little salt, and baking it before the fire for about fifteen minutes; hence it is called Johnny cake. We make it about a quarter of an inch thick; when it is brought on to the table we split it and butter it, and I prefer it to the richest cake ever invented.

My wife has also put in, to fill up the box, a sample of starch, of her own growth and manufacture. It is made of potatoes, ~~and~~ and manufactured by the children. ~~I have xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx~~ *** If it be a new thing with you, I will send a particular account of the process; for I take it that you are now under the necessity of studying how to save wheat."

Cambridge, April 22, 1801.

"Since writing the enclosed, I received your parcel, ** and also a packet from Dr. Jenner with fresh matter, and a lengthy and most admirable letter. It was, like his publications, plain and lucid beyond his compeers, displaying that perspicuity and dignified simplicity which is the peculiar ornament of genius. His letter is (excuse my enthusiasm) a ray of light from the east, and oh! that the reflected ray might become more brilliant; and even generative at the point of repercussion! I shall write to this primitive apostle by the Galen; should you in the meantime see him, make my most cordial acknowledgments to him; tell him he received not only my thanks, but the thanks of the American public; for the name of Jenner is familiar in every village in New England."

Cambridge, May 2, 1800.

"What a tedious length of time has elapsed since I had a line from you, or indeed, any of my old friends and correspondents in Eng-

land! Our non-intercourse has operated as cruelly on friendship as on trade. ** Where is Jenner? And where is Ring? There is, I hope, no embargo on their friendship. They, I hope, as well as yourself, have not passed any non-intercourse resolutions with their trans-atlantic friend. Be assured yourself, and tell them that I must still be allowed to send you my 'raw materials,' to be worked up by you all into those fine fabricks, which bear so high a price in every market of the civilized world. Are you aware that I have scarcely seen a sample from you these two years? For the honour of my country I am ashamed to tell Dr. Jenner how I have been treated by our legislature respecting remuneration. I have received nothing but abuse. *** Were I a single man, and without children, I would go to England; if not to live there, at least to die there. You do not knock a man on the head in Britain because he exerts himself more than his neighbors do.

The two parties in Massachusetts, the one called Federalists, or the English party, and the other Republicans, have been most curiously balanced. The latter party now predominates, and the partizans of England are daily losing ground. The English party have been too confident, and too violent. They have pulled the string so hard as to break it. John Bull is a strong but violent animal; Bonaparte must make an ox of him before he can tame him to his hand.

To compensate for embargoes and non-intercourse with England; a spirit of manufacturing has come to our assistance. Almost every ship from Spain or Portugal, brings us the Merino sheep, some of which have been sold for one thousand dollars a head! While one party is vociferating that we cannot live without England, the other is trying to demonstrate that we can. France magnifies our power, while the English delight to minify it."

Cambridge, July 15, 1810.

"This will, I hope, be delivered to you by my friend, the Rev. Thadeus Mason Harris, minister in of the first parish in our old town of Dorchester, near Boston. Mr. Harris is a man of sense and science, and was three or four years Librarian of this University.

As to politics, I shall say nothing. One half, nay, more than half of us, love our own country, and prefer its honor and interest to every other country, while the residue view England, and all the rest of the world, through the medium of their counting houses. *** The violent spirit of party contaminates everything in this country. Every man who does not manifest a strong attachment to England and all her views, is suspected of being attached to Napoleon and all his views. Nay, more, the man who is strongly attached to his native country, who wishes to see it draw forth its own resources and manufacture for ~~it~~ ~~it~~ ~~it~~ itself, is marked down as an enemy to his country; and a friend to the views of Bonaparte. I am of this description. I am not disposed to consider England as our mother, but grandmother. I view her emissaries, who are sent over here to fill our country with seditious pamphlets, as highly dangerous to the peace of our country; especially those who endeavor to familiarize us to the idea of separating the northern from the middle and southern States. Whatever you may think of us, from our newspapers, from our periodicals and other publications, and acts of the legislature of this state, last year, you may rest assured that a great majority of the American people are disposed to maintain, even with the sword, every sentence in our famous declaration of independence. It is a truth beyond all controversy, that

there is a dangerous British faction in the heart of some of these New England states, and I am fearful of the conflict that will attend the extirpation of this foreign influence. This party are ~~that~~ ^{that} we should be zealous that we should form an alliance, offensive and defensive, with Great Britain; but the great body of us are averse to any entangling alliances with any European power whatever. We are the new world, and we wish to act agreeably to that lofty idea. We ought immediately to lay the keels of 60 stout frigates, and when they are launched, to begin 40 more. We can do it. We have all the materials within ourselves. We have lately commenced a cotton sail-cloth manufacture, and can soon extend ^{to} our wants. *** I am only doubtful whether we have a sufficiency of copper in this country, ready rolled for use. We shall never be respected by either France or England, until we are in a condition to defend ourselves from their encroachments on our rights and property.

I yesterday spent the day with my old friend, President Adams, at his residence about a dozen miles from Boston. He took me up to a high and commanding spot of ground, like your Richmond-hill, which overlooked a magnificent prospect of sea and land. **** He there gave me a prophetic view of our beloved country, and pointed out our future greatness. One of our largest frigates, the Constitution, was then in sight, under sail. He expressed the pleasure which the sight occasioned; declared his belief that we might have 60 of them in two years, if we were so determined; and that our future glory would result from our ships of war. **** Before long, I hope to send you an history of the Lettsonian cabinet of minerals, which may surprize you."

Cambridge, Dec. 30, 1810.

"I pretend not to speak with exactness, as I cannot, at this moment, lay my hand on your last letter; but believe it is near upon two years since I have received a line from Dr. Lettson; and more than a yearsince I had one from Dr. Jenner. I have actually received more letters from the Continent, from Russia, and Germany, and France, during the two past years, than from England. **** I have thought, though unwillingly, that by this time the advances of age must naturally, and of course, have affected even the indefatigable spirit and active mind of a Lettson. The ending of one year, and the beginning of a new, naturally bring to our minds the rapid march of time, and its victims. How few are the medical men, whom I once knew in London, that are now living. I have outlived two sets of our college officers, our friend Dr. Lathrop alone excepted.

Never was there a young country making more rapid strides to greatness than ours, notwithstanding the wicked efforts of an unprincipled faction, which obstinately oppose, and mischievously thwart, every step of our Government that tends to aggrandize our country; but their intemperate violence has defeated their aims, and I very much doubt if they will soon rally again. **** Some of your political writers say we cannot even clothe ourselves. The first good opportunity, I will send you some patterns of our broad cloth.

Our government has, at length, taken possession of West Florida, and our British faction abuse the government for this decision; but every patriot will support the government in the step they have taken, and let all the people say Amen!"

Cambridge, July 19, 1811.

"I was sadly disappointed in not receiving a line from you on the return of my friend the Rev. Mr. Harris; I believe, however, that after he visited Scotland, he did not return again to London. *** Neither times, nor seasons, nor changes, nor prosperity, nor adversity, should allow us to forget our old friends.

If I can, I mean to send you by this vessel, the Galen, a volume I have just published, entitled 'The Botanist.' It was written to create a taste for that pleasing study, and hence its popular dress and style. Although I am afraid of your Critical Reviewers, yet I should like to know their opinion of it. We labour under many disadvantages here in making a book. Our scanty libraries are not among the least of our inconveniences.

A factitious spirit tinges everything among us; it has infected our University, and I am perfectly disgusted on finding literature bending to transitory politics. *** However strange it may appear, it is a fact, that there is a great majority of the people of this country heartily disposed to go to war with England. ~~xxx~~ I am, however, of opinion, that this disposition is owing more to a wish to put down the English party among us, than to any real inimical feelings to the English people. A war with England would crush that party; and it is almost worth the trouble of it. The English party are striving to separate the northern from the southern States; and rather than this should be effected, I myself would give my voice for war with Great Britain, let the consequence to our commerce be whatever it may be. If, therefore, you should hear of some of your friends and correspondents in this country advocating a war with England, you may rest assured that it is more a war against the British party among ourselves, than against you in England."

P.S. "The letters we used to write to Europe were written on transatlantic paper, but this will never again be the case. Our manufactory of paper is entirely established. Our manufactory of broad cloth is going on in a very prosperous manner, and so is our cotton. Our cutlery is advancing beyond my expectation."

In 1822 one of the Doctor's friends wished to borrow the book containing these letters and in sending it to him Dr. Waterhouse accompanied it with a letter which has been published in the Massachusetts Historical Society's collection. In it he gives an interesting description of Dr. Lettson and in referring to the letters says, - "You expressed a desire to see some letters of mine, in Dr. Lettson's printed correspondence. I therefore send you the volume which contains them. There are a few others in the 3d Vol., but they are all on medical subjects. They were published without my knowledge. They contain more nonsense than treason, yet a little of the latter, the English party being judges."

In addition to the extremely varied and extensive literary activities of Professor Waterhouse already mentioned he was unusually effective as a political writer. Harrington, in his "Harvard Medical School" in referring to the appointment of the Professor to political office by Presidents Jefferson and Madison, says,- "No doubt some of this recognition was honestly earned by Waterhouse from his political writings, in which work he was active and in which he excelled to a marked degree." Dr. Thatcher says of him,- "Dr. Waterhouse held the pen of a ready writer, and figured as a controversialist and a politician during the exciting period from 1810 to 1815."

In summing up the life of Professor Waterhouse we are at once struck with the wide scope of his interests and activities. As one has said,-"His life was one of eminent practical utility. It was not passed in dreamy abstractions, or in speculations incapable of realization. Called to public life immediately upon completing upon his professional studies he discharged its duties through forty years with a large measure of honor to himself and advantage to those whom he served."

It will be remembered that Mr. Adams, in writing of Dr. Waterhouse as a student at Leyden, says he was very studious and inquisitive. These traits, together with his keen powers of observation, enabled him, in his wide travels and various experiences, to obtain a fund of information on a great variety of subjects, impossible to one who had lived only in America, which he made the most of in later years.

Mr. William Roscoe Thayer, of Cambridge, Mass., one of the leading biographers of the country, whose wife is a descendant of Prof. Waterhouse, in a paper read before the Cambridge Historical Society says,- "So far as I can gather, he was the most many-sided man of his time in this country. If you trace the many great interests that go back to him, I think you are justified in saying that." We believe

this to be a fact and that the more one studies his life the more he will become convinced that Prof. Waterhouse was, in many respects, a really remarkable man.

Not content to confine himself entirely to his duties as a medical professor he had hardly become established in Harvard when he began his lectures there on Natural History. He had already given a course or two at Brown University and claimed to be the first to lecture on this subject, especially Mineralogy, in this country. It has been said that these lectures gave him a greater reputation even than his Medical lectures.

He was quick to grasp the immense importance of the greatest medical discovery of the age, vaccination; bold and unselfish in proclaiming his faith in its efficacy by testing it first on his own children^{and} persevering and dauntless in his defence of the practice, against ignorance, ridicule and persecution, until it became established on a firm footing. One has written regarding this accomplishment, - "It is glory enough to have made permanent the practice of vaccination and thus have saved countless thousands of lives." One of the histories of the Harvard Medical School in referring to the matter says, - "Not only did Dr. Waterhouse successfully fight with tongue and pen for vaccination, enough of achievement for one man's life, but the Botanical Garden at Cambridge was founded by him, as well as the Collection of Minerals which, in part a gift from his friend Dr. Lettsom of England, had its beginning in his broad enthusiasm for science."

Because of his broad mind we are not surprised that Dr. Thayer says in his paper above referred to that Prof. Waterhouse was a "comeouter." His lecture on the use of tobacco and intoxicating liquors shows him to have been many years, in fact in a sense, over a century ahead of his time on this very important and vital question.

His comments on the over-driving of horses; his insistence that his children should treat all dumb animals with kindness and that they should not catch fish with the "insidious hook" for pleasure, was the manifestation of a sentiment which years later expressed itself in the formation of our Societies for the prevention of cruelty to animals.

We have seen also, from the preface of one of his discourses, that the Humane Society of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts had its inception in a conversation between the Professor and Dr. Noyes in Newport harbor and that they were largely instrumental in its organization.

In one of the entries in his Journal, just after a large fire in Boston, the Doctor remarks on the small fire loss in Europe; gives the reason for it and then deplores the large loss in this country due, in his opinion, mostly to carelessness. In this he touched upon a matter which only in recent years has received any particular attention and and even yet the most interested parties are the insurance companies and engineers. We are really just beginning, by means of Fire Protection days, instruction in the schools and in various other ways to arcuse the public to the almost criminal foolishness of burning up hundreds of millions of dollars worth of property and destroying many lives each year, largely through carelessness and inadequate building laws.

Even in medicine Dr. Waterhouse was not content to continue to do things just as the "fathers" did. We have it on the authority of Dr. Martin that he was opposed ^{to} the almost indiscriminate practice of bleeding and of the use of mercury so much in vogue at that time. In a letter to Dr. Lettsom, already quoted, he rejoices to find that the author of a book on consumption, which had been sent him, had had the courage to write against bleeding in that disease, thus supporting the opinion that Dr. Waterhouse himself had formed that consumption was a disease the symptoms of which indicated the very opposite of repeated bleeding.

Again, when as superintending surgeon of a military district he was ordered to inspect the medical condition of the posts, he impressed upon the surgeons the very modern teaching that it was much better to prevent disease, by means of cleanliness and sanitation, than to try to cure it after contraction. He also observed, as noted, the cruelty of the "black hole" as a method of military punishment and in his report, even at the risk of laying himself open to the charge of going beyond the bounds of his own department, he condemned the practice in the strongest terms, calling it a disgrace to the country. Not content with that he wrote John Quincy Adams, then Secretary of State, urging that the matter be called to the attention of the President.

But, devoted as Prof. Waterhouse was to the cultivation of science and engaged as he was in humanitarian work, even these did not claim all his attention. He was also a thorough man of affairs in the interest which he took and the consideration which he gave to the State and National questions of his day. One has said that "he was always fond of leaving the quiet shades of a Harvard Professorship to mingle in the exciting contests of political discussion and of party politics." It will be remembered that he was on intimate terms of friendship with the Presidents John and John Quincy Adams; was a correspondent, a political appointee and at least once a guest in the homes of two others, Jefferson and Madison; and by correspondence or personal interview came in contact with Washington, ~~and~~ Jackson and perhaps others. Besides this he was acquainted with many other prominent men of the times, all of which must have given him a deep interest in and a broad outlook upon affairs entirely apart from his professional life at Cambridge and Boston. As before stated, he was a political writer of unusual ability and in his articles, his Journal and his correspondence we find him condemning in no uncertain terms all policies and influences which he thought were

tending to divide the nation and to retard the development^{of the country}, and on the other hand advocating all measures which he felt would rid the country of foreign influences and make it united, strong, self-reliant and really independent politically and, through the rapid development of its natural resources, independent, as far as possible, commercially. Once a Federalist he did not hesitate to forsake that party and become a Republican when he could no longer support its policies, or, in his own words, "I have abjured them since I find they prefer the honour of a foreign country to our own."

Even then the ominous rumblings of the great controversy over slavery were beginning to be heard and various entries in his Journal leave us in no doubt as to his position on this great question. In one place he says he is thankful that none of his family in Rhode Island, as early as that was, had anything to do with the keeping of slaves.

In conclusion we might mention the purely literary work of Dr. Waterhouse, apart from his professional and political publications and articles, especially his Junius, as revealing, in a sense, another side of this many-sided man. Much of the material for this work was evidently obtained during his student days abroad which shows that he must have been a close observer of persons and events in those early years as well as a wide reader, in later life, of that period in English history and politics.

Regarding the controversies of Prof. Waterhouse both inside and outside of ~~Mass~~ Harvard College one naturally wonders as to the reason for the same and who was to blame for them. As in most cases of the kind it is doubtless true that there was culpability on both sides. Harrington in his history of the Harvard Medical School, published in 1905, says,-

"From the first year of his professorship he seems to have

been in trouble with his associates and the Board of Management. Feeling that his seven years of study in Europe gave him a right to superior recognition among the Boston practitioners, he adopted an unfortunate pedantic manner which brought upon him ridicule and enmity. The relations of Waterhouse and Warren were strained. Each accused the other of deceit, double dealing, lying and slander. *** Both men today have their champions."

Dr. Parsons, in the Rhode Island Historical Collection, writes as follows,-

"He seems to have had a faculty of being in opposition. He was a political partisan and correspondent of Jefferson, at a time when that illustrious man was not in favor in the most influential circles in Boston. In 1812 when partisan feeling ran so high his political course became so obnoxious to some of the members of the corporation that he was superceded."

Another history of the Harvard Medical School, published under the auspices of the Alumni, has this to say,-

"With the return from foreign medical study of Dr. James Jackson and John C. Warren a new era dawned. New ideas were introduced and were in many ways opposed by the Professor of Theory and Practice. *** Dr. Jackson came back hoping to be the introducer of vaccination but found himself forestalled by Dr. Waterhouse. *** The young men finally made a concerted effort to attack the unpopular professor, and cause his removal. They found him, however, a hard fighter, and it was only after a very prolonged and acrimonious debate that the old Jeffersonian Republican fell before the attacks of young men representing new ideas in medicine and the Federalist party in politics."

Dr. Martin, whom we have quoted several times, and who, it will be remembered, made a very extensive study of the subject of vaccination and Dr. Waterhouse's connection with the same, in a published article says,-

"When one looks for some reasons for the bitter animosity of the Boston profession to W. during his long life after his removal to that 'Modern Athens', and the remarkable paucity of all biographical mementos following his discease, they are quite readily and sufficiently found in the fact that he was, by natural capacity, as well as by education, superior to any man in the coterie that opposed and persecuted him. That is an offence which mediocrity cannot forgive. (2nd). That he was a man not to submit tamely to wrong nor to bend the knee to the Baal of popularity. (3d). That he was the representative of Jenner in America, chosen by that great benefactor for that great work, applauded by him while it was being done and thanked and perfectly approved when it was finished. The authorities of the Massachusetts Medical Society had a pet representative of vaccination of their own selection. It did not suit them at all that no one recognized or thought of him in that ca-

capacity except themselves. This pet was a disciple of Pearson and ~~Wanx~~ Woodville, - Waterhouse first, last and always a faithful follower of Jenner.

(4th). He disapproved, and repeatedly, with no uncertain sound, ex-^{press} his disapproval of the practice of his time, a practice which for certain local reasons, reached a degree in Boston, and the regions influenced by that professional center, not paralleled elsewhere, a practice sufficiently defined by a famous saying of one of Waterhouse's most prominent Boston contemporaries, 'Yes, Sir! I have drawn many a hoghead of blood and administered many barrels of calomel and hope to live to draw and administer many barrel and hogheads more.' He did not disapprove of the rational use of blood-letting and mercurials, & but of the 'heroic' practice of the time and place which has long since been decided to be irrational and most disastrous. He even went so far as to say that the medical heresies of Thomsonianism would, to a certain degree, do good as they denounced mercurial treatment and preached the exclusive use of vegetable remedies. He deplored and denounced the prosecutions and persecutions of Thompson as disgraceful and injurious to the profession.

5th --- and chief, over the heads of all the Boston physicians, (utterly unfit and incompetent but it was hardly to be expected that they would see or acknowledge that) he, a Rhode Island man, had been elected Professor of Theory and Practice in Harvard. This was the true bone of contention, not much meat, as it surely proved, for it took W. from his beautiful native town, from a delightful, appreciative and refined society, from a large and affluence practice and gave him poverty, persecution, 'envy, hatred, malice and all uncharitableness,' but, with all these --- the empty title of Professor of a chair which for a great many years yielded him no income at all, and never an income of \$400 annually. It was, however, the bone of contention around which a crew of hungry, ravening, snarling, incompetent Boston doctors raged and yelped."

Mr. Thayer, in the paper already referred to says,-

"Exactly who was to blame I think no one ~~now~~ now can decide, for it was a question of incompatibility. Dr. Waterhouse had a very irascible temperament. He was an outsider, ~~xxxx~~ coming from Newport; he was in competition with men who inherited, in a way, their Harvard position; and in a few years he fell out with them politically. He was a Democrat; they became Federalists - so that his course was inevitably stormy."

It is doubtless true that the seed of discord was sown when Dr. Waterhouse, an outsider, was elected a professor in Harvard over some of the local aspirants. The opposition to his holding this position extended even into the college Legislature for the Board of Overseers held several meetings, over a period of a month or two, before coming to a decision in the matter, but finally "rejected with firmness the idea of a complimentary election of any of the sons of Harvard" and concurred with the Corporation in the Doctor's election.

Among other things urged in objection to him was the fear that as he had been educated, to a considerable extent, in England his election would mean the introduction of English medical practices and customs. Coming just at the close of the war insinuations of this kind were viewed with grave suspicion and distrust.

The fact must also be borne in mind, as brought out by Mr. Thayer, ^{that Prof. Waterhouse} was in competition with those who, in a way, ^{inherited} their Harvard position. Indications of this are seen in the statement of ^{the Professor} ~~Prof. Waterhouse~~ himself, in which he said that in the Corporation of seven members Dr. Jackson, who succeeded him, had a father, an uncle and a cousin. Again in 1806 when Dr. Waterhouse was having his bitter controversy with the Mass. Medical Society and others over the matter of vaccination and the affair at Marblehead, Dr. Warren was the President and his son J.C. Warren Rec. Sec'y of the Society. As the Society must naturally have been dominated largely by the Boston members the fact that a father and son held two of the most important offices gave the whole thing a sort of family cast.

Hardly had Dr. Waterhouse become established in his professorship when the feeling against him manifested itself in such petty ways as his being rejected at two different times (blackballed?) for membership in the Mass. Medical Society and also by the Academy of Arts and Sciences, even though in the latter case his name was proposed by the President himself, Gov. Bowdoin. This feeling was further shown by the discourtesy of the Boston physicians in not inviting him to their consultations. Such treatment he of course resented and it doubtless influenced him in his decision to resign his position in the college and laid the foundation for some of the acrimonious medical controversies which came later.

If, as Harrington says, Prof. Waterhouse did assume a pedantic

attitude while, under the circumstances of his education, he may be pardoned, to some extent, yet it was, of course, unfortunate and may have brought upon him some of the treatment of which he complained. In all our researches, however, this is the only reference we have found to any such assumption on his part and, if true, did not apparently affect his standing at Harvard for upon his resignation he was strongly urged to remain and, as stated, was promised better support if he would resume his ~~duties~~ professional duties.

In considering this question we ~~also~~ must not forget the bearing of the political situation which has been referred to in different comments we have quoted although the influence of this factor may have been over emphasized by Dr. Waterhouse. We find him often using such expressions as this, - "Politics - party politics - governed everything in this University." In speaking of Judge Parsons, one of the Corporation, he says, - "For he knew I detested his politics."

In reviewing the relations of Prof. Waterhouse it must also be remembered that because of his many-sidedness and consequent variety of activities, he had more points of contact with his associates, the college authorities and the community than, perhaps, any other person of his time.

As the Professor of Theory and Practice he would naturally have been interested in the discovery of vaccination but had it not been for his open mind and that very enterprise and vigor of action which his temperament gave him and which sometimes led him into trouble he would not have become the acknowledged leader of the practice in this country and consequently the target for all its enemies and even some of its friends.

His labors in Natural History, for years practically a labor of love, brought upon him, as we have seen in the foregoing pages, an-

noyances, contentions, humiliation, heartburnings, great disappointment and even ridicule. While, in some ways, he may have been partially responsible for this result, it would seem that his work in this department was not fully appreciated at the time, and it was years afterwards before it came to be realized that "the persistent and finally successful labors of Dr. Waterhouse have placed Harvard under deep obligations to her able benefactor. Indeed he was most prominent in procuring for her many additions which are now among her chief ornaments."

It is probably true that during the last years of his professorship the suspicion of Prof. Waterhouse towards his fellow professors, not wholly unjustified, and his distrust of some of the college authorities increased to such an extent as to lead him into unwise action. Their personal relations finally become such as make some adjustment necessary for the good of the medical school and, under the circumstances the dismissal of the Professor was, perhaps, the logical solution of the difficulty. It must not be forgotten, however, that although the Corporation declared the formal charges against him proven, the committee of the Board of Overseers, appointed to investigate the charges, could not agree as ~~the~~ to the facts in ~~this~~ the case and the Board concurred with the Corporation only on the theory that such action was necessary to restore harmony among the medical faculty.

Professor Waterhouse's broad education and his experiences in England and on the continent made him impatient with some of his surroundings and this together with his temperament, which we are told included an "irascible" temper, doubtless made him somewhat hard to get along with at times and obscured in the eyes of some of his contemporaries his really fine qualities and abilities. The feeling against him at the time of his dismissal was very bitter on the part of some of the college officers, as shown by a note, at which we can now smile, written

by the good and Reverend President Kirkland in reply to one written to him by one of the immediate government asking if he saw any objection to granting Professor Waterhouse the use of the college library, in which he says,- "I think there is great objection and that we cannot justify ourselves in the sight of God or man in affording any new facility or instrument of operation to a man who will use it, if possible, to do us vital injury, and pervert and corrupt the world." However, those removed from the scene by time or space recognized, as we have already seen, the value of the Professor's work. A sketch of ~~the~~ Dr. Waterhouse published in the Polyanthus in 1806 says,-

"Among the distinguished ^{literary} ~~literary~~ and professional characters of our country, it would be difficult to select one, who has evinced more zeal, in the cause of science and humanity, than the subject of this memoir."

Kelley in his Biography of Medical Men writes,-

"Waterhouse was a prolific writer and something of a controversialist.*** He was peculiarly well fitted to fight for a worthy cause, and he fought long and earnestly, encountering much obliquy and abuse, but doing as much for his native country and for humanity as he would had he foregone a lengthy foreign education and served during the Revolution either as an army surgeon or in the ranks, as did many of his contemporaries."

In an address before the Philadelphia County Medical Society, of which he was President, Dr. W. M. Welch refers to the

"life and character of one of the noblest and bravest of men, a great philosopher and philanthropist, and, probably the most thoroughly and widely educated physicians of his day. It is surprising how few physicians today are familiar with the work of this great man.*** In my mind there is no doubt that if Waterhouse had participated, as a soldier, in the famous war of his time, and rendered a service to his country at all comparable to that which he performed in a different field of action, his name, instead of being obscured, as it now is, would have been made immortal, and his features, even, would have been perpetuated in marble or everlasting bronze."

Professor Waterhouse was a member of the following societies which shows the esteem in which he was held and "goes to show," says Dr. Welch, "that this worthy man, like a class of worthy men of old, was not without honor, save in his own country, and in his own home." He was a

Fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences; of the Philosophical Society of Philadelphia; of several Medical Societies of the United States; of the Royal Medical and Jennerian Societies of London; of the Philosophical and Literary Societies of Manchester, and of Bath, England; of the Academy of Sciences, Belles-Lettres, Arts, Agriculture, and Commerce, at Marseilles; of the National Medical School of France, and, while in Scotland, Secretary of the Royal Medical Society of Edinburgh.

According to a Historical Catalogue of Brown University Dr. Waterhouse was a Fellow of the same from 1782 to 1795 and one of the Faculty from 1784 to 1791, being Professor of Natural History. He received the honorary degree of M.D. from Harvard in 1786.

In personal appearance Prof. Waterhouse is said to have short and rather below the medium size. his head was large and finely formed; his brow high and prominent; his features manly and benevolent in expression. Another says he was of ready wit and quick in repartee. Kelley describes him as follows, - "In personal appearance DR. Waterhouse was of medium height, compactly built and destitute of any superfluous flesh; quick and alert in all his movements, he seemed at all times to be prepared both bodily and mentally, for immediate action or speech. Being of Quaker origin he was scrupulously nice in his attire, dressing always in the English medical style in fine black broadcloth, and carrying a gold headed cane. When speaking he gesticulated freely and enunciated strongly. In conversation he was full of information and of anecdote, and very entertaining."

We know that Dr. Waterhouse was troubled with weak eye-sight and in one place he says, "It is natural to me and to my father before me to speak freely and often emphatically." Of his courage there can be no question. In addition to the evidences of this already given one or two incidents in his contest with the Mass. Medical Society in 1806 will

will well illustrate this fact. Replying to a communication of Dr. Waterhouse an article was inserted in the Centinel over the signature "A Fellow of the Mass. Medical Society," which called forth the following from the Doctor. "I protest against a Fellow of the Mass. Medical Society as adopting an unfair mode of attack. He ought, by giving his name, to let us see who he is. I will not, being myself known combat a Fellow in a mask; nor can I consider it a 'clear stage' where I am liable to be stabbed from behind a curtain. - No - 'Give me to see and Ajax asks no more.'"

Here is another. Replying to an article of the Society denying some of the Doctor's statements Doctor. Waterhouse said he was too sick to write at length but that as soon as he recovered he would substantiate his allegations to the full. A few days later a communication appeared from the Society to the effect that the Doctor's claim of sickness was a mere pretence to conceal the fact that he had lost his nerve and wished to retire from the controversy. The Doctor countered immediately in these words,- "No, my dear brethren! my nerves may flutter in the languor and apathy of a calm; but they never have, nor ever will want elasticity in a storm, raise one when you will! ~~xxx it is my pride to be thought a quiet reasonable man; yet if pushed beyond a certain limit, I may possibly be provoked to assume the motto of the ancient kingdom of Scotland~~ During the whole of my intercourse with mankind, which has not been small, I never, never met so mean, so low-lived, so disgusting, so contemptible a spirit as has shewn itself respecting my indisposition. The heart that could be delighted with the idea, that my illness was aggravated by his efforts in the newspaper, would joyfully carry my head about the streets on a pike, provided a Robespierrean government would screen him from the gallows.

It is said that I plead indisposition and am about to retreat.

It is not so. Until now I had scarcely time to make up a cartridge. I have 'toed the mark' until the Printer sounded the retreat.* But in retreating, I have declared that I ~~have~~ mean to collect a fresh force and come on again, but not in a newspaper. *** It is my pride to be thought a quiet, peaceable man, yet if pushed beyond a certain line, I may possibly be provoked to assume the motto of the ancient kingdom of Scotland.

To a query, why did you awaken the sleeping controversy? I answer, because my character suffered by silence; and because I preferred open blows to secret stabs. I have heard lately a deal of nonsense about avoiding controversy. No honest man capable of writing ever did, or ever will suffer by it, in the view of the good and wise; and their approbation will compensate, nay more than compensate for the contempt of the rest of mankind. - 'Any man fails,' says Dr. Aiken, 'in the duty he owes to society, as well as to himself, who through indolence or apathy, suffers malignity and falsehood to triumph in the accomplishment of their purpose. They should be opposed boldly, speedily and openly. Every step in the contest should be clear and decisive. Every man capable of doing a secret injustice is a coward. He will shuffle, equivocate and shrink; but if held by the firm grasp of truth and courage he cannot escape an ignominious exposure;' and then he adds and I must italicize it. 'If therefore, an unprincipled antagonist attempts to render a man odious, either by representing him as saying what he never has said, or by inventing personal slander or calumny against him, it will generally be as prudent as it is equitable, to cite him to the bar BAR OF THE PUBLIC, expose his dishonest acts and malignant intention, and with strong hand drag him forth like CACUS^x from the midst of his fire and smoke, to

* The publisher of the Centinel, thinking the controversy had gone far enough, had declined to print any more articles.

^x From Virgil.

light and punishment.' This have I in part done, and hope to complete the task, for the benefit of all poor men, who like myself, have nothing but character to depend on for subsistence."

James Russell Lowell, the writer, who graduated from Harvard in 1838, describes Prof. Waterhouse in his later years, in a somewhat humorous vein as follows,- "His queue, slender and tapering like the tail of a violet-crab, was held out horizontally by the high collar of his shepherd's gray overcoat, whose style was of the latest when he studied at Leyden in his hot youth. He wore amazing spectacles, fit to transmit no smaller image than the page of mightiest folios, and rising full-disked upon the beholder, like those prodigies of two moons at once, portending change to monarchs. The great collar, disallowing any independent rotation of the head, I remember he used to turn his whole person in order to bring their foci to bear upon any object. One can fancy that terrified Nature would have yielded up her secrets at once, without cross-examination, at their first glare,"

This is Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes' picture of him,- "A brisk, dapper old gentleman, with hair tied in a ribbon behind, and I think powdered, marching smartly about with a gold-headed cane, with a look of questioning sagacity, and an utterance of oracular gravity,- the good people of Cambridge listened to his learned talk when they were well, and sent ~~to him~~ for one of the other two doctors when they were sick. He probably liked to write and talk about medicine better than to practice it." This supposition on the part of Dr. Holmes is borne out by the following abstract from one of Dr. Waterhouse's letters to Dr. Lettson,- "The fact is, I have no taste for the practice of physic as it is conducted in this country. It is not worth a man's attention. I feel such a mighty difference between transcribing from the great volume of Nature, and practicing among the very vulgar, that is, conforming

to the whims and nonsense of old women and silly people, that I am sometimes almost determined to renounce it forever. I know how a London physician gets his bread, but with us it is widely different: a man like me of a weakly frame, addicted to study, is liable to be called out five or six miles on horse-back in a severe winter night, and to remain out all night, and to receive (in the course of a year) a guinea for it! We are obliged to be physician, surgeon, apothecary, and tooth-drawer, all under one; and if we are not attentive to small things, and if we do not give consequence to trifles, we are dropped for some one who does. You are spoiled (say some of my friends) for practice in this country, by living so long with Dr. Fothergill, which is in a great measure true - a charming specimen of my intended view of society and manners!"

In an address at the one hundredth anniversary of the founding of the Medical School Dr. Holmes says further of Dr. Waterhouse.- "I remember him well, and carry the scar of the vaccination he performed on me. His powdered hair and queue, his gold headed cane, his magisterial air and diction, were familiar to me from my boyhood. He had some learning, which he was disposed to make use of, as perhaps we all are if we have it, and laid himself open to the playful sallies of the students of his time, one of whom announced a course of Lectures on Oudenology, which was supposed to be a travesty of some of his prelections. *** The excellent Dr. Fothergill was his uncle; the immortal Jenner was his second creator; and their names, with that of Dr. Lettcom, were often on his lips. *** His references show a considerable extent of reading."

One of the finest tributes to Dr. Waterhouse which we have seen is found in the History of the Medical School, already referred to, published by the Faculty of the School. and with this we conclude this memoir. Referring to Dr. Holmes description and remarks regarding the

doctor the History says,- "All this must have been late in life. Although a certain pomposity of style and cantankerousness of action developed as he became an old man, still his work shows that he must have been a thorough man of the times during his early working years. Rather than the pompous old gentleman of Dr. Holmes' remembrance, let us think of Dr. Waterhouse as the enthusiastic ^{student} of science, striving in far-distant America to keep in touch with the best that was taking place in the centers of European learning, vigorous and practical in his ability to sieze upon the medical event of the period, strong in the denunciation of existing evils, and with a breadth of mind that prepared the way for the advent of Gray and Agassiz."

As before mentioned Dr. Waterhouse was twice married. His first wife, Elizabeth Oliver is "said to have been a lady of great kindness of disposition and benevolence of heart." In a sketch of the Doctor his second wife, Louisa Lee, is spoken of as "a lady belonging to a family of the highest respectability and distinguished for several generations back for its great wealth. This lady still survives and if the report of her domestic virtues, her numerous charities, and frequent though always unostentatious generosity be true, may she long survive and continue to grace her declining years with similar acts of usefulness and liberality." At her death the following notice appeared in an exchange. "The widow of the late Dr. Waterhouse in addition to other bequests and previous donations to literary and charitable institutions gave \$10000 to the Boston Female Medical College for the endowment of a Professor-ship of Anatomy." She died in Cambridge, Nov. 9, 1863, at the age of 91.

Children of Dr. Benjamin and Elizabeth (Oliver) Waterhouse.

1. Andrew Oliver Waterhouse, born in Cambridge, Mass., Nov. 12, 1789. Received degree A.B. Harvard 1810. R Brown, (Hon.) 1811. He died at Annapolis, Md., 1832. Notice appeared in Boston Centinel Aug. 11, 1832.

11. John Fothergill Waterhouse, born in Cambridge, Mass., Aug. 1, 1791. Received the degree A.B. Harvard 1811. A.B. Brown 1812. M.D. University of Pennsylvania, 1813. July 8, 1813 he was a member of a committee who in the name of the graduates and students of this University thanked the Rev. Dr. Stoughton for a eulogy he delivered on Dr. Benjamin Rush, on that date. Mr. Waterhouse died at Charleston, S.C., May 18, 1817., of Consumption.
89. 111. Elizabeth W. Waterhouse born Mar. 14, 1793, Cambridge, Mass.
- 1V. Daniel Oliver Waterhouse, born Feb. 18, 1795, Cambridge, Mass. His father refers to him in his Journal under date of Jan. 20, 1834, and says that he had not been heard from since 1822 and that he was probably dead.
- V. Benjamin Waterhouse, born in Cambridge, Mass., July 28, 1797, died, probably unmarried, 1843. He graduated from Harvard in 1817 and his father says received the degree L.L.D. from the University of Glasgow. He was a preacher and according to his father's Journal preached "more than 8 years in London, Exeter, Calm and Warminster." He arrived in New York Aug. 24, 1833 and about later in Cambridge a month later in Cambridge. His father evidently had high hopes of him but in the end was disappointed. Jan. 20, 1834, he writes in his Journal, - "Benjamin returned from Gloucester where he preached to great acceptance and applause." He speaks of his more than common acquirements in Law, Physic & Divinity. July 9, 1837, he makes the following entry. "Wrote to my only son Benjamin in Boston who has kept himself away from me strangely for more than three years without any just, or assigned cause of complaint." He had been in Essex and Roxbury. In 1839 his father wrote "where Benjamin is I know not" but in 1841 he was in South Boston which is the last mention made of him.
90. VI. Mary Waterhouse, born Aug. 6, 1799., Cambridge, Mass.

29

CAPTAIN GEORGE⁴ WATERHOUSE, (John,³ Timothy,² Richard,¹) born in Barrington, N. H., March 15, 1746, married first, June 20, 1771, Elizabeth, dau. of John and Mary (Rand) Garland, born in Barrington, N.H., March 31, 1748. She died in Poland, Me., March 3, 1807, and he married second, Dec. 3, 1818, Mrs. Sally Tucker, of Poland, who died before he did.

He was a farmer and lived, until about fifty years of age in

Barrington. He was one of the signers of the following petition.

"Province of New Hampshire

To the Honorable the House of Representatives of the Province aforesaid, convened at Portsmouth this Seventh Day of April Anno Domini 1774.

The Petition of the Subscribers, Inhabitants of the Town of Barrington in the County of Strafford in sd Province, qualified by Law to vote in the Choice of Representatives, most humbly shews,-

That on wednesday the Thirtieth Day of March last past, a Meeting of the Inhabitants of said Barrington was holden for the Choice of a suitable Person to represent them in the General Assembly, of which Meeting, Mr. Joshua Foss was Moderator.

That by reason of the Irregularity and confusion at said Meeting many of your Petitioners had not and others could not have an opportunity of voting before Mr Joshua Foss Junr. (son of the moderator) was declared to be duly chosen to represent said Barrington in the General Assembly, which appearing doubtful to your Petitioners, it was desired by more than seven of them "presently after" that the same be decided by the Pole - It being granted, the Electors withdrew for that purpose - but it being falsely reported that your Petitioners had waived all Exceptions to the illegality of the Choice aforesaid, the said Joshua Foss Junr. was entered by the Clerk as duly elected and the Meeting dissolved before the same was determined - by means whereof your Petitioners think themselves greatly aggrieved, and many of them deprived of a Liberty & Privilege which others at said Meeting (not qualified) were allowed. Wherefore your Petitioners pray this Honorable House to take the matter into their wise Consideration and order them such Redress as is agreeable to Law, and which in like Cases hath hitherto been granted - and your Petitioners will ever pray &c.

Barrington, Apr. 7, 1774."

A petition dated March 6, 1776, stating that "your Petitioners was Greatly alarmed at the News of John Garland Esq^r of Barrington being omitted in the Late apportionment of Magistrates for the County of Strafford" was signed by Lieut. George Waterhouse and also by his father, John.

During the Revolution the records show that he was a Sergeant in Captain Hayes' Company on Pierces Island, Portsmouth harbor, Nov. 5, 1775., and in December of the same year his name appears on the roll of Winter Hill companies in the New Hampshire militia, in the Continental Army, as a Lieutenant in Captain Drew's Company. It is said that at

the time of the battle of Bunker Hill he was in the army but was sick with a fever and was carried to the window that he might see the fire, although by his deposition he did not go to Massachusetts until some two weeks, at least, after the battle was fought. One of his descendants told the writer that according to tradition, Capt. George Waterhouse was buried with his "regimentals" on and that although the farmer has added that although he was no ghoul he sometimes felt as though he would like to investigate and find out the truth.

In 1832 Captain Waterhouse applied for a pension and made the following deposition,-

"District Court of Maine holden at Portland

Aug. 31, 1832."

"George Waterhouse of Poland aged 86 made oath to the following,- The said Waterhouse was elected Captain of a volunteer Company raised in the town of Barrington County of Strafford in the State of New Hampshire immediately after the news of the Lexington Battle 1775 and marched to the mouth of the Piscataqua River and was stationed at Fort Washington a little below Portsmouth in said State of N.H. and did the duty of Capt. for at least two months.

Again in the summer of 1775 the first of July he thinks he entered the service of the State of New Hampshire in the Company commanded by Capt. John Drew and served eight months under said enlistment as Second Lieutenant. William Babb was first Lieut. that he marched from Portsmouth to Cambridge in the regiment commanded by Col. Waldron a part of the time and a part of the time in the regiment commanded by Col. Poor.

Again he entered the service at Cambridge and served under Capt. Drew aforesaid untill the 28 of May he thinks A.D. 1776. that he was discharged but has lost the same and that he served in the whole time twelve months and a half, two months at least as a Capt. and the rest of the time as Second Lieut. He further states that he received no commission while Capt. That the Commission which he had as Second Lieut. was given into the hands of Judge Parris about 2 years ago and is not now to be found and also some other papers which are of importance. He thinks that the papers were sent to Washington under the act of 1818. That he knows of no person who can testify for him who is now alive.- That from the time he entered the service at Barrington untill he was discharged there was no interval in which he did not serve. He is sure that he served 12½ months.

He hereby relinquishes every claim whatever to a pension or an annuity except the present and he declares that his name is not on any pension roll of any agency in any state."

Geo. Waterhouse.

Ashur Ware U.S. Judge of the Dist. of Maine.

Captain Waterhouse also deposed as follows,-

"That he was born in Barrington Strafford County N.H. A.D. 1776, that he has no record of his age but thinks there is one in Barrington and was living in Barrington when called into the service, that he entered as a volunteer and was elected Capt. by vote of the Company in which capacity he served as before stated. That he knows of not one who served with him that the original pay roll of the Company was kept by him and is hereunto annexed and other papers. That the commission which he had shall be transmitted if found and also the deposition of Dudley Pike which was obtained for him at the time he made his first application. That if the commission above alluded to cannot be found with Judge Parris he thinks it may be found at Washington."

George Waterhouse.

"And the said Court do hereby declare that opinion that the above was a revolutionary soldier and served as he states.

John Kussey Clerk of District Court of U.S. for Maine Dist. certifies the foregoing contains the matter of application of George Waterhouse for a pension. Aug.31,1832.

The list of Capt. Drew's Company marked "A" is annexed in which he the said Waterhouse is rated as 2nd Lieut. also the enlisting paper dated Jan. 12,1776, on which the said Waterhouse name is set."

The above depositions were copied from the records of the Pension Bureau at Washington,D.C.

Captain Waterhouse also signed the "Association Test", so called, in 1776.

After the war he continued to live in Barrington for a number of years , He was one of the Selectmen of the town from 1783 to 1787. In 1793 he had a licence to "mix and sell spiritous Liquors."

Captain Waterhouse was evidently interested in lumbering for we find the following in the History of Poland, Me.-

"The first mill was built on the outlet of Range Pond by Captain George Waterhouse, in 1792, long before any settlement at the Corner. Captain Waterhouse was an emigrant from New Hampshire, and a soldier of the Revolution, where he rendered long and efficient service. He also built a large house for the accommodation of travelers, as the main road then passed that place; he also ran a black-

smith shop. The house stood on the spot well-known as the Isaac Barton place. Captain Waterhouse was followed by Samuel Lane and Deacon Brown who settled on the elevation now known as Waterhouse Hill. It seems that Mr. Waterhouse had a partner named Waldron, who fell into mishaps and failed for a large amount, for payment of which Mr. Waterhouse was bound. As good luck would have it, previous to this, he had deeded the mill to his son Timothy, and for non-payment of his partner's debts, was thrown into prison, where he remained for a long time. No hand would release him, and disclosures were then unknown. This state of affairs is looked upon at this day as a relic of barbarism."

The first property bought by Captain Waterhouse, in Poland, was probably that described in the following deed.

"Know all men by these presents that we John Patten & Isaac Whittier both of Amesbury in the County of Essex and Commonwealth of Massachusetts Gentlemen, in consideration of sixty pounds lawful money paid to us by George Waterhouse of Barrington in the County of Strafford & State of New Hampshire Gentⁿ the receipt whereof we do hereby acknowledge do hereby give grant sell & convey unto the said George Waterhouse his Heirs and assigns forever, a certain lot of land in a Township of land in the County of Cumberland, called Bakerstown,* being lot number eighty three in the first division of lots layed out in said Township, and was drawn to the original right of Hannah Bolton, Also lot number thirteen and lot number one hundred twenty-three in the second division of lots layed out in said Township which was layed out to the original right of Trustram Greenleaf together with all the undivided land belonging to said right of the said Trustram Greenleaf. To HAVE and to hold the afore~~said~~ described premises to the said ~~George~~ George Waterhouse his Heirs and Assigns to his and their use and behoof forever. And we do covenant with the said George Waterhouse his Heirs & assigns that we are lawfully seized in fee of the afore described premises, that they are free from all Incumbrances, that we have good right to sell and convey the same to the said George Waterhouse, and that we will warrant and defend the same premises to the said George Waterhouse his Heirs and assigns forever, against the lawful claims and demands of all Persons. In Witness whereof we the said John Patten & Isaac Whittier have hereunto set our hands & seals this Thirtieth day of november in the year of our Lord, one thousand seven hundred & ninety two."

Signed, Sealed & Delivered in presence)	
of us Abr ^m Waldron, Christopher Ser-) John Patten. (Seal.)
geant.) Isaac Whittier, (Seal.)

A little later Captain Waterhouse sold "one half in quantity & quality of lot number eighty three" to Abraham Waldron, and in November 1795, being "tenants in common in equal shares" of a certain lot of land in Poland and saw mill rights, divide the same.

*Afterwards called Poland.

In 1798 Waterhouse and Waldron divide saw mill privileges in Poland, lot number one hundred and twenty-three. This rather indicates that this was the piece of property upon which ~~he~~ Captain Waterhouse built his mill as mentioned in the History of Poland, ~~xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx~~ and as described in the foregoing deed. Waterhouse and Waldron had other transactions together and there are records of attachments of Captain Waterhouse's property at different times which were probably occasioned by the difficulties brought upon him by his relations with Waldron as referred to in the abstract from the History of Poland.

Although Captain Waterhouse bought property in Poland in 1792 he was "of Barrington" for several years after that. The first instance we find of his being "of Poland" is in a deed dated Nov. 15, 1795 and it is probable that he did not move to Poland until sometime during that year. The records show that he had quite extensive dealings in real estate for many years after this, some of it being purchased, perhaps, to furnish lumber for his mill.

At the Poland Centennial in 1895 one of the speakers said that "William Schellinger in a recent conversation remarked that he well remembered hearing his Elders relate that Captain George Waterhouse and Joshua Dunn carried the only two Democratic votes for Thomas Jefferson thrown in Poland at the latter's first election in 1800. The election was held at the house of Captain Waterhouse now the Barton place (so called) near Poland Corner."

At the same celebration the Rev. J. Albert Libby was the poet and began his poem thus,-

In the old years, when all about were woods,
Came our grandsires with their scanty goods,
To climb the different heights, and settle down
On an old land grant, known as Bakerstown.

Much as the birds are found, year after year,
In their old nesting places, held so dear,

The offspring of the early sires and dames
 Keep the old homes that had their fathers' names.
 Nathaniel Bailey settled first in town,
 And so his name through all the years comes down.
 Thus, Emery, Pulsifer, Nason, Lane and Dunn,
 Megquier, Strout, and True, the century here begun;
 Davis and Ricker, Libby, Briggs, and Kowe,
 Snell, Fernald, Waterhouse, were of long ago.

The following is also taken from the History of Poland,-

"On the Plains, near the Middle Range Pond, when 1800 was young, there stood a church, erected by subscriptions from the inhabitants of Poland. It was for the accommodation of all the so-called evangelical sects. It would seem that the good old Congregational fathers worshipping there desired a church of their own, and so Nov. 1, 1825, a council assembled at the schoolhouse at the 'Rang' to found a Congregational church. After reading the Confession of Faith and other papers, the following persons were examined and organized as a church, viz., George Waterhouse, Jabez Ricker, Daniel Waterman, Zenas Cobb, Mary Ricker, Elizabeth Bailey, Dorcas Cobb, Abigail Waterman, Elizabeth Lane and Hannah Allen."

Captain Waterhouse died in Poland, and according to the family record, April 2, 1840. The date on his gravestone is April 1, 1840.

CHILDREN.

All born in Barrington, N.H.

91. I. Joseph Waterhouse, born Feb. 4, 1772.
92. II. Sally Waterhouse, born Oct. 16, 1773.
93. III. John Waterhouse, born Aug. 22, 1775.
94. IV. George Waterhouse, born Sept. 4, 1778.
95. V. Elizabeth Waterhouse, born Feb. 13, 1783.
96. VI. Timothy Waterhouse, born Jan. 23, 1785.
97. VII. Polly Waterhouse, born Nov. 30, 1786.
98. VIII. Alice Waterhouse, born May 12, 1789.
99. IX. Richard Waterhouse, born Mar. 24, 1791.

"When Captain Waterhouse moved to Poland his family record was copied into the town record book as was the custom in those days. The dates do not in all cases agree with the above, which were taken from the

family record, are probably correct. According to the Poland records George was born Sept. 14; Elizabeth was born in 1781, but as she was baptized in 1783 this date is undoubtedly wrong. Timothy was born in 1783 but the date on his gravestone is 1785 which corresponds with the above record. Alice was born in 1788. and Richard Mar. 24, 1791.

30

TIMOTHY⁴ WATERHOUSE (John,³ Timothy,² Richard,¹) born in Barrington, N.H., Dec. 3, 1747, married first, Mary Tebbette, born 1754. She died Dec. 10, 1799 and he married second, Mrs. Mary Hoyt, of Greenland, N.H., born in Exeter, N.H., 1749. She was the widow of Daniel Hoyt and the daughter of the Rev. Joseph Adams and his wife, who was the widow Mary Greenleaf.

Timothy Waterhouse was a farmer and lived all his life in Barrington, on the West side of Waldron's Hill. He signed the Association Test in 1776. In 1797 he was licensed as "a suitable person to micks and sell spiritous liquors. He died Dec. 19, 1834.

CHILDREN.

All born in Barrington.

100. I. Jeremiah Waterhouse, born May 17, 1776.
101. II. George Waterhouse, born Nov. 27, 1777.
102. III. Mary Waterhouse, born 1780.
- IV. John Waterhouse, born 1783, lived and died, unmarried, in Barrington. He was about sixty years old when he died.
103. V. Benjamin Waterhouse, born
104. VI. Martha Waterhouse, born Nov. 11, 1792.
- VII. Betsey Waterhouse, born 1793, married James Twombly, born in Milton, N.H., Oct. 26, 1798. She died in Sebec, Me., Nov. 1848. When about thirty years old Mr. Twombly moved from Barrington to Sebec, where he lived some forty

years. He then moved to Dover, Me., where he resided until his death, May 30, 1838. He was a farmer until broken limbs made that work impossible, when he opened a grocery store. He was tax collector and constable for seventeen years in Sebec and for several years Postmaster at South Dover. He married a second time Mrs. Meribah C. Campbell. He was a man of strict integrity and a kind husband.

Children.

1. An adopted daughter.

DOLLA⁴ WATERHOUSE, (John,³ Timothy,² Richard,¹) born in Barrington, N.H., Jan. 17, 1750, married, Nov. 18, 1773, John, son of William and Elizabeth (Webster) Kingman, born in Rye, N.H., Dec. 23, 1747.

He was a farmer and lived all his life in Barrington, where he died Nov. 14, 1807. He signed the Association Test being one of the Selectmen at the time. His widow, Dolla, died in Barrington, Jan. 22, 1836.

CHILDREN.

1. Elizabeth Kingman, born in Barrington, N.H., Aug. 16, 1774, married Thomas, son of Rev. Benjamin and Joanna (O'Brien) Balch, born in Scarborough, Me., Oct. 2, 1765. She died in Barrington, Apr. 21, 1802 and he married second, Mrs. Judith Swain, of Gilmanton, N.H., by whom he had several children.

When about fourteen years of age Mr. Balch served with his father and a still younger brother, Benjamin, on board war vessels in the Revolution, his father being a chaplain. Thomas and Benjamin, on account of their youth, were together counted as one man and paid accordingly. On one occasion, about 1780, Thomas sailed one voyage with his uncle, Col. O'Brien, in the private armed ship Hannibal and was captured and sent to the Jersey prison ship, in New York harbor, but was soon exchanged.

After the war he remained in New England until sometime subsequent to 1820, when he removed to the neighborhood of Rochester, N.Y., but later settled at Waterloo, in the same state, where he lived until his death, Jan. 16, 1840.

He is spoken of as an highly respected, kindly, genial old gentleman who was very fond of relating his experiences of the Revolutionary War.

Children of Thomas and Elizabeth (Kingman) Balch.

1. Joanna Balch, born in Barrington, N.H., May 5, 1794, married, Nov. 20, 1820, John B., son of Ezekiel and Sally (Brown) Elliott, born in Thornton, N.H., June 21, 1789.

Mr. Balch studied medicine at Hanover, N.H., and began the practice of his profession in Barrington, N.H. In 1818 he located at Sweden, N.Y., where he remained about eight years, when he removed to Brockport and in 1835 settled in Tatarloo, both in the same state. Ten years later he returned to Brockport and lived there until 1849 when he removed to Holley, N.Y., where his wife died and he passed the remainder of his life with his children. Mrs. Elliott was a most gifted, charming woman, beloved and honored by all who knew her. She died Oct. 19, 1863. Mr. Elliott died in Hillsdale, Mich. Feb. 16, 1873.

Children:-

- i. John C. Elliott, b. and d. Mar. 19, 1822, Sweden, N.Y.
- ii. Ezekiel B. Elliott, b. July 18, 1823, Sweden, N.Y.

He was a graduate of Hamilton College, where he took first honors. He passed most of his active life in Washington, D.C. On the creation of an acuarial bureau by the U.S. Government, he was placed at its head by a vote of Congress and head the position until his death which occurred May 24, 1888. He never married.

- iii. Thomas Balch Elliott, b. in Sweden, N.Y., July 20, 1824, married May 20, 1853, Helen Agnes Brown, dau. of Ebenzer and Hannah (Shay) Brown, b. in Pen Yan, N.Y., Mar. 23, 1834. Mr. Elliott graduated from Hamilton College in the class of 1844 or 1845 and later from Jefferson Medical College of Philadelphia, after which he went to Boston, Mass., where he became a teacher of English and classics in a seminary and was also a correspondent of several newspapers, signing himself "Col. Kuzzy." In 1851 he accepted a position in the Indiana State Hospital for the insane at Indianapolis, which he held four years and then entered into private practice in the same city. In 1859 he retired from the practice of medicine and entered the flour and grain business. He erected the first grain elevator in Indianapolis and up to the close of the war did a large and successful business. During the war he was commissioned by Gov. Morton a special surgeon to investigate the condition of the hospitals of the armies of the Potomac and Cumberland. In 1859 he became President of the School Board. He found the schools in a deplorable condition as regards school buildings and the sessions being held only four months in the year. Through his efforts grew the magnificent system of public schools in Indianapolis which, further developed along the lines he laid out, now, in many respects lead the country.

He was for a time commercial editor of the Indianapolis Journal and President of the Board of Trade. During his residence in Indianapolis he was foremost in all movements for the public good and did much for the general improvement of the city.

In 1873, being desirous of living in a warmer climate, and this desire being shared also by a number of his friends, he formed an association known as the Indianapolis Colony, of which he became President. Agents were sent out who finally selected a tract of land for colonization in Southern California, where ~~Kasaxana~~ Pasadena now stands. Mr. Elliott removed there in the fall of 1874 with his family. In seeking a name for the new settlement he wrote to a college mate, who was a missionary among the Indians, for a name signifying crown or key of the valley and from the list sent him he chose a Chippewa word, "~~Kasaxana~~" "Pasadena" which became the name of the place now so famous. Mr. Elliott took the most enthusiastic interest in the new town and his faith in its future was unbounded.

He was a member of the Presbyterian church and a staunch abolitionist. He died Aug. 13, 1881.

Children:-

All born in Indianapolis.

1. Helen Joanna Elliott, b. June 9, 1854, married May 23, 1883, Arturo Bandin, b. in San Diego, Cal., July 23, 1853.
2. Hannah L. Elliott, b. Dec. 13, 1860, d. Jan. 22, 1861, in Indianapolis.
3. Georgia A. Elliott, b. July 2, 1862, m. Nov. 30, 1893, Arthur Ayres, b. in New Jersey.
4. Whittier Elliott, b. July 12, 1864.
5. Agnes Elliott, b. Apr. 25, 1868.
6. Norah B. Elliott, b. Oct. 11, 1872, d. Feb. 14, 1874, in Indianapolis.

- IV. Sarah E. Elliott, born in Brockport, N.Y., Nov. 23, 1827, married Sept. 17, 1850, Charles E., son of Dr. Freeman H. and Orpha (Gilbert) Mott, born in Brandon, Vt., Nov. 28, 1823.

When about two years old Mr. Mott removed with his parents to Lyons, N.Y., where he remained until his father's death in 1835. He then went to live with his mother's people. He attended school and academy at Kilville, N.Y., where he prepared to enter Williams College. Afterwards he became an instructor in the West-

ern Military Academy at Georgetown, Ken. Among his colleagues here was the Hon. James S. Blaine. Returning to Brockport he studied law with Judge Jerome Fuller and was admitted to the New York bar in 1848. In 1850 he removed to Hillsdale, Mich., and entered mercantile business remaining there until 1879. The next year he was admitted to the pension office at Washington where he continued until 1895. He was a man of the strictest integrity and had the respect and esteem of all his associates.

Children:-

1. Henry E. Mott, b. in Brockport, N.Y., Oct. 17, 1852, m. Oct. 8, 1878, Emma C. Pratt, b. in Hillsdale, Mich.,
2. Ellen E. Mott, b. June 12, 1855 in Brockport d. Dec. 24, 1868, in Hillsdale.
3. Sarah L. Mott, b. Oct. 18, 1864, in Hillsdale, d. Feb. 27, 1866, in Hillsdale.

V. Emily J. Elliott, born and died Aug. 19, 1829, in Bucksport, N.Y.

VI. Marcia Joanna Elliott, born in Bucksport, May 17, 1831, married Jan. 21, 1851, Daniel M., son of John Berry, born in Pompey, N.Y.

Mr. Berry was in the commission business in Brooklyn, N.Y., about ten years and then removed to Hillsdale, Mich. and engaged in the boot and shoe business. Some six years later he again went into the commission business in Indianapolis, Ind., but gave this up some five years afterwards and removed to Pasadena. He also lived in Los Angeles and Fernando, Cal. and died in the latter place Dec. 22, 1887. His wife died Dec. 23, 1871, in Indianapolis.

Mr. Berry was an editor during the last years of his life. He was an able writer, a versatile talker and a public spirited citizen.

Children:-

1. Alfred E. Berry, b. in Holley, N.Y., ~~xxxRahx24x~~ Dec. 7, 1853, m. Feb. 24, 1879, Francesca Rubio, b. in Los Angeles, Cal., Oct. 4, 1855.
2. Jessie E. Berry, b. in Holley, N.Y., July 25, 1860, m. Dec. 18, 1879, Russell P. Waite, b. in Shoboyagan,

Wis., Jan. 31, 1852.

VII. Lucretia A. Elliott, born Nov. 28, 1833, in Brockport, N.Y., died Apr. 20, 1891, in Washington, D.C., unmarried and beloved by many friends.

VIII. Jacob H. Elliott, born Sept. 30, 1837, died Aug. 29, 1838, in Waterloo, N.Y.

2. Benjamin Balch, born in Barrington, N.H., May 2, 1796, died Jan. 28, 1868.

3. Dorothy Kingman Balch, born in Barrington, N.H., Sept. 10, 1799, married Mar. 25, 1829, Jeremiah, son of Jeremiah and Margaret (Brewster) Caverno, born in Strafford, N.H., Mar. 17, 1797.

He was a farmer and lived on the old homestead in Strafford and died there Nov. 5, 1872. He was County Commissioner for Strafford County two terms and was an honest, "straight grained man." Mrs. Caverno was blind the last ten years of her life, yet kept up many of her household duties. She died July 28, 1870, in Strafford, N.H.

Children:-

1. William Matthew Caverno, b. in Strafford, N.H., Mar. 29, 1830, m. Nov. 20, 1856, Rosamond Fabens Furber, dau. of Benjamin and Olive (Hussey) Furber, b. in Somersworth, N.H., June 2, 1833.

Mr. Caverno was a farmer and fruit grower. He lived in Strafford until 1867 when he removed to New Jersey. In 1871 he went to Lee county, Ill., and in 1875 to Kenosha, Wis., where he lived for many years. He died in Thorsby, Ala., Oct. 7, 1901. Mrs. Caverno died Dec. 30, 1886, in Chicago, Ill.

Children:-

1. Scott Caverno, b. in Strafford, N.H., Apr. 16, 1858, m. Dec. 25, 1880, Hattie Maria Gerrans, b. in Dunkirk, N.Y., Jan. 24, 1856.

He resides in Birmingham, Ala.

2. Carl Caverno, b. Aug. 30, 1859, Strafford, died Dec. 13, 1879, Somers, Wis.

3. Cora Caverno, b. in Strafford, N.H., Dec. 9, 1863. ~~She~~ She has been a teacher in the public schools of Chicago for many years.

II. Charles Caverno, b. in Strafford, N.H., Aug. 19, 1832, m. first, Nov. 14, 1859, Abbie Hortonsia Smith, b. in Waitsfield, Vt.,

Jan. 16, 1833. She was the dau. of Ithamar and Ruth (Barnard) Smith. She died Aug. 5, 1886, in Lombard, Ill., and he m. second, Sept. 11, 1888, Anna Case Matson, b. in Oswego, N.Y., July 29, 1846. She was the dau. of Newell and Flora (Case) Matson.

Mr. Caverno was graduated from Dartmouth College in 1854 and for two years taught in Thetford Academy, Vermont. In 1855-56 he attended a Law School at Albany, N.Y., after which he studied law for a time at Lockport, N.Y. and while there was Supt. of schools for Niagara County. In 1857 he began the practice of law in Milwaukee, Wis. and was elected to the State Legislature in 1860. Eye trouble compelled him to give up the practice of law and he settled on a farm in Chippewa County, Wis. In 1864 he began preaching as a Congregational Minister, in Kaukesha, Wis. He attended the Chicago Theological Seminary for some two years and in 1866 was ordained and settled as pastor at Lake Mills, Wis., where he remained five years. After several pastorates he was settled over the church at Boulder, Col., where he continued until his retirement in 1898. He then removed to Lombard, Ill., where he resided until his death, Sept. 29, 1916. In 1854 he received the degree of A.B. from Dartmouth College and in 1857 the degree of A.M. from the same institution. In 1891 the University of Colorado bestowed upon him the degree of LL.D. Mr. Caverno was a contributor to several religious periodicals and wrote one or two books. In reviewing one, "A Harrow Ax" in Biblical Criticism, the Outlook says, - "A man who preaches as Dr. Caverno writes would compel his hearers to think."

Dr. Caverno was much interested in this genealogy and once surprised the writer by sending two hundred postage stamps to help in the work. The correspondence with him is remembered with much pleasure.

Children:-

1. Julia Harwood Caverno, b. Dec. 19, 1862, Milwaukee, Wis. She has been an instructor in Greek in Smith College, Northampton, Mass. for many years and since 1912 has been head of the Greek Dept.

2. Xenophon Caverno, b. in Saukeshu, Wis., Dec. 26, 1865, m. July 12, 1892, Matilda H. Bacon, b. in Barbaboo, Wis., Feb. 6, 1869. She d. Feb. 9, 1897 in Kewaunee, Wis. and he m. second Aug. 2, 1898, Louise Lay, b. in Kewaunee, June 17, 1873.

3. Prescott Caverno, b. Aug. 9, 1869, Lake Mills, Wis. d. Aug. 17, 1880, at the same place.

4. Dorothea Ruth Caverno, b. Apr. 12, 1875, Lombard, Ill. She is a teacher in Northampton, Mass.

111. Margaret Caverno, ~~born~~ b. in Strafford, N.H., Mar. 19, 1856, m. Nov. 16, 1882, Andrew Hanson, b. in Madbury, N.H., Apr. 22, 1824. He was the son of Sargent and Lois (Jenkins) Hanson.

Mr. Hanson was a farmer and lived in Madbury until about 1883 when he moved to Dover, N.H., where he lived until his death. His wife d. in Dover, Apr. 23, 1907.

No Children.

4. Daughter Balch, born Apr. 15, 1802 died Apr. 16, 1802, Barrington, N.H.

11. Alice Kingman, born in Barrington, N.H., April 20, 1778, married Sept. 20, 1800, Eleazer, son of Peter and Sarah (Hayes) Young, born in Barrington, N.H., Nov. 8, 1777.

Mr. Young fitted for college at Exeter, N.H., but did not graduate, being obliged to leave on account of the sickness of his father. He became a farmer and lived in Barrington all his life, where he died Oct. 13, 1844.

He held several town offices and was considered one of the noted men of the town. His wife, Alice, died in Barrington, July 12, 1834 and he afterwards married Deborah Tebbetts.

Children of Eleazer and Alice (Kingman) Young.

1. Jonathan Young, b. in Barrington, Sept. 28, 1807, m. Sept. 20, 1835, Sophia M., dau. of Isaac and Hannah (Ham) Ricker, b. in Madbury, N.H., May 17, 1815.

He was a farmer and always lived in Barrington where he died Aug. 18, 1873. He represented his town in the Legislature in 1847-48. His widow d. in Barrington Sept. 13, 1889.

Children:-

1. John E. Young, b. in Barrington, Mar. 8, 1840,
m. 1861, Clara A. Rodsdon, b. in Dover, N.H.,
June 6, 1841.
He was a farmer and lived in Barrington,
where he d. Jan. 5, 1875. His widow later m.
Charles Ellis and resided in Beverly, Mass.

Children:-

1. Edmund H. Young, b. Jan. 22, 1862.
 2. Ruth E. Young, b. Aug. 16, 1864.
 3. Julia A. Young, b. Aug. 16, 1866.
 4. George H. Young, b. Aug. 7, 1868.
 5. Helen F. Young, b. Dec. 12, 1871.
 6. John E. Young, b. Sept. 26, 1874, d. infancy.
11. Alice A. Young, b. June 21, 1842, Barrington.
She resided in Barrington, unm.
111. Ellen E. Young, b. in Barrington, June 13, 1844,
m. Dec. 15, 1867, George H. Tebbetts, b. in
Barrington, July 27, 1843.
He was a last maker and resided in Dover, N.
H., where he d. Apr. 26, 1885. His widow d.
in Dover, Mar. 22, 1894.

No children.

- IV. Fannie S. Young, b. in Barrington, July 27,
1846, m. Sept. 29, 1872, Walter S. Grover, b.
in Dover, N.H., Aug. 15, 1845.
He was a farmer and resided in Barrington.

Children.

1. Harry C. Grover, b. May 5, 1874, Barrington.
- V. Edwin R. Young, b. in Barrington, Dec. 9, 1847,
m. May 11, 1892, Mary Hall, b. in Barnstead,
N.H., June 14, 1858.
He is a farmer and lived most of his life
in Barrington.

No children.

- VI. Frank H. Young, b. in Barrington, Jan. 22, 1850,
m. Nov. 25, 1877, Ann W. Gage, b. in Dover, N.
H.
He is a shoe cutter and resided at one time
in Haverhill, Mass.

No children.

- VII. Eliza H. Young, b. in Barrington, May 16, 1854,
m. Dec. 24, 1875, John F. Small, b. in Madbury,
N.H., June 10, 1856.
At one time he was a foreman in a lace leath-

er factory in Dover.

No children.

VIII. Jeremiah K. Young, b. in Barrington, Nov. 19, 1855, m. Mar. 16, 1878, Fannie E. Locke, b. in Barrington, Sept. 13, 1859. He was a farmer and lived in Barrington, where he d. Mar. 5, 1895. His widow m. Charles A. Grover.

Children:-

All born in Barrington, N.H.

1. Lewis E. Young, b. Nov. 3, 1878.
2. Charles S. Young, b. Mar. 19, 1881.
3. Mertie A. Young, b. Feb. 28, 1884.
4. Herman E. Young, b. Jan. 21, 1887.
5. A daughter. b. Mar. 28, 1889.
d. May 6, 1889.
6. Fred L. Young, b. May 18, 1892.

IX. Irving K. Young, b. Dec. 5, 1856. He is a farmer and lives in Barrington, unm.

X. Charles S. Young, b. Mar. 23, 1858. d. Apr. 8, 1877, in Barrington.

XI. Mary S. Young, b. Jan. 7, 1862, m. Mar. 16, 1886, Leonard F. Keniston, b. in Tolfboro, N.H., Nov. 27, 1865.

He is a commercial traveller and has lived most of his life in Dover, N.H.

Child:-

1. Perley J.Y. Keniston, b. Dec. 13, 1886, in Dover, N.H.

III. Lydia Kingman, born Sept. 23, 1783, in Barrington, died, Nov. 28, 1843, in Barrington, unmarried.

IV. John Kingman, ^{born} in Barrington, Oct. 15, 1786, married Mar. 18, 1818, Lydia Hicks Drew, daughter of Beniah and Sarah (Hicks) Drew, born in Madbury, N.H., Dec. 3, 1796. He was a farmer and lived in Barrington until 1825 when he removed to Madbury where he lived about twenty years. In 1846 he removed to Durham, N.H., where he resided until his death, May 31, 1854. His wife died in Madbury, Nov. 23, 1828. Sarah Hicks, above mentioned, mother of Lydia, was the daughter of Joseph and Lydia (Brewster) Hicks of "Hick's Hill", Madbury and Lydia Brewster was the daughter of Margaret (Waterhouse) Brewster, sister of John Waterhouse the first, of Barrington.

Children:-

1. Sarah Ann Kingman, b. in Barrington, Nov. 15, 1818, m. David Burbank and d. in Providence, R.I. soon after 1841, leaving an infant son, John Kingman Burbank.

2. John William Kingman, born in Barrington, N.H., Jan. 1, 1821, married Oct. 15, 1849, Mary S. daughter of Daniel M. and Folla (Wheeler) Christie, born in Dover, N.H., Apr. 13, 1825.

He fitted for college at Phillip's Exeter Academy at Exeter, N.H., and entered Harvard in 1839. Graduated in June 1843 and studied law in the office of the Hon. Daniel Webster in Boston, Mass. He was admitted to the Bar in Cincinnati, Ohio, in 1845 and practiced there two years. He then returned to Dover, N.H., and formed a partnership with the Hon. Daniel M. Christie which continued until 1862, when he entered the army as Colonel of the 15th regiment of N. H. volunteers, his commission being dated Oct. 7, 1862. He served in the 19th Army Corps under Gen. Banks at New Orleans and was engaged in the siege of Port Hudson, La. His term of service expiring he was mustered out Aug. 13, 1863. After his return from the army he resided in Durham, N. H. until May 1869 when he was appointed Associate Justice of the Supreme Court of the Territory of Wyoming by President Grant. After serving one term of four years he returned to private practice and for several years resided at Cheyenne and at Laramie City, Wyoming. Later he engaged in the manufacturing business at Cedar Falls, Iowa.

He died 1903.

His wife died in Durham, Dec. 16, 1866.

Children:-

1. Grace Christie Kingman, b. in Dover, N.H., Sept. 18, 1850, m. Max Goldschmidt, of N. Y., and had one son, George K. Mr. Goldschmidt has had his name changed to Helburt.
11. Dan Christie Kingman, b. in Dover, Mar. 6, 1852, m. June 5, 1878, Eugenia, dau. of Napoleon A. and Caroline (Thomas) Jennings, b. in Philadelphia, Pa., Jan. 12, 1852.
He was appointed to the U. S. Military Academy at West Point from New Hampshire in 1870 and graduated in 1875, standing second in his class, and was commissioned 2nd Lieut. in Engineer Corps. He took part in suppressing the railroad riots in 1877 and in 1879 was promoted to 1st Lieut. During this year and the next he was instructor of civil and military engineering at West Point and in 1881 was an assistant professor. He then became Engineer Officer of the Military Dept. of the Platte which position he held until the close of 1886. During this time he was specially selected by Lieut. Gen. Sheridan to take charge of the construction of roads and bridges in the Yellowstone National Park, being the first engineer appointed to that duty.

He prepared a general plan for its improvement which was followed and at the request of the Sec. of the Interior, Mr. Lamar, he was retained on duty at that place an extra year. In the year 1886 he was commissioned Captain and in the latter part of that year was placed in charge of the 4th District of the Mississippi River. Under his direction improvements were made at various points along the river, in connection with which he disbursed nearly a million and a quarter dollars. During the unprecedented high water of 1890 he was charged with the protection of all the levees in his district and such was the skill, energy and fidelity with which he performed this duty that the Legislature of the State of Louisiana passed a concurrent resolution, which was approved by the Governor, in appreciation of his services. He was then transferred to Oswego, N. Y. and placed in charge of the defensive works at Ports Niagara and Ontario and of the improvements of all the harbors on Lake Ontario east of Oak Orchard. In the fall of 1895 he was put in charge of the improvements of the Tennessee River and its tributaries, with headquarters at Chattanooga, Tenn. He was made a Brigadier General Oct 12, 1913 when he became Chief of Engineers. He was retired Mar. 6, 1916 and died Nov. 14, 1916, at Atlantic City, N.J.

Children:-

1. Dan Christie Kingman, b. Apr. 10, 1879, West Point, N.Y.
 2. Ralph Willcox Kingman, b. July 9, 1880, West Point.
 3. John Jennings Kingman, b. June 18, 1882, Omaha, Neb.
 4. Frederick Hustis Kingman, b. July 4, 1888, Lakeside, Wis.
111. Helen M. Kingman, b. Apr. 22, 1854, Dover, Resides at Cedar Falls, Ia., unm.
- Lv. John Charles Kingman, b. in Dover, Nov. 30, 1856, m. first, June 29, 1887, Carrie Adele Seward, b. in Tughrkeepsie, N. Y., Sept. 13, 1861. She was the dau. of James A. and Mary B. (Platt) Seward. She d. in Cedar Falls, Ia., July 9, 1890, and he m. second, Aug. 9, 1893, Lura E., dau. of Joseph and Sarah J. (Overman) Chase, b. in Cedar Falls, May 22, 1865. He graduated from Dartmouth College in 1878 and went to Wyoming Territory, where he engaged in stock raising. In 1883 he removed to Iowa and became interested in the manufacture

of straw paper and to some extent in milling, but in 1894 decided to carry out a long deferred purpose to study medicine and entered the Medical School of Northwestern University of Chicago,

Children:-

1. Arthur Seward Kingman, b. July 29, 1889, Cedar Falls, Ia.
- V. Elizabeth Kingman, b. Sept. 20, 1861, Durham, N.H., d. May 1863 in the same place.
- VI. Jeremiah Kingman, b. in Durham, Nov. 20, 1864, m. Dec. 6, 1889, Mary Elizabeth Tuttle, b. in Geneseo, Ill., Apr. 10, 1866. She was the dau. of Alonzo A. and Mary M. (Jameson) Tuttle. In 1877 he went to Cheyenne, Wyoming Ter. and about six years later removed to Cedar Falls, Ia. In 1884 he entered the State School of Mines at Golden, Colorado, and graduated in 1888 as a mining engineer. The next year he went to Helena, Mont., and went into business as a chemist and assayer and about three years later removed to Los Angeles, Cali., where he became a ~~branch~~ draftsman for a firm of patent attorneys.

Children:-

1. Victor Christie Kingman, b. July 26, 1891, Helena, Mont.
2. Helen Mary Kingman, b. Feb. 21, 1894, Los Angeles, Cali.
3. Lydia Celia Kingman, born Aug. 22, 1824, Barrington, died 1848, Durham, unmarried.
4. Charles Henry Kingman, born in Madbury, N.H., Jan. 29, 1827, married Nov. 22, 1848, Mary Elizabeth Hanson, born in Madbury, Mar. 29, 1828. She was the daughter of Sargent and Lois (Jenkins) Hanson. Mr. Kingman was a farmer and lived on the homestead in Madbury, ~~where~~ he died. He died in Dover, N.H., Nov. 16, 1868. He held various town offices. His widow died in Dover, Jan. 27, 1914.

Children:-

1. Annie Lydia Kingman, b. in Madbury, Dec. 29, 1849, m. Jan. 12, 1876, James A., son of John and Ruth A. (Wentworth) Herne, b. in Somersworth,

N.H., Feb. 6, 1836.

Mr. Horne learned the jewellers trade in Great Falls, N.H., and removed to Dover in 1862 where he built up an extensive business. About 1882, his health failing, he sold out his business and travelled a few years, but getting no better he returned home and died in Madbury, Apr. 8, 1885. He was a 32nd degree Mason and also a member of the Grand Lodge, Knights of the Pythias.

Child:-

- I. James A. Horne, b. June 29, 1884, Dover.
- II. Ella Mary Kingman, b. in Madbury, May 14, 1853, m. Oct. 1, 1874, Edward James Hayes, b. in Madbury, Nov. 16, 1846. He was the son of Reuben and Elizabeth A. (Chadwick) Hayes. He was connected with Jackson & Co's Portsmouth and Boston express for some five years but later engaged in the grocery business in Dover which he conducted until he retired.

Children:-

- I. Alice Kingman Hayes, b. in Madbury, July 25, 1875, m. Claude Thayer Rice, of Portland, Oregon.
- III. Charles Sargent Kingman, b. in Madbury, Oct. 9, 1857, m. Aug. 22, 1883, Fanny, dau. of Alexander and Ann S. (Henderson) Frazier, b. in Dover, May 27, 1860. He was in the jewelry business in Dover from 1876 to 1885 when he retired and has since resided on the homestead farm in Madbury. He represented the latter town in the Legislature from 1891 to 1893.

Child:-

- I. Lotta Sargent Kingman, b. in Madbury, Jan. 30, 1885 m. Thomas Jefferson Laton.
- IV. John Lincoln Kingman, b. in Madbury, June 15, 1859, He was in the drug business in Salem, Mass. where he d. May 8, 1883, unm.

V. Dolla Kingman, born in Barrington, N.H., Jan. 20, 1790, married her cousin, Samuel H. Waterhouse.

VI. Jeremiah Kingman, born in Barrington, Sept. 23, 1793, married Mar. 1828, Elizabeth Hayes.

He was a farmer and private banker and lived and died in Barrington, where he died Dec. 7, 1873. His wife died in Barrington. He was a man of extraordinary ability in business and of wide acquaintance with literature.

No children.

3 2

LYDIA⁴ WATERHOUSE (John,³ Timothy,² Richard,¹) born in Barrington, N.H., April 5, 1752, married Richard, son of John and Mary (Rand) Garland, born in Barrington, Mar. 11, 1754 or 55.

Mr. Garland was a farmer and lived the first part of his life in Barrington and Northwood, N.H. He signed the Association Test in 1776. Mar. 23, 1793 he sold to Joshua Foss half a grist mill and land, being a part of lot No. 11, in the third range of lots in Barrington. About 1800 he removed to Poland, Me., where he lived until his death, Nov. 30, 1834. His wife died in Poland, Dec. 16, 1825.

CHILDREN:-

1. Alice Garland, born in Northwood, N.H., Sept. 10, 1773, (Poland records say Sept. 18) married Nov. 13, 1792, Isaac, son of William and Olive (Garland?) Hayes, born in Barrington, Feb. 6, 1775. Mr. Hayes was a farmer and removed to Poland, Me., about 1800 where he lived until his death, Sept. 28, 1856. He cleared up a farm of several hundred acres from a practical wilderness, and was highly esteemed as a man. His widow died in Poland, Dec. 27, 1858.

Children:-

1. Dennis Hayes, b. in Barrington, Jan. 6, 1795, m. first, Nov. 29, 1821, Mary Johnson, prob. dau. of Jeremiah Johnson. She d. in Harrison, Me., Feb. 11, 1835, and he m. second, Hannah Shaw, b. in Bridgewater, Mass., Feb. 1796. She was prob. a widow and said to have been the dau. of Edward Keith. Mr. Hayes was a carpenter and lived in Poland, Harrison

and Oxford, Me. He died in Oxford, July 29, 1869. His widow d. in Oxford, Oct. 18, 1888, at the age of 93.

Children:-

- I. Harriet Hayes, b. Nov. 29, 1823, d. young in Portland.
- II. Charles Johnson Hayes, b. Dec. 29, 1824, m. Apr. 30, 1855, Emilie DeQuindre and d. July 9, 1888, in Kalamazoo, Mich.
- III. Abigail Hayes b. Aug. 23, 1826, m. Albion K. Morris.
- IV. Dennis Hayes, b. July 10, 1828, d. Nov. 1829.
- V. Martha Hayes, b. Dec. 9, 1829, d. young.
- VI. Harriet Hayes, b. July 1, 1830, m. I. P. Farrington, of Portland, Me. and d. Jan. 26, 1853, at Portland.
- VII. Henry Sidney Hayes, b. Feb. 3, 1832, m. Florence Rawson. ~~Kentworth~~
- VIII. Francis Carter Hayes, b. Apr. 22, 1834, in Harrison, Me., m. Nov. 30, 1854, Sarah Wentworth Garcelon, and d. in Portland, Apr. 25, 1893.

By second wife.

- IX. Mary Angelia Hayes, b. in Oxford, Me., Dec. 29, 1836, m. Rev. Thomas L. Ellis.
- X. Cyrus Shaw Hayes, b. in Oxford, Feb. 27, 1839, m. Jan. 10, 1866, Lizzie Thomas Jenkins.
- XI. Isabella Estella Hayes, b. in Oxford, Feb. 6, 1842, m. George R. Hersey.

2. Richard Hayes, b. in Barrington, N.H., Nov. 12, 1796, m. Nov. 11, 1819, Rebecca, dau. of Moses Bailey. Mr. Hayes was a farmer and carpenter. About 1830 he removed to Greenwood, Me., where, except for a time spent in Oxford, he lived the rest of his life. He d. Oct. 3, 1873, while on a visit to Poland, Me. His wife d. in Greenwood.

Children:-

- I. Sidney Hayes, b. in Poland, Me., Aug. 1, 1820, m. June 2, 1848, Delphina Cole, of Greenwood.
- II. Joan Hayes, b. in Poland, Feb. 8, 1822, m. about 1841 Joshua Thaxter, of Portland, Me., and removed to Carson, Nev.
- III. Richard Hayes, b. Aug. 30, 1826, Poland, d. July 19, 1830, Greenwood.
- IV. Alice Mary Hayes, b. July 5, 1831, Greenwood, d. June 7, 1853, Greenwood.
- V. Lucina Hayes, b. in Oxford, Me., Feb. 23, 1840, m. Mar. 21, 1857, Benj. F. Waterhouse, of Poland.
3. Joan Hayes, b. in Poland, Mar. 12, 1801, m. July 4, 1831, Moses, son of Moses and Lydia (Perry?) Judkins, b. prob. in Greenwood. He was a farmer and lived in Poland the most of his life and d. there Nov. 1883. His wife, Joan, d. in Poland June 30, 1834 or 5.

Children:-

1. Alice H. Hayes, b. 1832, in Poland, d. Oct. 1852, Poland.
11. Delphina Hayes, b. June 1834, d. July 1834, Poland.
4. Isaac Hayes, b. in Poland, Dec. 6, 1804, m. Jan. 3, 1829, Martha Johnson Swett, b. in Bath, Me., Sept. 12, 1808. He was a carpenter the greater part of his life but later became a farmer. He lived in Poland, Harrison, Greenwood, Norway and Lewiston, Me., dying in the latter place, Feb. 16, 1885. He was a kind husband and father, respected by all. His wife d. July 23, 1881, in Norway.

Children:-

1. Nancy Johnson Hayes, b. in Poland, June 7, 1830. m. Rollin Towne and d. in Norway.
11. Martha Emeline Hayes, b. in Poland, Sept. 10, 1831. m. Samuel Newell Young.
111. Sewall Franklin Hayes, b. Poland, Mar. 21, 1833, m. Fannie Bishop and d. in Lewiston, Mar. 5, 1869.
- 1V. Adelia Ann Hayes, b. in Harrison, Feb. 22, 1835, m. William Augustus Hall and d. in Austin, Nev., Sept. 19, 1880.
- V. William Henry Hayes, b. in Harrison, Oct. 7, 1836, m. Leonora Kelley, and d. in Lewiston, Me., Apr. 1900.
- VI. Austin Hayes, b. in Poland, July 29, 1838. He was shot in the battle of Baton Rouge, La., Aug. 5, 1862 and d. unm.
- VII. John Garland Hayes, b. Apr. 12, 1840, in Poland, d. in the army at New Orleans, La., Feb. 10, 1863. He was unm.
- VIII. Isaac Augustus Hayes, b. in Greenwood, Me., May 10, 1842, m. Emma Farnus.
- IX. Sidney Clinton Hayes, b. in Greenwood, Aug. 27, 1844, m. Maggie Cluin and d. in Massachusetts.
- X. Mary Frances Hayes, b. in Greenwood, Aug. 4, 1846, m. Edward C. Butler, and d. Oct. 1, 1882, in Norway, Me.
- XI. Ida Ella Hayes, b. in Greenwood, Feb. 20, 1854, m. James K. French and d. Oct. 27, 1878, in Norway.
5. William Hayes, b. in Poland, June 27, 1808, m. Dec. 23, 1830, Bethany Hall. He learned the blacksmith's trade and after his marriage settled in Norway, Me., where he lived until a short time before his death when he bought a farm in Waterford, Me., and d. there May 14, 1860.

Children:-

All born in Norway.

1. Amanda J. Hayes, b. June 20, 1832, m. July 3, 1854, James Lewis, and lived in Portland, Me.
11. Luther P. Hayes, b. Apr. 22, 1834, d. Aug. 19, 1853,

- in Norway.
- III. William F. Hayes, b. Jan. 14, 1836, d. in Norway, 1902, unm.
 - IV. George L. Hayes, b. Sept. 20, 1838, d. July 1902, Norway.
 - V. Ella A. Hayes, b. Jan. 9, 1843, d. Mar. 3, 1863, Norway.
 - VI. Stephen A. Hayes, b. Mar. 30, 1852, d.
 - VII. Emma L. Hayes, b. Feb. 9, 1854, m. Mar. 4, 1876, S.L. Saunders.

6. Hezekiah Hayes, b. in Poland, Me., Nov. 3, 1810, m. Jan. 1, 1837, Sarah Jane Rand, b. in Gorham, Me., July 4, 1818. She was the dau. of Rufus and Eliza (Fickett) Rand. Mr. Hayes was a farmer and lived on the homestead in Poland all his life, respected and beloved by all his fellow townsmen. He d. Sept. 3, 1874. His widow d. in Poland, Mar. 25, 1895.

Children:-

All born in Poland.

- I. Alphreda Elizabeth Hayes, b. May 29, 1838. Lived at home and d. unm. Mar. 30, 1914.
- II. Josie Judkins Hayes, b. May 5, 1840, m. Sept. 25, 1866, Lorenzo D., son of Obadiah and Sarah (Paddock) Lyon, b. in Halifax, Mass., Feb. 3, 1820. He carried on a boot and shoe business at Lowell and Clinton, Mass. In 1873 he went into the retail clothing business in No. Attleboro, Mass., in which he remained until his death, May 1, 1888. His widow d. in Boston, Mass., Oct. 16, 1906.

Child:-

- I. Frederick D. Hayes, b. Sept. 30, 1869, in Clinton, m. Feb. 27, 1908, Grace V. Mac Dougal. He is a physician and resides in Roxbury, Mass.
 - III. Lewis H. Hayes, b. June 22, 1842, lived at home, unm.
 - IV. Emma Alma Hayes, b. July 3, 1852, lived at home, unm.
7. Sewell Flagg Hayes, b. in Poland, May 6, 1813, m. first, Dec. 3, 1833, Eliza Jane Hoyt, b. in Naples, Me. She was the dau. of Phineas Hoyt. She d. in Poland, Dec. 28, 1846, and he m. second, Hannah Jane Dresser. He m. third, Jan. 2, 1854, Lucy Caroline Whitcomb, b. in Nelson, N.H., Dec. 29, 1831. She was the dau. of Dexter and Rebecca (Griffin) Whitcomb. He was a blacksmith and lived in Poland, Marlboro,

Mass, Keene, N.H., and in the west for a time. He d. in Harrisville, N.H., where he spent the last few years on a farm, Jan.13,1899.

Children:-

By first wife.

- I. Junius Dresser Hayes, b. in Poland, Oct.17, 1836, m. Sept.26,1863, Lucinda Kenney Staples. He was in the Civil war.
- II. Edward Kent Hayes, b. in Poland, June 24,1838, m. first, Jonnie M. Goodenough, second Miranda R. Matthews, and d. in Stoneham, Mass. Dec.10,1913.
- III. Watson Andrew Hayes, b. in Poland, Dec.7,1840, Mina Brown and d. in Stoneham, Oct.22,1893. He was in the Civil war.
- IV. Joseph Rice Hayes, b. in Poland, Sept.16,1843. He was in the Civil war and was twice married.

By second wife.

- V. Montville Sewell Hayes, b. in Poland, d. in Gorham, Me., unm.

By third wife.

- VI. Charles Flagg Hayes, b. in Nelson, N.H., Mar. 30,1856, m. Apr.24,1879, Anna Richardson.
- VII. Fred Clifton Hayes, b. in Harrisville, N.H., Feb.21,1859, m. Sept.8,1906, Asenath Haynes and d. in Kingston, N.H., Dec.13,1909.
- VIII. Nellie Jane Hayes, b. in Keene, N.H., Jan.9, 1862, d. in Keene, Oct.1,1865.
- IX. Ada Frances Hayes, b. in Keene, N.H., Nov.7, 1865, m. Jan.11,1892, Merrill Mason.
- II. John Garland, born in Northwood, N.H., Dec.24,1776, married Hannah Hayes, born in Barrington, N.H., June 16,1777. He lived in Poland and later in Greenwood, Me. He and his wife both died in the year 1838.

Children:-

- I. Olive Garland, b. in Barrington, Nov.16,1798, m. Nov.10, 1818, Francis Shaw, b. 1795. He d. 1864, and she d. 1870.

Children:-

- I. Albert M. Shaw, b. 1818, m. Caroline D. Emery.
- II. Daniel Shaw, b. 1827, m. Olive Martin.
- III. Francis S. Shaw, m. Eliza Ann Whittle.
- IV. Mary C. Shaw, b. 1837, m. Willard G. Whittle.
- V. Infant. d. in infancy.

2. Daniel L. Garland, b. Feb. 12, 1801, Poland.
3. William Garland, b. Feb. 2, 1803, Poland, d. 1836.
4. Richard Garland, b. in Poland, Aug. 25, 1805, m. 1827, Harriet Roberts, b. in Portland, Me., 1810.
He was a merchant and lived in Greenwood, Me., until 1850 when he removed to Burns, Wis., and in 1861 located in Onalaska, Wis.

Children:-

- I. Addison Garland, b. in Greenwood, Oct. 13, 1828, m. 1855, Hannah A. Noble and resided in Santa Barbara, Calif.
- II. Richard H. Garland, b. in Norway, Me., Sept. 1, 1830, m. 1856, Isabella McClintock, and resided at Ordway, So. Dakota.
- III. Rebecca Garland, b. July 13, 1832, Greenwood, d. 1842, in Greenwood.
- IV. Susan M. Garland, b. in Greenwood, Aug. 4, 1836, m. 1866, Richard Bailey, and resided at Onalaska, Wis.
5. Maria Garland, b. in Poland, June 13, 1808, m. Aug. 2, 1826, Benjamin Herrick, b. 1801.
He resided in Norway, Me., and d. in 1856.

Children:-

- I. Dennis Herrick, b. 1827, m. 1859, Esther Brown and resided in Greenwood. He d. 1890.
- II. Stephen S. Herrick, b. 1829, d. 1841.
- III. Abner H. Herrick, m. 1856, Hannah Grant.
- IV. Lydia S. Herrick, b. 1832, m. 1855, Amos Packer.
- V. Benjamin R. Herrick, b. 1834, d. 1861.
- VI. Hannah M. Herrick, 1836, m. Charles Milliken and d. 1888.
- VII. Lucinda Herrick, b. 1839, m. 1857, Nathan M. Small and d. 1897.
- VIII. Harriet E. Herrick, m. Lyman R. Martin, 1860, and d. 1887.
- IX. Delbert S. Herrick, b. 1844, m. Maggie Richards and d. 1882, in Boston, Mass.
6. Samuel Garland, b. Mar. 5, 1811.
7. John Garland, b. June 14, 1817, m. first, Mar. 20, 1838, Nancy Young and second, Adaline B., dau. of Richard Whittle.
He lived in Greenwood, and d. Dec. 28, 1880.

Children:-

- I. Willard H. Garland, b. May 24, 1861, m. June 16, 1883, Blanche R. Dustin and resided in Portland, Me.
- II. Winnie J. Garland, b. Feb. 16, 1864, d. Aug. 17, 1888, unm.
8. Eliza Garland, b. Feb. 1821, d. 1884.

- III. Daniel Garland, born in Northwood, N.H., July 19, 1779, married June 11, 1801, Phoebe Paine, of Westbrook, Me., and lived there.
No children.

IV. Richard Garland, born Mar. 8, 1782, in Northwood. Nothing known of him.

V. Polly Garland, born in Barrington, May 29, 1784, married Apr. 1805, Jeremiah, son of Daniel and Mary (Scrster) Schellinger, born in Falmouth, Me., June 15, 1777.
Mr. Schellinger was a farmer and lived in Poland, where he died Oct. 17, 1869. His wife died in Poland, July 9, 1832.

Children:-

1. Daniel Schellinger, b. in Poland, Oct. 21, 1805, m. Dec. 16, 1833, Sarah, dau. of Ebenezer and Betsey (Boody) Morton, b. in Jackson, Me., Jan. 2, 1807.
He was a farmer and always lived in Poland, where he d. Jan. 2, 1892.

Children:-

1. Lewis A. Schellinger, b. in Poland, Dec. 3, 1834, m. Nov. 27, 1871, Hattie E. Knight, b. in Poland, 1848.
He was a farmer and resided in Windham, Me., He d. about 1905.
- II. Harriet E. Schellinger, b. Mar. 29, 1836, Poland.
She lived at home, but d. in Cumberland, abt. 1900, unm.
- III. Orrin A. Schellinger, b. June 21, 1838, Poland, d. Mar. 17, 1839, Poland.
- IV. Adeline E. Schellinger, b. in Poland, Sept. 3, 1840, m. Nov. 30, 1864, George W. Schellinger, and d. Oct. 4, 1867. in Poland.

Child:-

1. Addie A. Schellinger, b. Sept. 5, 1866.
- V. Orrin A. Schellinger, b. Apr. 14, 1843, Poland, d. 1899, Poland.
- VI. Charles H. Schellinger, b. May 27, 1846, Poland, d. July 28, 1849, Poland.
- VII. Benjamin F. Schellinger, b. in Poland, Mar. 28, 1852, m. Nov. 29, 1879, Jennie E. Johnson, b. in Machias, Me., Jan. 22, 1855.
He was a farmer and lived in E. Poland, and Casco, Me., where he d. about 1913.

Children:-

1. Mabel J. b. Sept. 22, 1884, Poland, m. and d.
Lewis O. b. Mar. 21, 1888, Poland.
2. Lydia Schellinger, b. in Poland, Oct. 14, 1807, m. first,

Charles W. Starbird, of Mechanic Falls, Me., and lived there some twenty years. He d. Feb. 7, 1863, and she m. second, David McCann, of Mechanic Falls. He d. in Nov. 1870, and she d. Jan. 11, 1870.

Child:-

1. Frank. d. infancy.

3. Joan E. Schellinger, b. in Poland, July 31, 1809, m. Feb. 7, 1844, Oliver, son of Oliver and Nancy (Heed) Wyman, b. in Woburn, Mass., Feb. 12, 1818. He was a contractor. Moved to San Francisco in 1851 and resided there until his death, June 7, 1868. His widow d. there, June 5, 1878.

Children:-

1. Mary E. Wyman, b. in Lowell, Mass., Oct. 11, 1845, m. Nov. 13, 1861, Caroline C. Dunn, b. in Melbourne, Australia. He is a carpenter and they resided in San Francisco, Calif.

Children:-

All born in San Francisco.

1. . . John C. Dunn, b. May 9, 1863, m. Jan. 15, 1889, Alice Cassan.
2. . . Cornelius F. Dunn, b. June 12, 1866, d. May 2, 1867, San Francisco.
3. . . George W. Dunn, b. June 12, 1866, d. Apr. 14, 1879, San Jose, Calif.
4. . . Ellen C. Dunn, b. June 29, 1872, m. Sept. 25, 1893, Glenn B. Miller, of Michigan.

11. George A. Wyman, b. May 28, 1848, Lowell, Mass., d. July 1, 1863, San Francisco.

4. Jeremiah Schellinger, b. in Poland, Sept. 29, 1811, m. Nov. 15, 1838, Harriet, dau. of James and Sarah (Decker) Russell, b. in Clinton, N.E., Oct. 20, 1819. He was a farmer and resided at Danforth, Me., where he d. abt. 1903.

Children:-

1. Elizabeth Schellinger, b. in Bancroft, Me., July 14, 1839, m. May 11, 1861, Grant Gilpatrick, a farmer in Danforth.

Children:-

Minnie, Charles, Ralph, Walter, Fred and Maude.

11. Mary Schellinger, b. in Danforth, Me., May 1, 1841, m. May 15, 1862, Angus McKay, a farmer and lumberman.

Children:-

William, Charles, Nettie, Esther, Harriet, John and Hugh.

111. Seth Schellinger, b. in Danforth, Dec. 1, 1843, M. Nov. 25, 1867, Mary A. Baker. He was a farmer and d. in Danforth, Feb. 22, 1889, or Feb. 13, 1890.

IV.

Children:-

Bertha, Lewis, Horace and Harry.

- IV. Amanda Schellinger, b. Apr. 10, 1845, Danforth, d. Aug. 9, 1861, Danforth.
 V. Lewis Schellinger, b. Aug. 9, 1847, Danforth, d. Aug. 9, 1861, Danforth.
 VI. Walter Schellinger, b. Apr. 2, 1849, Danforth, d. Oct. 1, 1860, Danforth.
 VII. Nellie Schellinger, b. in Danforth, July 5, 1852, m. Apr. 20, 1887, Daniel Deering, a farmer at Orient, Me.

Children:-

Lee, Bliss, Harriet and Ada.

5. Richard Schellinger, b. in Poland, Oct. 15, 1813, d. young.
 6. Ellen Schellinger, b. in Poland, June 21, 1815, m. Charles Worcester. She d. in Clinton, Mass., Jan. 5, 1902.

No children.

7. Isaac Schellinger, b. in Poland, 1817 Or 1819, Was a farmer and lumberman and d. in California, unm.
 8. Mary W. Schellinger, b. in Poland, Nov. 19, 1821, m. June 30, 1845, Nathaniel A. Green, b. in Danville, Me., Mar. 17, 1818. He was the son of Isaac and Susan (Rowe) Green. He was a seaman. He lived in Brunswick, Me., for about 45 years and the rest of his life in Freeport, Me., where he d. Mar. 17, 1891. He enlisted in the Navy in 1861 and was for a time Quartermaster on the gunboat New London. He was discharged in Nov. 1864.

Child:-

1. Ellen H. Green, b. in Brunswick, Me., July 25, 1847, m. ---- Farrington.
 11. Addie M. Green, b. in Brunswick, Mar. 17, 1855, m. July 27, 1887, Henry Hodsdon, b. in Bath, Me., May 16, 1845.

Mr. Hodsdon is a farmer and they reside in Freeport, Me. He is a Civil war veteran.

Child:-

1. Nellie May, b. July 25, 1890.
9. Benjamin Schellinger, b. 1821, was a farmer and lumberman and d. abt. 1850, in California, unm.
10. Charles Schellinger, b. 1825, m. first, Elizabeth Staples, and second, Mrs. Annie Brackett.

Children:-

Charles and Helen.

11. Henry S. Schellinger, b. in Poland, Jan. 1, 1829, m. Nov. 19, 1869, Lovina Johnson Maxwell, b. in Danville, Me., Feb. 19, 1837. She was the dau. of Charles and Tamma (Goss) Maxwell.

Mr. Schellinger lived in Lowell and Boston, Mass., and for a time in California. After his marriage he settled on a farm in Pownal, Me., where he resided the remainder of his life. He d. in Casco, Me., while there on business, Aug. 14, 1874. His widow d. at Freeport, Me., May 21, 1902.

Children:-

Born in Pownal.

1. Josie Elizabeth Maxwell, b. Dec. 17, 1870, d. Mar. 25, 1873, Pownal.
 11. Elizabeth May Maxwell, b. July 22, 1872, m. Nov. 20, 1894, Otis Turner Gray, b. in Bath, Me., Apr. 16, 1872.
- He is a farmer and resides in Freeport, Me.

- VI. Dolly Garland, born in Barrington, N.H., Nov. 23, 1786, married, Aug. 6, 1805, William, son of Daniel and Mary? (Holland?) Jackson. He was a farmer and lived in Poland, Me., where he died, Apr. 29, 1859. His widow died in Poland, Dec. 8, 1873.

Children:-

1. Lydia Jackson, b. in Poland, Me., Jan. 16, 1806, m. first, Oct. 1826, William Stevens Jr. and second William Cross. She lived in Norway, Me.

Children:-

1. Mary H. Stevens, b. Oct. 7, 1827, m. Frost?
11. Darius R. Stevens, b. June 21, 1829.
111. Cyrus J. Stevens, b. 1831, d. Apr. 15, 1832, and probably William E., Byron and Van Bru
2. Mary Holland Jackson, b. in Poland, Mar. 18, 1808, m. Feb. 12,

1831, (Int. Dec. 26, 1830) Lyman Beecher Chipman, b. in Portland, Me., May 15, 1806. He was the son of Daniel and Anna (Tripp) Chipman. He removed with his parents to Raymond, Me., when a small boy. Was a farmer and lumberman. Was one of the Selectmen for years. He d. in Raymond, Feb. 4, 1875. His widow d. in Raymond, Oct. 4, 1876.

Children:-

1. Anna Mary Chipman, b. in Raymond, Jan. 23, 1832, m. Freedom Nash and d. in Portland, Me., Oct. 26, 1912.

No children.

11. Dorothy Jackson Chipman, b. in Raymond, Jan. 12, 1835, m. Benjamin Franklin Milliken and d. in Bridgton, Me., June 12, 1904.

Children:-

1. Grace, d. unm.
 2. Perley, lived in New York.
 3. Henry G., lived in Portland, Me.
111. Susan Maria Chipman, b. in Raymond, Apr. 1, 1836, m. Horace Hannibal Kicker, and d. in Portland, Dec. 26, 1899.

Children:-

1. Fred. B., lived in Portland.
 2. Charlotte M., m. J.C.W. Perry, and lived in Portland.
 3. Wilbur L., lived in Portland.
- IV. Orrin Granville Chipman, b. in Raymond, Aug. 2, 1837, m. Mary Jane Mason and d. in Portland, Jan. 26, 1902.

Children:-

1. Frank M., lived in Portland.
 2. Lyman B., lived in Portland.
- V. Daniel Herbert Chipman, b. in Raymond, Dec. 28, 1845, m. Emma Brown, and d. in Raymond, Dec. 27, 1900.

Children:-

1. Fred J., lived in Portland.
 2. Guy W., lived in Lansdowne, Pa.
 3. Angie M., m. Walter E. Harmon, and resided at Peak's Island, Me.
- VI. Ella Grace Chipman, b. in Raymond, Nov. 26, 1851, d. Sept. 26, 1853, Raymond.

3. Hannah Jackson, b. in Poland, 1810, m. Jonathan Lane, of Poland.
He was a farmer and cooper and lived and d. in Poland.
She d. in Poland.

Children:-

- I. Charles, dead.
 - II. Mellin, dead.
 - III. Andrew, dead.
 - IV. Addie, m. Joseph W. Mills, of Poland and had a son, Mellin and two daughters, both of whom married.
4. Daniel Jackson, b. in Poland, 1812, m. Lydia Staples, of Raymond.
He was a farmer and lived in Poland and later in Raymond, where they both died.

Children:-

- Azariah, m. ---- Strout, and Lizzie, Mary and Lucy, all of whom married and had children.
5. Margaret Waterhouse Jackson, b. in Poland, Dec. 19, 1816, m. Mar. 14, 1839, Stephen Larrabee Harris, b. in Limington, Me., Aug. 15, 1812. He was the son of Larrabee Harris. Stephen Harris was a wheelwright and painter. When a few years old he removed to No. Yarmouth, where he lived until a few years before his marriage. He then settled in New Gloucester, Me., where he lived the rest of his life. He d. in No. Berwick, Me., Sept. 2, 1888, while on a visit to his daughter. His widow d. in New Gloucester, Jan. 23, 1896.

Children:-

Born in New Gloucester.

- I. Hewett L. Harris, b. Nov. 7, 1839, d. Dec. 10, 1841,
 - II. Ella Judith Harris, b. June 20, 1841, m. Dr. Samuel A. Nash, of Raymond, Me.
 - III. Ellen Harris, b. Mar. 19, 1843, d. Mar. 20, 1843.
 - IV. Hewett L. Harris, b. Feb. 23, 1844, d. Oct. 24, 1857, in New Gloucester.
 - V. George Melvin Harris, b. Jan. 4, 1845, d. Nov. 16, 1849, New Gloucester.
 - VI. Albert Harris, d. age two weeks.
 - VII. Phebe Ann Jackson Harris, b. July 3, 1848, d. Feb. 12, 1850.
 - VIII. Annie Jackson Harris, b. Aug. 17, 1851, m. Joseph W. Brown, of Raymond, and d. in Portland, May 22, 1915.
 - IX. George Melvin Harris, b. Aug. 15, 1853, m. Mrs. Carrie Baxter, of Quincy, Mass., and d. there Mar. 1, 1891.
 - X. Sarah Milliken Harris, b. Jan. 27, 1859, m. Elbridge True and lived in New Gloucester.
6. Isaac Jackson, b. in Poland? 1819, m. first, Harriet Harts-horn and had a dau., Lizzie and a son, Fred., who lived

in Hiram, Me. Lizzie m. ---- Crocker, and lived in Portland, Me.
 Isaac Jackson left Poland when a young man and went into the cooperage business in Portland, the firm name being Phinney & Jackson. He d. in Portland.

7. Azariah Jackson, b. 1822, d. in infancy.
8. Phebe Jackson, b. 1824, d. unm. age 25 years.
9. Andrew Jackson, b. 1829, d. in Portland, unm. age 19 years.
- VII. Lydia Garland, born in Barrington, Aug. 23 (Poland records say Aug. 3) 1789. She prob. d. unm.
- VIII. Elizabeth Garland, born in Barrington, N.H., May 10, 1792, married Jan. 10, 1812, Seth Bearce Hilborn, born in Hebron, Me., Dec. 25, 1788. He was the son of Robert and Lucy (Riggs) Hilborn. He was educated in the schools of Minot and Poland, Me., and later became a mechanic and millwright and followed his trade in Poland until 1828. He then obtained the water power at Greenwood "city", Me. removed there, built a saw-mill and did a prosperous business. He also engaged largely in honey bee culture, with great success, retaining an interest in many bee colonies until his death. About 1840 he removed to Saco, Me., and in 1842 settled in Portland, Me. Here he became a retail merchant and also did a real estate business in which he continued until a few years before his death when he retired with a competence. He died in Portland, June 6, 1878. His wife died in the same place, Aug. 27, 1865.

Children:-

1. Erastus Hilborn, b. in Poland, Sept. 10, 1812, m. abt. 1834, Mary, dau. of Isaac and Tryphosa (Cordwell) Patch, b. in Greenwood, Me., 1814. He removed with his parents to Greenwood, abt. 1830, where he lived until some years after his marriage, when he went to Walker's Mills, Bethel, Me., and kept a country store. He removed to Portland, in 1843, to Locke's Mills, Me., in 1849 and returned to Portland in 1852 where he carried on a retail grocery business until his death, July 11, 1888. His widow d. in Portland, May 1889.

Children:-

1. Melissa A. Hilborn, b. in Greenwood, abt. 1834, m. Dec. 19, abt. 1853, John C. Reynolds. He was a rail road contractor. They removed to Thompsonville, Conn., where she d.
- II. George B. Hilborn, b. in Greenwood, 1836, m. first, Jane Goodnow, who d. at Gorham, N.H., and he m. second, about 1862, Mrs. Lucy Hanscom. She d. and he m. third, ----- Ingerson, dau. of George Ingerson, of Gorham, N.H. Mr. Hilborn d. 1889, Gorham, N.H.

Children:-

Luther, Elizabeth, Jane and Jim.

111. Esther A. Hilborn, b. 1838-39, m. Oct. 7, 1855, Albert E., son of John and Lillias Dennison, b. in Freeport, Me., Mar. 30, 1833. He was a carpenter and d. in Aspinwall, July 25, 1868. His wife d. in Portland, Sept. 29, 1865.

Children:-

1. Alberto E. d. in infancy.
2. Alberto E. Dennison, b. in Portland, June 15, 1859, m. July 31, 1880, Delia, dau. of James and Mary Brennan, b. in Montreal, P.Q., June 6, 1859. He was a locomotive engineer on the Grand Trunk R.R.

Children:-

All born in Portland.

1. Esther M., b. Apr. 16, 1881.
11. George A., b. Sept. 24, 1882.
111. Florence L. b. July 16, 1887.
- 1V. Chester A., b. Oct. 3, 1889.
- V. Alberto E., b. June 28, 1894.

- IV. Roscoe G. Hilborn, b. in Bethel, Me., June 1, 1842, m. Jan. 1, 1865, Mary L. Lord, b. in Portland, Me., Aug. 9, 1845. She was the dau. of Joseph and Mary Ann (Runlett) Lord. He was for many years an engineer on the Grand Trunk R.R., and resided in Portland.

Children:-

1. Carrie L. Hilborn, b. in Portland, Sept. 15, 1866.
2. George F. Hilborn, b. in Portland, Jan. 6, 1871.
3. Seth E. Hilborn, b. in Portland, Dec. 25, 1872, m. Dec. 31, 1902, Nellie F. Webber, b. in Portland, July 10, 1877. She was the dau. of Joseph and Mary E. (Taylor) Webber. He graduated from the Portland High School in 1892 and from the Boston Dental College in 1897, and entered upon the practice of his profession in Portland.
4. Ada M. Hilborn, b. in Portland, July 20, 1875, d. June 28, 1892, Portland.
5. William E. Hilborn, b. May 27, 1884, Portland.

- V. Ada D. Hilborn, b. in Greenwood, Me., Mar. 3, 1849, m. Dec. 20, 1866, James Frank Hovey, b. in Quincy, Mass., July 6, 1845. He was the son of

Kelville and Louisa(Burke)Hovey.
He was a carriage painter and resided in Portland.

Children:-
All born in Portland.

1. Ella L.Hovey, b. Aug.30,1871.
2. Frederick S.Hovey, b. June 12,1873.
3. Maud L.Hovey, b. May 17,1884.
4. Walter S.Hovey, Mx d. in infancy.
5. Marjorie I.Hovey, d. in infancy.

2. Harriet Hilborn, b. in Poland, Me., Jan.14,1814, m. Nov.27, 1834, Francis Bennett Jr., b. in Pownal, Me., July 21, 1810.
He went to Greenwood, Me., when about twenty one years old but about 1845 removed to Portland, where he became a merchant and where he lived until his death, Oct.19, 1876. He was at one time a representative to the State legislature. His widow d. in Portland, Apr.12,1883.

Children:-

1. Adeline S.Bennett, b. in Greenwood, July 3,1835, m. June8,1854, at Portland, Abel Bowie.
He was a blacksmith and always resided in Portland. He d., accidentally, at Pownal, Me., Sept.19,1902. His wife d. in Portland, Feb.6, 1857.

Children:-

1. Frank L.Bennett, b. in Portland, Apr.6,1856, m. and resided in Portland.
11. Emily A.Bennett, b. in Greenwood, July 30,1838, m. Feb.10,1859, Frank Ames Smith, of Portland.
He was a carpenter and resided in Portland, where he d. June 27,1904. He served three months in 1861 as private in the first Maine Inf. His wife d. in Portland, Apr.10,1903.
111. Sarah E.Bennett, b. in Greenwood, d. in infancy.
- 1V. Mary E.Bennett, b. in Greenwood, Oct.3,1844, m. Oct. 22, 1873, Henry W.Stuart. b. in Harrison, Me., Feb.17,1843. He was the son of Joshua B. and Caroline(Hicks)Stuart.
He was a house painter and resided in Portland.

Child:-

1. Ella L.Stuart, b. in Portland, Aug.10,1879, m. Oct.22,1902, Alonzo G.Marshall and lived in Melrose, Mass.
- V. Ella L.Bennett, b. in Portland, Mar.11,1849, m. June 12,1873, Walter A.Skillin, b. in Albion, Me., Apr.7,1843. He was the son of Simeon and Mary(Buxton)Skillin.

He was engaged in business in Portland, where he lived the most of his life. He d. there Nov. 7, 1901, and at the time of his death was senior partner of the firm of Skillin, Hawkes & Co.

Children:-

All born in Portland.

1. Harry E. Skillin, b. Sept. 20, 1874, d. Sept. 25, 1874, Portland.
 2. Charles C. Skillin, b. May 29, 1876, d. Dec. 16, 1879, Portland.
 3. Hattie M. Skillin, b. Jan. 24, 1878.
 4. Annie L. Skillin, b. Feb. 6, 1882.
3. Lucy Hilborn, b. in Poland, Me., Oct. 17, 1815, m. 1834, George Washington Verrill, b. in Minot, Me., Feb. 28, 1811. He was the son of Daniel and Eunice (Cordwell) Verrill. Daniel was the son of Samuel Verrill who was born in Gloucester, Mass., in 1733 and served in the Revolutionary War in a Gloucester Company. Samuel was the son of Samuel Verrill, or Varrell, who came from England about 1720 and Sarah (Stevens) Verrill, of Gloucester.

George W. Verrill learned the trade of house and ship carpenter in Boston, which he followed and also taught school in Greenwood, Me. Between 1834 and 1844 he built various houses in the latter place, including several at Greenwood City. About 1835 he cleared a farm on Patch Mountain and built a house there, where he lived until 1844. He was then badly injured by a load of hay falling on him and had to give up farming. Before that he was noted for his great strength. He was then employed in a store in Portland for a time but in 1845 went into business for himself at Greenwood City and in 1851 at Locke's Mills. In 1853 he removed to Norway, Me., where he carried on an extensive business until his death which occurred in the spring of 1862. He held various town offices and was at one time Captain of a Militia Company at Greenwood. His wife d. at Norway, Nov. 14, 1861.

Children:-

1. Byron Decreny Verrill, b. in Greenwood, Feb. 2, 1835, m. June 5, 1866, Harriet A. Robinson, b. in Piscasset, Me., July 17, 1843, and dau. of Silas W. and Harriet S. (Young) Robinson. In the early part of his life Byron Verrill lived in Norway, Me., and was Principal of the Norway Academy. He studied law with Henry Upton in Norway and with Judge H. Ingalls, of Piscasset; also with others in Portland. He was admitted to the bar in 1861 and practiced law in Portland until his death, which occurred in that city Dec. 14, 1898. For a short time he was in partnership with the Hon. Thomas B. Reed. The last years of

his life he was in partnership with his oldest son. He was a Representative to the Legislature in 1880.

Children:-

1. Harry Mighels Verrill, b. in Wiscasset, Me., Jan. 4, 1868, m. Oct. 30, 1895, Louise Shurtleff Brown, b. in Portland, Mar. 23, 1870, dau. of Lewis T. and Mary A. (Abbott) Brown. Mr. Verrill graduated from the Sheffield Scientific School of Yale University in 1889 with the degree of Ph.D., and from the Yale Law School in 1891, taking his degree L.L.B. He is now, 1919, senior member of the law firm of Verrill, Hale, Booth and Ives, of Portland, Me.

Children:-

All born in Portland.

1. Robinson Verrill, b. Aug. 22, 1896, grad. from Yale. He served in the French Ambulance Service in the spring and summer of 1917; as 2nd. Lieut. in the American Field Artillery from the fall of 1917 to June 1919. Was in Europe from May 1915 to June 1919. Then ent. Harv. Law Sch.
11. Richard Verrill, b. Sept. 28, 1898, served in the French Ambulance Service in 1917; in the American Aviation Service in 1918 and in the Coast Artillery 1918-1919. Was in Europe from April 1917 to Nov. 1917. Is now, 1920, in Seattle, Wash., in the lumber business.
111. Alice Louise Verrill, b. Aug. 9, 1900, d. Sept. 16, 1901, Portland.
- 1V. Louise Verrill, b. Sept. 24, 1902.
- V. John. Verrill, b. Sept. 13, 1904.
- VI. Harry Verrill, b. Mar. 13, 1909.
2. Alice Gertrude Verrill, b. in Portland, Me., Aug. 28, 1871, m. June 5, 1902, Sterling Tucker Dow, b. in Portland, Nov. 4, 1869, son of Sterling and Mary M. (Tucker) Dow. He is the manager of the Atlantic Shore Railway in Kennebunk.

Children:-

1. Sterling Dow b. Nov. 19, 1903.
11. Harriet Dow, b. July 22, 1906.
111. Elizabeth Dow, b. Jan. 2, 1911.

3. Marion Verrill, b. in Portland, June 2, 1875, m. Oct. 17, 1911, Ernest Eugene Noble, b. in Blaine, Me., Jan. 1, 1870, son of Frederick H. and Amanda (Tapley) Noble. He grad. from Colby College in 1897 with the degree of A.B. and from the University of Maine Law School in 1903 with the degree L.L.B., since which time he has practiced law in Portland.

Children:-

Ruth Noble, b. Sept. 12, 1913, Portland.

4. Byron Robinson Verrill, b. Apr. 27, 1883, Portland, d. Sept. 16, 1883, Portland.

11. Aramenta Maria Verrill, b. Dec. 28, 1836, Greenwood, Me., d. Feb. 4, 1850, Greenwood.

111. Addison Emery Verrill, zoologist, and geologist, born in Greenwood, Me., Feb. 9, 1839, married June 15, 1865, Flora Louise Smith, born in Norway, Me., Sept. 2, 1840, dau. of Elliot and Lavinia H. (Barton) Smith.

Mr. Verrill removed to Norway, Me., in 1853 and was prepared for college at the Norway Liberal Institute of Norway, but pursued his scientific studies privately, by means of books and the collections made by himself, from early boyhood. He evidently inherited, to some extent, his fondness for scientific pursuits from his Milborn ancestors. Writing of his grandfather Milborn he says, - "Grandfather was much interested in Geology, minerals, plants, insects etc. He certainly had, by nature, an observant and investigating mind, and had he been born two generations later, with suitable environment, he might well have become an able scientific man." One of the latter's brothers, also, had similar tastes.

Before leaving home, in 1859, Mr. Verrill had already obtained and classified collections of most of the minerals, plants, mammals, birds, and reptiles of Maine, and also many of the insects. In his earlier searches (1852-59) for minerals in the granite hills of his vicinity, he discovered and identified a number of rare minerals not before known from Maine. He first discovered tin-ore at Paris, Me.; zircon and corundum in Greenwood; chrysoberyl, in large crystals, in Norway; amazon stone in Waterford, etc. In 1859 he added several species of flowering plants to the flora of the United States, as recorded in Gray's Botany. His catalogue of the Birds of Norway, 1862, was the first general

list of the birds of Maine.

He entered the Lawrence Scientific School of Harvard, May, 1859, and graduated, S.B., 1862, studying specially zoology and geology, with Prof. Louis Agassiz, and became the latter's assistant in the Museum of Comparative Zoology, in charge of mammals, birds, and corals, 1860-1864, and was curator of Radiata in the Boston Society of Natural History, 1864-74. He was appointed professor of Zoology in Yale University, member of the Governing Board of the Sheffield Scientific School, and curator of the Zoological Museum of Yale in 1864.

During the years 1867-1870 he held a non-resident professorship of Comparative Anatomy and Entomology in the University of Wisconsin, giving several lectures there each year, during leaves of absence, but the rapid increase of his duties at Yale compelled him to relinquish this work. He was also instructor in Geology in the Sheffield Scientific School of Yale 1870-1894.

In 1859 he went to the Island of Grand Menan, N. B., and adjacent islands to collect the eggs, for the sake of the embryos of sea birds, of which he secured a very ^{large} series (about 1,200) of several species, as well as numerous skeletons of birds and fishes, for the Museum of Comparative Zoology.

In the summer of 1860, he studied the marine fauna at Mt. Desert and Fréchet's Bay, in company with Alpheus Hyatt and N.S. Shaler, and made large collections there.

In 1861 he made a zoological and geological exploration of Anticosti Island and the Labrador coast, with the gentlemen above mentioned, and published (1863) reports on the plants, mammals, and birds. This expedition was made in a fishing schooner, called "The Inlet," chartered for the purpose. Under a captain, Verrill, Hyatt, Shaler, and a friend manned the vessel, without sailors. About fifty barrels of excellent fossils were obtained, but owing to the oncoming war they were never fully worked over nor reported upon.

During nearly every year, from 1863 to 1870, he conducted scientific dredging expeditions off the coast of Maine and in the Bay of Fundy. From 1871 to 1887 he was assistant in charge of the scientific investigations and deep-sea dredgings of the U.S. Commission of Fish and Fisheries, under Prof. S.F. Baird. This involved the exploration of the sea bottom, from Newfoundland to Cape Hatteras, and from the shore to depths of over 2,000 fathoms beneath the Gulf Stream. Vast collections of marine animals were thus obtained, many of them new to

science. The work of arranging, classifying, and describing these collections occupied much of his time for many years. In connection with these explorations Prof. Verrill invented several new forms of apparatus for obtaining deep-sea animals, among them the rake-dredge, hopper-sieve, cradle-sieve, and especially the improved forms of "tangles", which he described and figured in 1873 and 1880, and recommended for the use of oyster-fishermen for destroying star-fishes on the oyster beds. It has since been used very extensively for that purpose, and has proved of inestimable value.

From 1872 to 1880 he made a special study of the gigantic cephalopods or "devil-fishes," especially those of Newfoundland. He succeeded in obtaining many more specimens than had been previously known, which were fully described and figured in several reports, especially in those of 1880 and 1882. In connection with these studies, a life sized model of a specimen about fifty-two feet long was constructed, as well as a large model of the California Octopus. Duplicates of these, from the same moulds, are now exhibited in many large museums, both in this country and in Europe.

From 1885 to 1890 he was employed on the editorial staff of Webster's International Dictionary, and subsequently on its Supplements. To these works he contributed all the zoological and most of the palaeontological matter, and also selected and supervised the engraving of the illustrations.

In 1898 and 1901 he conducted very successful scientific expeditions to the Bermudas, obtaining large collections illustrating the land and marine faunas, and the geology, including especially complete series of the corals, gorgonias, crustacea, mollusca, and other animals of the Bermuda coral-reefs, with numerous colored drawings and photographs from life. These expeditions and his reports upon the collections obtained contributed to the establishment of the zoological station at Bermuda in 1903.

He received much credit, early in his career, for the discovery of many new morphological and biological facts:- such as the discovery of dimorphic zooids in Alcyonaria, 1865; the first discovery of the bilateral development of the mesenteries in Zoanthidae, 1869; the demonstration that the Tabulata do not form a natural group of corals, 1867, 1872; the discovery and proof that the mean temperature of the breeding season determines the north and south distribution of birds, etc., while the mean annual temperature does not, 1863; and for many improvements in the classification of animals.

His more recent announcement (1897) that mammals, birds, fishes, insects, etc., owe many

of their peculiar colors to their protective value at night or in twilight (nocturnal protective coloration), and also that many fishes regularly change their colors at night, for protection, thus extending the field for the action of natural selection, has attracted wide attention.

His "Report on the Invertebrate Animals of Vineyard Sound and adjacent waters," 1874, 454 pages, 38 plates, became a standard work on the marine animals of this coast, including their habits and distribution.

His reports on the Cephalopods, 1880-1882, form a complete monographic treatise, describing all the species known on our coast. The Marine Nemerteans and Planarians of our coast were also treated monographically by him in 1892-3, for all the species then known, with many new ones, and were described and mostly figured. No other works of importance had been previously published on these groups in this country.

He early made it a duty to study especially those groups of marine and fresh-water animals that had been neglected by others, in this country, owing to the difficulties in the way of their investigation. For this reason several of his papers are the first of importance to appear in America, relating to such groups as the actinians, ascidians, annelids, fresh-water leeches, nemerteans, marine planarians, cephalopods, phyllopod crustaceans, etc. The difficult group of reef-corals has been a favorite study with him since 1860. In connection with his studies of this group he has examined and labelled most of the larger collections of corals in the United States; among them, those of the U.S. National Museum; American Museum, New York; Museum of Comparative Zoology; Essex Institute; Boston Society of Natural History; and many others.

Prof. Verrill became associate editor of the American Journal of Science in 1869, and his contributions to that Journal and to the Transactions and Proceedings of the various Scientific Societies amount to over 300 papers, mostly on zoological and geological subjects. They were collected in twelve volumes.

He continued to teach in Yale for forty-three years, a very uncommon length of time, with no "sabbatical" year, and no leave of absence, even for illness, for more than two or three weeks during his entire professorship. He retired in 1907 on account of age limit, sixty-eight years, and became Professor Emeritus. Among his pupils were Professors S.I. Smith, of Yale; E.B. Wilson, of Columbia; S.A. Andrews, of Johns Hopkins; S.H. Clark, of Williams; William North Rice, of Wesleyan; Mr.

Richard Rathburn, Director of the National Museum; and Dr. W.C. Van Namee, Curator of the New York State Museum.

The valuable zoological collections of the Museum of Yale University are due almost entirely to his personal efforts, under most discouraging conditions and with very meager funds.

He received the honorary degree of A.M. from Yale in 1867, and was elected a member of the National Academy of Arts and Sciences in 1872. He is also a member of the Boston Society of Natural History, the American Academy of Arts and Sciences; the Connecticut Academy of Arts and Sciences, of which he was at one time President; the Wisconsin Academy of Science; Essex Institute; New York Academy of Sciences; Philadelphia Academy of Natural Sciences; the Society of American Naturalists; the California Academy of Science; American Morphological Society; Zoological Society of France, and many other societies.

As a public lecturer, he has given many ~~lectures~~ lectures on zoological and geological subjects, including two courses at the Lowell Institute in Boston. In connection with his geological work he has examined and reported on many mineral deposits, especially of iron ores and coal.

In 1917-1918, when nearly eighty years old, Prof. Verrill spent several months in California, Nevada and British Columbia, visiting relatives and making collections of the fauna and flora. During the spring and summer of 1918 he spent four months in the Yellowstone Park and there made large collections of the rocks, minerals and plants, and studied especially the deposits from the hot springs and geysers, and the curious forms of plant life that flourish in the hot waters. He also brought back many living plants and seeds to undertake their naturalization in New England.

He is now, 1920, living in Whitneyville, Conn.

Prof. Verrill has published many important original investigations on the Invertebrata of the entire Atlantic and Pacific coasts of North and South America, especially of the Atlantic deep-sea faunae. He has also published reports on the zoology of the East Indies, Japan, New Zealand, Zealand, Hawaiian Islands, etc., especially on the corals and actiniae. The following are the more important of his works:-
Notes on the Natural History of Anticosti Island. Mammals, Birds and Plants. (20pp.) 1862.

Notice of Neoscrox and Sorex, with a List of Scoricidae of New England, 1863.
Catalogue of Birds found at Norway, Oxford Co. Me. (25pp.), 1862.

- Catalogue of Reptiles and Batrachians found in vicinity of Norway, Me., 1863.
- Revision of the Polyps of the East Coast of the United States (45pp., 4to, 1 pl.) 1864.
- Synopsis of the Polyps and Corals of the North Pacific Exploring Expedition, under Com. Ringgold and Capt. Rogers, Parts 1 to 4 (154 pl., 8 pl.), 1865-69.
- Descriptions of new Polyps and Corals from Panama, April, 1866.
- On the Polyps and Echinoderms of New England, with descriptions of new Species (24pp.), 1866.
- Investigations upon the Geographical Distribution of North American Birds, May, 1866. This was the first announcement of the discovery that the distribution of birds in latitude is determined chiefly by the mean temperature of the breeding season.
- Echinoderms and Corals of New Zealand, West Coast of America and Brazil (127 pp., 2 pl.), 1866.
- Corals and Echinoderms of Brazil; Echinoderms of Lower California (25 pp., 1 pl.), 1868.
- Corals and Polyps of West Coast of America (190 pp., 7 pl.), 1868-70.
- Echinoderms of the Pacific Coast of America (19 pp., 1 pl.), 1870.
- The External and Internal Parasites of Man and Domestic Animals (144 pp., 84 cuts), 1870, and Supplement to the same.
- Descriptions of Ascidiars from New England (25 pp., 26 cuts), 1871.
- Descriptions of North American Fresh-water Leeches (14 pp., cuts), 1872.
- Affinities of Paleozoic Tabulate Corals with existing Species, 1872.
- A demonstration that the "Tabulata" do not form a natural group and should be dismembered.
- Explorations of Casco Bay by the U.S. Fish Commission, in 1873 (45 pp., 6 pl.), 1874.
- Report upon Fresh-water Leeches of Nevada, Utah, Colorado, etc. (4to, 11 pp.), 1875.
- On Post-pliocene fossils of Sankoty Head, Nantucket Island, 1875.
- The Cephalopoda of North America: Part 1. The Gigantic Squids (*Architeuthis* and allies), with Observations on similar large species from foreign localities (81 pp., 14 pl.), 1880.
- The same: Part 2. The Smaller Cephalopods, including the Squids and the Octopi (187 pp., 28 pl.), 1880-1881.
- Report on the Cephalopods of the Northeastern Coast of America (240 pp., 46 pl.), 1882.
- New England Annelida. Part 1 (45 pp., 10 pl.), 1881.

- Catalogue of Marine Mollusca, added to the Fauna of New England during ten years. Part 1 (140 pp., 5 pl.), 1882.
- The same. Part II (155 pp., 5 pl.), 1884.
- The same. Part III (57 pp., 3 pl.), 1885.
- "Blake Expedition." Report on the Cephalopods (17 pp., 8 pl.) 1881.
- Supplement to the same (11 pp., 3 pl.), 1883.
- Descriptions of two Species of Octopus from California (6pp., 3 pl.), 1883.
- Blake Expeditions. Report on the Anthozoa (72 pp., 8 pl.), 1883.
- Notice of the Remarkable Marine Fauna occupying the outer Banks off the Southern Coast of New England (26pp.), 1884.
- Physical Characters of the Portion of the Continental Border beneath the Gulf Stream (13 pp., 5 pl.), 1884.
- Results of the Explorations made by the Steamer "Albatross" off the Northern Coast of the United States, in 1883 (188 pp., 44 pl.), 1885.
- Notice of the Recent Additions to the Marine Invertebrata of the Northeastern Coast of America, with descriptions of new Genera and Species. Parts I to V, 1879-1885.
- Brief Contributions to Zoology from the Museum of Yale College, New Haven, Conn. 1886-1897, 58 numbers.
- Descriptions of large numbers of new forms of deep-sea animals are included in this series.
- Marine Nemerteans of New England and adjacent waters, and The Linophilidae of New England (78pp., 7 pl., 6 colored), 1892.
- Marine Planarians of New England (62 pp., 5 pl.), 1893.
- Supplements to the Nemerteans and Planarians (12 pp.), 1895.
- The Opisthoteuthidae. A remarkable new Family of Deep-sea Cephalopoda, with remarks on some points in Molluscan Morphology (cuts in text), 1896.
- The Molluscan Archetype considered as a Voliger-like form (19 cuts), 1896.
- A Study of the Family Pectinidae, with a revision of the Genera and Subgenera (55 pp., 6 pl.), 1897.
- Nocturnal protective coloration in Mammals, Birds, Fishes, Insects, etc., as developed by Natural Selection, 1897.
- Nocturnal and diurnal changes in the colors of certain fishes and of the squid (*Loligo*), with notes on their sleeping habits (cuts), 1897.
- Revision of the Deep-water bivalve Mollusca of the Atlantic Coast of North America, with descriptions of new Genera and Species (127 pp., 28 pl.), 1898. (With K.J. Bush.)
- Descriptions of imperfectly known and new Ac-

- tinians. Parts 1-5 (36 cuts), 1898-99.
- Revision of the Genera of Lepadidae and Nuculidae of the Atlantic Coast of the United States (with K.J. Bush), 2pl., 1897.
- Descriptions of new Species of Starfishes and Ophiurans, with a Revision of certain species formerly described (53 pp.), 1894.
- Distribution of the Echinoderms of Northeastern America (29 pp.), 1895.
- Report on the Ophiuroidea collected by the Bahama Expedition in 1893 (pp. 1-26, 8 pl.), 1899.
- North American Ophiuroidea. Part 1. Revision of certain Families and Genera of West Indian Ophiurans (70 pp.), 1899.
- The same. Part 11. A Faunal Catalogue of the known Species of West Indian Ophiurans (14 pp., pl. XIII, XIII), 1899.
- Revision of certain Genera and Species of Starfishes, with descriptions of New Forms (91 pp., 8 pl.), 1899.
- Notes on the Geology of the Bermudas (27pp., 11 cuts and a map), 1900.
- Additions to the Turbellaria, Nemertina, and Annelida of the Bermudas, with Revisions of some New England genera and species (77pp., 2 figs. and 1 pl.), 1900.
- The Story of the Cahow, the mysterious extinct bird of the Bermudas (8 pp., cuts), 1901.
- Additions to the Fauna of the Bermudas from the Yale Expedition of 1901 (47 pp., plates 1-1X; 6 cuts in text), 1901.
- Variations and Nomenclature of Bermudian, West Indian, and Brazilian Reef Corals, with Notes on various Indo-Pacific Corals (105 pp., plates X-XXV; 8 cuts in text), 1901.
- Comparison of Bermudian, West Indian, and Brazilian Coral Faunas (37 pp., 7 cuts in text), 1901.
- Notes on Corals of the genus *Acropora* (*Madrepora* Lam.), with descriptions and figures of types and of several new species (66 pp., 7 pl.) 1901.
- Land Snails and Slugs of the Bermudas (9 pp., 43 cuts), 1902.
- Botany of the Bermudas (103 pp., 11 cuts, 7 pl.) 1902.
- Insects, Myriapods, and Arachnids of the Bermudas (111 pp., 172 cuts, 8 pl.), 1902-1903.
- Bibliography of the Bermudas (16 pp.), 1903.
- Zoology of the Bermudas, vol.1, 427 pp., 45 pl., 1903.
- The Bermuda Islands, 558 pp., 292 cuts, 40 pl., 1903.
- The Bermuda Islands, Vol. 11. Parts IV and V. These include the Geology, Palaeontology and Life of the Coral Reefs, 317 pp., 208 text

- cuts and 41 plates.
- Decapod Crustacea of Bermuda. Part 1. Macrura and Anomura, 175 pp., 68 text cuts, 12 pl., 1908.
- The same. Part 11. Macrura, about 200 pages and 45 plates is now, Jan., 1920, in the hands of the printers.
- Gorgonians of the Brazilian Coast. 31 pp., Quarto, 8 pl., Philadelphia, 1912.
- Revision of the genera of Starfishes of the sub-family Asteriniæ, 18 pp., illustrated. 1913.
- Monograph of the Starfishes of the North Pacific Coast from the Arctic Ocean to California. In the Harriman Alaska series of Reports, Vol. XIV, 420 pp., with an atlas of 110 pl., 1914.
- Report on the Starfishes of the West Indies, Florida, and Brazil, including those obtained by the Bahama Expedition from the University of Iowa. 232 pp., 29 pl., 1915.
- Report on the Higher Crustacea of Connecticut and adjacent waters. Includes their classification, anatomy, development, habits and the fisheries.
- Report to the Geological and Natural History Survey of the state, about 800 pp., 150 text cuts and 99 pl., now in the hands of the printer, 1919.
- Report on the Deep-sea Alcyonaria of the Blake Expeditions. 2 vols. quarto, with 140 plates, 8 colored. Partly printed in 1918. All plates printed. Work suspended during the war.
- Report on the Crustacea of Dominica Island, with 25 plates, completed in 1918.

Children:

of Prof. A.E. and Flora L. Verrill.

1. George Elliot Verrill, b. in New Haven, Conn., July 29, 1866, m. 1st. Aug. 20, 1890, Maude Mae Price, b. in Mason City, Ia., May 30, 1873, dau. of Milton E. and Helen M. (Cole) Price. He m. 2nd., June 3, 1912, his cousin, Amy Christina Doane, b. in Carson City, Nev., Mar. 16, 1884, dau. of Jonathan and Emma L. (Verrill) Doane. Mr. Verrill was fitted for college at the Hopkins Grammar School, and graduated, Ph. B. from the Sheffield Scientific School of Yale University, in 1885. During this year and the next he served as instructor in Field Practice, Drawing, etc., in the latter School and again in 1888, 1891 and 1892. From 1886 to 1888 he was engaged in railroad work in Kansas, Nebraska and Florida.

In 1888 and 1889 he was on the U.S. Geological Survey in Nevada and Washington, D.C., and in 1891-92 he was engaged in government hydrographic surveys in New York and New Jersey. From 1892 to 1894 he was U.S. assistant engineer engaged in fortification work and mounting high power guns on Staten Island. From 1894 to 1898 he was surveyor and inspector of River and Harbor Improvements on the Connecticut coast and for the next two years, as U.S. Junior Engineer, he was engaged in building fortifications and mounting large guns at Fishers Island and Gardiners Point, L.I.

Following this he had supervision of harbor improvements at New Haven and Bridgeport, Ct., and from 1902 to 1917 he had supervision of all river and harbor improvements on the Connecticut River and on the Connecticut Coast westward to the New York boundary line. He became Assistant Engineer, in December 1908.

He was commissioned Major in the U.S. Army, Engineering Corps, at New London, Ct., Feb. 16, 1917. From Nov., 1917 to July 1918, he had charge of the engineering work in Yellowstone National Park. In Sept. 1918, he removed to Whitneyville, Ct., and the following Oct. was ordered to Camp Humphreys, Va. He resigned his commission Dec. 1918. In the latter part of 1919 he conducted a survey of the Santee River in South Carolina.

He has written numerous reports on the progress of the surveys and improvements of the Connecticut and other rivers, and of the harbors of the Connecticut coast.

He published a report on the Birds and Birds eggs of the Kerguelen Island, with an account of its climate. In that work he described a remarkable, large new species of Albatross and its eggs.

In 1893 he published, in the Transactions of the Connecticut Academy of Sciences, a Catalogue of the Birds of Dominica Island, with observations on their nests, eggs and habits, illustrated by plates.

He is a member of the American Society of Civil Engineers and the Connecticut Society of Civil Engineers, etc.

Children:-

1. Addison Emery Verrill, b. in New Haven, Ct., Aug. 24, 1892, m. May 2, 1917, Pollyann Klassy, b. May 2,

1895.

He is with the Federal Rubber Co.,
Billings, Mont.

11. Helen Flora Verrill, b. May 17, 1896,
New Haven. She is an artist.

By 2nd. wife.

111. Ruth Verrill, b. Apr. 28, 1916, New Haven.

2. Evelina Flora Verrill, b. Nov. 11, 1869, New Haven, d. July 10, 1870, New Haven.

3. Alpheus Hyatt Verrill, b. in New Haven, July 23, 1871, m. Jan. 21, 1892, Kathryn McCarthy, b. in New Haven, July 1868.

He studied in the Yale School of Fine Arts. He devoted many years to the illustration of books, mostly of a scientific character, for which he has made several thousands of drawings. He drew the larger part of the numerous illustrations for Webster's International Dictionary; for his father's works on Bermuda; on the North Pacific Starfishes; Deep Sea Alcyonaria, and many other works.

He is also a skillful photographer, and has made hundreds of photographs of living birds, insects, etc., as well as of many other scientific objects for publication. In 1901 he invented the only known process for making natural colored photographs on paper by direct rays of the sun, and also improved methods of making photographs of birds, insects, fishes, etc.

In 1904 he became President of the Dominica Sulphur Refining Co., and engaged in sulphur mining in Dominica, West Indies.

More recently he has written various popular scientific books, mostly published by Harper Bros. Among them are, Harper's Young Gardener; Wireless Book; Aircraft Book for Boys; Book for Young Naturalists; Gasoline Motors, etc. He is considered an authority on gasoline engines. He is the author of the following books pub. by Dodd, Mead & Co., in 1914-15. An American Cruise; Porto Rico; Past and Present and San Domingo Today; Cuba, Past and Present; South and Central American Trade Conditions of Today; Pets; The Cruise of the Cormorant. Also wrote numerous magazine articles, and scientific papers on birds, mammals and insects.

He is also a skilled collector of objects of Natural History, his collection includ-

ing specimens from New England, the West Indies and Central America.
He is now, 1919, in Panama trying to develop a copper mine.

Children:-

1. Dorothy Imelda Verrill, b. in New Haven, Ct., July 25, 1893, m. Aug. 5, 1914, Thomas Edmund Yates, b. in Hartford, Ct., Nov. 3, 1891, son of Charles and Mary (Oakes) Yates. He entered the U.S. Army Sept. 12, 1917, and soon became corporal, then sergeant and when discharged was a 2nd. lieut. He was in Co. C. of the 303rd. Machine Gun Bat., 76th. Div. He went to France on special business in advance of his company, June, 1918. His Div. was never actually on the firing line and he returned in April, 1919.

Child:-

1. Yvonne Verrill Yates, b. Mar. 30, 1919.
11. Eric Edward Verrill, b. in New Haven, Apr. 1895, m. Sept. 15, 1917, Marion Davis Hubbs. Went into the army Sept. 19, 1917, in the first quota from New Haven. Went to Camp Devens, where he was in the 302nd. Field Art. He became Corporal and later went to the officers training camp at Plattsburg, N.Y. Later was at Fort Niagara with the 22nd. Int. and afterwards became Lieut. in Co. A. 12th. Int. and did guard duty in a large shipyard in Philadelphia, until the armistice was signed.
111. Loyola Kathleen Verrill, b. Oct. 26, 1901, New Haven, unm., 1919.
- IV. Valeria Gertrude Verrill, b. Oct. 28, 1903, New Haven, unm., 1919.
4. Edith Barton Verrill, b. in New Haven, Ct., Aug. 2, 1876, m. July 7, 1915, Vivian Akers, b. in Norway, Mo., son of Charles S. and Effie (Milner) Akers. He is an artist. Grad. from the Norway High School. Some of his paintings, in oil, have been exhibited in Portland and Boston. Since 1915 he has conducted a photographic

studio, making a specialty of artistic landscapes many of which have received prizes at exhibitions in Boston.

No children.

5. Clarence Sidney Verrill, b. in New Haven, Ct., May 6, 1877, m. Nov. 6, 1906, Dorothy Lord Maltby, b. in New Haven, May 16, 1877, dau. of George E. and Georgia L. (Morehouse) Maltby.

Mr. Verrill was fitted for college in the Hopkins Grammar School and in the Norwich Academy, Norwich, Ct. He was in the class of 1899 in the Sheffield Scientific School, Yale University, and was chosen President of the class but left before graduating because of ill health. Later he returned and took a special course in chemistry and metallurgy under Prof. H.G. Wells.

In college he was prominent in athletics, and was a member of the Freshman crew at New London, Ct., winning the boat race against Harvard. He was particularly noted for his remarkable strength in all around tests, and for two years held the championship as the strongest man in all American Universities, lifting over 2,000 pounds.

In 1899 he made an extensive bicycle tour, alone, through most of the European countries, travelling over 2,000 miles, and was one of his father's student party to Bermuda in 1898 to study zoology and geology.

His first experience in mining work was as a sampler in the Stratton Independence Gold Mine at Victor, Colo. He was later Supt. of mines and factory of the Robinson Clay Co., in Ohio. He developed mines and operated a mill in the State of Washington and subsequently became Assis. Gen. Manager for the Bagdad Chase Mining Co., operating mines and mills in Barstow, Cali., and Saulsbyville, Idaho.

In 1910 he removed to Vancouver, B.C., where he did business as a consulting Mining Engineer, and later removed to North Vancouver where he lived until his death.

He was resident Director of the Tonopah Belmont Co., of Nevada, while developing the Surf Inlet Gold Mine.

He was, at one time, a Director of the Vancouver Chamber of Commerce. Also a member of the Institute of American Mining Engineers. He examined many mines in nearly all the Western states from Alaska to Arizona.

He did considerable literary work, in the

way of geology and mines, and also wrote many poems, some of which were published in Scribers Magazine and elsewhere.

He was returning from an examination of a remarkable gold mine in Alaska on the Str. Princess Sophia when the vessel foundered in a storm and he was drowned, Oct. 25, 1918.

Child:-

1. Rae Maltby Verrill, b. Sept. 2, 1907, Soulsbyville, Calif.

6. Lucy Lavinia Verrill, b. in New Haven, Ct., May 26, 1882, m. Feb. 6, 1904, Samuel Henry Howe, b. in Washington, D.C., Sept. 24, 1880, son of Rev. Samuel H. and Sarah (Robertson) Howe.

He graduated from Yale University in 1902 and became bookkeeper and later cashier for a large importing house in New York City.

Child:-

1. Marshall Victor Howe, b. Apr. 9, 1905.

IV. George Washington Verrill, born in Greenwood, Me., May 2, 1841, m. Apr. 4, 1867, Augusta, dau. of Sylvester B. and Louisa M. (Davis) Becket, b. in Portland, Me., Apr. 5, 1843.

Mr. Verrill received an academical education, supplemented by private tuition. In 1853 he removed with his parents to Norway, Me., where he lived until the Civil War.

He enlisted July 14, 1862, as private and was mustered into the U.S. service Aug. 18, 1862, as 1st. Sergeant in the 17th. Me. Reg., Co. C. He was promoted to second lieutenant in the same Co. Mar. 2, 1863. Promoted to first lieutenant same Co. Nov. 16, 1863. Promoted to captain Co. E., same reg. Mar. 14, 1864. Mustered out of U.S. service with the regiment, June 4, 1865.

He took part in many battles, including, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, where he was wounded, Wilderness and those battles which followed and led up to Lee's surrender at Appomattox. Jan. 18, 1865, he was detailed for duty on brigade staff as A.A.D.C., and on Feb. 4, he was detailed for duty on brigade staff temporarily as acting assistant adjutant general. Feb. 28, he was detailed for duty on brigade staff temporarily as acting inspector general, and Mar. 31, he was detailed for duty on brigade staff (General Pierce's) as A.A.D.C., and he served until the reg. was about to be mustered out of service. He also served upon Courts Martial in the field, sometimes as Judge Advocate.

He was in nearly every engagement of his regiment and was never absent except while kept away by reason of his wounds, so that practically he was in everything from enlistment to discharge, making three years of continuous and arduous service. While in the regiment he acted as adjutant for a long time, and so efficient were his services that he was detailed as adjutant even while he was a captain. He was mentioned in the official report of Gen. Pierce for good conduct.

Upon his return from the war he settled in Portland, Me., read law in the office of his brother, Byron, and was admitted to the bar in 1867. He continued the practice of law in Portland during the remainder of his life.

Although well qualified for the duties of civil ~~life~~ office, he was never a candidate for any position of that character.

He was a member of the G.A.R. and was admitted as a member of the Loyal Legion Dec. 7, 1892, and for several years was a member of the Council of Administration of that Order. He was a constant attendant at the meetings and took great interest in the affairs of the Order.

He had a very creditable part in preparing the book, "Maine at Gettysburg," being joint author of the same and also of the book, "Maxim in the Civil War." He made a map of Gettysburg, which was published, showing the positions of the armies during the battle.

The compiler of this genealogy is under deep obligation to Mr. Verrill for assistance gladly given by him in searching Portland records. It was due entirely to his interest in the matter that the Verrill family, so far removed from the Waterhouse stock, was included in this work. The compiler would also record, with grateful appreciation, that more than once when, because of other duties, his interest in this work seemed to flag, Mr. Verrill would write urging that the task might be persevered in until completed. Mr. Verrill died in Portland, July 26, 1908, and his widow died in the same city, July 22, 1911.

Children :-

1. . . Grace Louise Verrill, b. Jan. 15, 1869, Portland, d. Feb. 2, 1888, Portland, unm.
2. . . Cora Verrill, b. in Portland, Jan. 17, 1871, m. June 26, 1895, Louis Augustus Round, b. in Dover, N.J., Sept. 20, 1862, son of William T. and Caroline B. (Ford) Round.

He grad. from Lehigh University in 1888. Is a naval architect. Was employed at the Bath Iron Works for some ten years and later became a draughtsman for the

Fore River Ship & Engine Co., Quincy, Mass. In 1911 he became naval architect for the New London Ship & Engine Co., New London, Ct., in which city he now, 1920, resides.

Children:-

- i. George Verrill Round, b. Apr. 14, 1896, Bath, Me.
 - ii. Harold Ford Round, b. July 10, 1898, Bath,
 - iii. Louis Augustus Round, b. May 1, 1902, Quincy, Mass.
 - iv. Kenneth Stetson Round, b. July 14, 1910, Quincy, d. Aug. 3, 1910, Quincy.
3. George Becket Verrill, b. in Portland, Feb. 19, 1875, m. Nov. 27, 1897, Mrs. Mattie Maria Woodside, widow of F. B. Woodside, and dau. of Augustus F. and Georgianna (Hubbard) Spollett. She was b. in Brunswick, Me., Mar. 25, 1866. Mr. Verrill graduated from the Portland High School and attended Bowdoin College for three years. He later engaged in a manufacturing business in Portland but is now, 1920, an electrician in the employ of the Cumberland Power & Light Co., and resides in Portland.

Children:-

Born in Portland.

- i. Kathryn Becket Verrill, b. Jan. 9, 1900.
- ii. Marion Augusta Verrill, b. Dec. 20, 1901.
- iii. George Walter Verrill, b. Apr. 19, 1909.

V. Lucy Ellen Verrill, b. in Greenwood, Me., Sept. 10, 1844, m. first, Aug. 20, 1863, Henry Rust Nighels, b. in Kinot, Me., Nov. 3, 1830, son of Jesse W. and Evelina A. (Rust) Nighels. He removed with his parents to Cincinnati, O. in 1847 and a few years later went to California. He worked at portrait and decorative painting for a time but in 1856 became Editor of the Butte Record. He also wrote for other papers and was the first editor of the Marysville Appeal. In 1862 he was commissioned Ass't. Adj. Gen., with the rank of Captain and was assigned to Gen. Sturgis' Staff, 9th. Army Corp. He was at Antietam, Fredericksburg, Vicksburg, and many smaller engagements. Also in the battles of

the Army of the Potomac that led to Lee's surrender. He was shot through both thighs at Petersburg and was honorably discharged for disability in Nov. 1864.

He afterwards owned and edited the Carson Appeal, of Carson City, Nev., until his death, which occurred in that city May 29, 1879.

His widow m. 2nd. July 4, 1880, Samuel Post Davis, b. in Branford, Ct., Apr. 4, 1850, son of George R. and Sylvia (Nichols) Davis.

Mr. Davis was educated at Racine College, in Wisconsin. He was a journalist by profession. A humorist, poet and editor. Was a reporter on papers in Chicago, St. Louis, Omaha, San Francisco, Virginia City, Nev., and other cities but after 1879 resided in Carson City, Nev.

He was editor of the large work History of Nevada, pub. in 1913. Among his best writings are, "The Lure of the Sage Brush;" "Battle Born;" and the "Gleaners."

He served four years as State Comptroller. He d. in Carson City, Mar. 17, 1918.

Children:-

1. Henry Rust Mighels, b. in Carson City, Nev., Oct. 9, 1867, m. Nov. 21, 1892, Ida Bryant, b. Empire, Nev., Nov. 21, 1871, dau. of Andrew and Ida Bryant. Mr. Mighels has been engaged in newspaper work and resided in Carson City most of his life, where he lives now, 1920.

Children:-

1. Bernice Ella Mighels, b. Apr. 3, 1894, m. Nov. 15, 1916, Ray McDonald, b. in Genoa, Nev., Feb. 22, 1888, son of John E. and Ellen (McCue) McDonald. He is a lawyer and has lived mostly in Reno, Nev., and Hobart Mills, Calif.

Child:-

1. George Charles McDonald, b. Sept. 20, 1917, Hobart Mills.
11. Henry Rust Mighels, b. Aug. 25, 1900, Carson City, Nev.
2. Philip Verrill Mighels, b. in Carson City, Apr. 19, 1869, m. June 17, 1893, Mrs. Ella Sterling Cummings, b. in Natoma, Calif. May 5, 1863, dau. of Sterling B.F. and Rachel (Mitchell) Clark. He m. 2nd. Frances -----?

He studied law and was admitted to the bar in Nevada, where he practiced for a time but later became a journalist in San Francisco and afterwards studied art in New York City. He had, however, inherited strong literary tastes from his parents and about 1897 he went abroad to pursue literary work as a profession. He resided four years in London and later in New York and Nevada. He attained fame as a novelist some of his successful books being "When a Witch is Young," "Chatwit," "Mella," "The Heart of the Army," etc. He also wrote short stories for "Harpers," "The Century," etc. He accidentally shot himself, while hunting, in Reno, Nev., Sept. 1911.

No children.

3. Bessie Mighels, b. in Carson City, Jan. 2, 1871, m. Sept. 24, 1901, Irvin G. Lewis, b. in Clarinda, Iowa, July 27, 1870. son of Charles H. and Amanda K. (Graham) Lewis. He grad. from the Nevada State University. and became an editorial writer by profession. Was for a time connected with the "Examiner" mfxk in Los Angeles, Calif. where he resided. Was honorably discharged from the U.S. Navy in 1899, as chief musician on Adm. Kantz' Staff, and is a medallist of the California Volunteer Ass'n., Spanish War Vets.

Child:-

1. Verrill Lewis.

4. Roy Robinson Mighels, b. in Carson City, Nev. Nov. 24, 1873, m. Mrs. Minnie Jackson. He is a printer by trade but is on a ranch near Carson City.

No children.

5. Nellie Mighels, b. Aug. 20, 1879, Carson City, d. Sept. 10, 1879, Carson City.

6. Lucy Sylvia Davis, b. in Carson City, Mar. 1, 1881, m. Jan. 17, 1907, Raymond Benson Crowell, b. in Bridgeport, Calif., June 5, 1882, son of ----- and Alice (Gleason) Crowell. He is a mining and civil engineer.

Children:-

Born in Carson City.

1. Royal Davis, Crowell, b. Nov. 15, 1907.
11. Sylvia Alice Crowell, b. Mar. 7, 1909.

7. Ethel Harriet Davis, b. in Carson City, Dec. 22, 1886, m. Aug. 12, 1913, Robert Henry Roy, b. in Park City, Utah, Nov. 13, 1882, son of William H. and Annie (Martin) Roy. He is a mining engineer and they reside in Carson City.

Child:-

1. Ethel Roy, b. Jan. 24, 1917, Carson City.

- VI. Edgar Freeland Verrill, b. in Greenwood, Me., Jan. 4, 1850, m. 1873, Sarah Russell of Portland. He was for many years Supt. of Baggage for the Southern Pacific R.R., in San Francisco, Calif.

Child:-

1. Florence Verrill, b. 1875, m. Harry Huber and had several children.

- VII. Emma Lydia Verrill, b. in Norway, Me., Nov. 18, 1853, m. Nov. 18, 1879, Jonathan Doane, b. in Philadelphia, Pa., May 30, 1844, son of George W. and Christena (Newkirk) Doane. He was for a time Deputy State Comptroller of the state of Nevada and resided in Carson City. He d. in Napa, Calif., Sept. 3, 1918 and his wife d. in Santa Rosa, Calif., Jan. 18, 1918.

Children:-

1. George V. Doane, b. Dec. 10, 1880, Carson City, d. Jan. 21, 1883, Carson City.
2. Amy Christina Doane, b. in Carson City, Mar. 16, 1884, m. her cousin, George E. Verrill, son of Prof. A. E. Verrill.
3. Arthur Verrill Doane, b. in Carson City, Mar. 31, 1886, m. Aug. 12, 1914, Maren Kirsten Jensen, of Gardnersville, Nev. He was a civil engineer and d. in San Francisco, Calif., Sept. 16, 1916.

Child:-

1. John Arthur Doane, b. June 13, 1915.
4. Laura Grace Doane, b. in Carson City, May 11, 1888, m. June 26, 1907, Clarence Le Roy Skinner. He is employed by an electric co. and resides in Sacramento, Calif.

Children:-

1. Clarence LeRoy Skinner, b. Mar. 29,
11. John Arthur Skinner, b. Jan. 17, 1913.

VIII. Harriet Louisa Verrill, b. in Norway, Me., Aug. 5, 1856, m. Oct. 22, 1881, George McLoughlin, b. in Ireland, Apr. 9, 1848, son of George and Margaret (Rutherford) McLoughlin. Mr. McLoughlin came to this country with his parents when he was three years old and lived in Utica, N.Y., until nineteen. Went to California about 1869 and accepted a position in the U.S. Mint at San Francisco, as a pressman. Moved to Carson City, Nev. about 1876. About ¹⁸⁹³ was transferred to the mint in Philadelphia, Pa., and in 1902 returned to the mint at San Francisco, where he is now, 1920, Supt. of machinery. His education was always along the lines of mechanical machinery, especially along as pertaining to coinage and other work of the mint.

Children:-

1. George Verrill McLoughlin, b. Feb. 15, 1883, Carson City, Nev.
He is a dentist in Piedmont, Calif., unm., 1920.
2. Nellie Lee McLoughlin, b. Feb. 15, 1883, Carson City. A twin.
She is unm., 1920, and resides at home.
3. Ralph Hilborn McLoughlin, b. in Carson City, May 5, 1885, m. Sept. 18, 1916, Clementine Brown.
He is a mining engineer and resides in Goldfield, Nev.
4. Maurice Evans McLoughlin, ^{CHILD} b. in Carson City, Jan. 7, 1890, m. May 28, 1918, Helen Mears and lives in Los Angeles, Calif.
He is the noted tennis player. He was National Champion in 1912-13, and with T.C. Bundy won the championship in Doubles in 1912-14.
He is in the sporting goods business in Los Angeles.

Child:-

1. Maurice Evans McLoughlin, Jr. b. July 7, 1919.
5. Doris McLoughlin, b. Mar. 7, 1895, Carson City.
She is unm., 1920, and lives at home.
4. Lydia G. Hilborn, *born in Poland, Me., Apr. 16, 1817, d. 1849. m. Isaac Hantworth, and had Ambrose and George. Both d. unm.*
5. Louisa Hilborn, born in Poland, Me., Mar. 21, 1820, m. Oct. 5, 1839, Eli Goss, b. in Levant, Me., Sept. 30, 1816, son of Joshua and Sarah (Rowe) Goss.

He was a merchant. He lived in Greenwood, Me., and from 1844 to in Portland, Me., where he d. July 18, 1889. His wife d. in Portland, June 30, 1863.

Children:-

1. George Oscar Goss, b. in Greenwood, Me., Sept. 28, 1840, m. Dec. 17, 1864, Julia N. Bryant, b. in Portland, Me., July 17, 1841, son of Joseph and Lorinda (Moor) Bryant. He enlisted, Sept., 1862, in the 25th. Me. Vols. Was 2nd. Lieut. of Co. I, and was discharged July 1863.

He afterwards lived in Portland. He was at one time Assist. Editor of the Eastern Argus, Portland. About 1897 he entered the Soldier's Home at Togus, Me., where he d. Feb. 16, 1902.

Child:-

1. Maria C. Goss, b. Aug. 22, 1868, Portland. d. Mar. 26, 1883. Portland.
11. Mary Frances Hilborn Goss, b. in Portland, Oct. 2, 1844, m. Aug. 28, 1867, John E. Davis, b. in Methuen, Mass., Aug. 28, 1841, son of John and Josephine (Breck) Davis. He was a merchant and lived in Portland from 1861 to 1890 when he returned to Methuen.

Child:-

1. Edward B. Davis, b. in Portland, Aug. 2, 1868, m. Aug. 4, 1896, Sarah H. Goodhue, b. in Portland, Apr. 14, 1867, dau. of Charles Q. and Catherine (Donnell) Goodhue. He was a bookkeeper and lived in Methuen, Mass., where he d. Oct. 16, 1902.

Children:-

All born in Methuen.

1. John E. Davis, b. Jan. 3, 1899.
11. Dorothy Q. Davis, b. Nov. 18, 1900.
111. Helen G. Davis, b. Oct. 23, 1901.
111. Edwin Eugene Goss, b. in Portland, Me., Sept. 16, 1848. He was a printer and lived in Portland until about 1870 when he removed to Boston, Mass. About 1880 he enlisted in Troop C., 6th. Cavalry, U.S. Army, and served about four years. He was in the Indian campaign in Geronimo was rounded up and was made a sergeant. During the Spanish War he enlisted in Co. B., 5th. Mass. Vols. and was Orderly to Col. Whitney. He was mustered out of the service as Corporal and lived in Boston until his death, Jan. 5, 1904. He was unm.

IV. Charles Shailer Goss, b. in Portland, Apr. 4, 1857,

m. Oct. 24, 1882, Mrs. Elizabeth C. Loud, b. in Fredericton, N.B., Jan. 10, 1850, dau. of William and Octavia (Lombard) Watts, After leaving Portland he lived for a time in New York and Chicago, but about 1880 established an Advertising Agency in Boston, Mass., where he lived at the time of his death, Sept. 2, 1894.

Children:-

1. Edward H. Goss, b. in Somerville, Mass., Nov. 18, 1883.
He was a chemist in Boston. Also wrote stories for the New York Evening Post.
2. Mary C. Goss, b. Apr. 16, 1891, Boston.
6. Elizabeth Hilborn, born in Poland, Me., Feb. 8, 1823, m. 1st. July 14, 1843, John Richardson, b. in Gorham, Me., July 6, 1823.
He was a manufacturer of Pocket books. Lived in Saccarappa, now Westbrook, and later in Portland, where he passed most of his married life. He d. there Dec. 11, 1861 and she m. 2nd., May 26, 1865, Thomas J. Winslow, b. in Brunswick, Me., June 30, 1823, son of Job and Elizabeth (Andrews) Winslow.
Mr. Winslow was a sea captain and engaged in the coasting trade. He lived in Brunswick and Bath and later in Portland, where he d. Feb. 3, 1901. He was a Knight Templar.

Children:-

1. Mary Purves Richardson, b. in Saccarappa, Me., Dec. 10, 1845, m. 1st. Aug. 24, 1869, John L. Randall, b. in Bridgetown, Nova Scotia, July 1, 1843, son of Benjamin and Tamar (Foster) Randall. He was a wood turner. Lived a short time in Boston, Mass., but most of his married life in Portland, Me., ~~Mexdx~~ where he d. Apr. 28, 1879. She m. 2nd., Nov. 13, 1882, John C. Minott, b. in Bowdoin, Me., Feb. 20, 1837, son of John C. and Fannie (Coombs) Minott.
Mr. Minott was a ship carpenter and lived the most of his life in Bowdoin and Bath. He was a member of the City Council of Bath for three years and City Marshall for three years.

Children:-

1. Flora M. Randall, b. June 15, 1871, Portland.
She was the Principal of a school in Bath.
2. Alice T. Randall, b. Nov. 3, 1873, Portland
3. Fannie E. Minott, b. Dec. 19, 1883, Bath, Me.
11. Celestia Hilborn Richardson, b. in Saccarappa, Oct.

28,1849, m. Jan.19,1870, James F. Smith, b. in
Dorchester, N. B., Nov.12,1844, son of Joseph
and Elizabeth(Black)Smith.
She d. in Portland, July 18,1878.

Children:-

1. Minnie Hilborn Smith, b. in Portland, Oct.
7,1871, m. Oct.21,1896, Josiah L. Walk-
er, b. in W. Woolwich, Me., Oct.27,1871,
son of William H. and Josephine(Lilly)
Walker.
He was at one time a steward at Young's
Hotel, Boston.

Child:-

1. Lillian J. Smith, b. Feb.25,1904,
Jamaica Plain, Mass.
2. James Clarence Smith, b. in Portland, May
28,1873, m. Apr.23,1903, Mary G. Poor,
b. in Saco, Me., Oct.23,1875, dau. of
Leander and Sarah J.(Bernard)Poor,
He was at one time in the employ of F.
L.Wilson & Co., wholesale grocers, Port-
land.

Child:-

1. Edgar C.Smith, b. June 24,1904.
- III. John A.Richardson, b. Nov.4,1851, Portland, d.Aug.
21,1886, Portland.
- IV. Hall Davis Richardson, b. in Portland, Oct.6,1857,
m. Aug.11,1880, Louisa Hill, b. in Boston,
Mass., May 8,1862, dau. of Jacob J. and Maria
P.(Torrey)Hill.
He was at one time a salesman and resided in
Portland.

Children:-

All born in Portland.

1. Walter H.Richardson, b. Aug.23,1881.
2. Elwyn H. Richardson, b. Mar.15,1883.
3. Leslie K. Richardson, b. Nov.23,1893.
7. Anna Shaw Hilborn, born in Poland, Me., July 3,1825, m.
Aug.4,1841, Horace B. Richards, b. in Scarborough, Me.,
Aug.4,1818, son of Jonathan and Mehitable(Carter)Rich-
ards.
He was a house carpenter and carriage builder and liv-
ed in Saco and later in Portland, where he d. Oct.29,
1886. A fine character. His wife, Anna, d. in Port-
land, Apr.16,1857, and he m. again and had three more
children.

Children:-

- I. John F. Richards, b. Nov. 24, 1843, Saco, Me., d. Mar. 5, 1849, Portland.
- II. Caroline E. Richards, b. Feb. 7, 1846, Portland, d. Aug. 16, 1847.
- III. Lewis C. Richards, b. Oct. 12, 1848, Portland, d. Mar. 20, 1864, Portland.
- IV. Margaret A. Richards, b. in Portland, July 22, 1850, m. 1st., Sept. 8, 1874, Albert C. Herrick, b. in Greenwood, Me., Dec. 28, 1844, son of Benjamin and Maria (Garland) Herrick. When about nineteen he enlisted in Co. B. 31st Reg. Me. Inf., and was enrolled Feb. 29, 1864. Was discharged June 12. He was a physician and d. in Bethel, Me., June 5, 1882. She m. 2nd., Charles Benjamin Barrett, b. in W. Townsend, Mass., Sept. 12, 1824, son of Benjamin and Nancy (Marshall) Barrett. He was a merchant and held many offices in his native town. About 1855 he removed to Boston, Mass., where he resided for many years. He was a Mason; member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery and other associations.

No children.

- V. Emily J. Richards, b. Apr. 20, 1853, Portland, d. Oct. 3, 1854, Portland.
- VI. Betsey E. Richards, b. Aug. 10, 1855, Portland, d. 1859, Portland.

8. Emily Jane Hilborn, born in Poland, Me., Aug. 16, 1828, m. James Pressey, of Portland.

No children.

9. Mary F. Hilborn, born in Greenwood, Me., Jan. 22, 1833, d. Apr. 17, 1845, Portland.

10. Weltha C. Hilborn, born in Greenwood, Nov. 6, 1833, d. Aug. 1, 1845, Portland.

- IX. Sarah Garland, born in Barrington, N.H., married May 6, 1795, married June 5, 1815 or 1817, her cousin, John Waterhouse.

- X. Benjamin Garland, born in Barrington, Nov. 27, 1799 (the Poland, Me. records say 1797), married Nov. 29, 1821, Hope F. Stevens, born in Norway, Me., Feb. 20, 1802. He was known as Major Garland. Was a farmer and kept a store at Poland Corner for several years. Also conducted a hotel in Poland, Me., from 1836 to 1850. Was Dep. Sheriff of Androscoggin County for several years. He was a Mason. Died in Poland, Dec. 5, 1850. His widow died in Poland, Oct. 23, 1863.

Children:-

1. Daniel Garland, b. in Poland, June 24, 1822 or 1823, m. Nov. 1844, Farnelia Bray, b. in Minot(?) Me.,

He d. Dec.5 or 28, 1851.

Children:-

- I. Harrison B. Garland, b. Oct.3,1845, d. Oct.7,1862.
- II. Ella M. Garland, b. July 10,1849, d. July 14,1865.
2. Harrison Garland, b. Jan.17,1824, Poland, Me., d. Aug.14,1849.
3. Alvan D. Garland, b. in Poland, July 4,1827, m. June 6,1852, Adelia C. Herrick, b. in Shirley, Me., May 16,1833, dau. of Israel and Mehitable(Daicy)Herrick. He was a farmer and lived on the homestead in Poland all his life. He d. at Mechanic Falls, Me., July 29,1893. His wife d. in Poland, Mar.14,1897.

Children:-

- I. Florence Floretta Garland, b. in Poland, Sept.5,1853, m. 1st., Oct.29,1878, William Washington Lunt, b. in Poland, June 3,1851, son of William E. and Jane (Morton)Lunt. He was a tailor and lived most of his life in Poland, where he d. June 27,1879. She m. 2nd., Mar.1,1890, Edgar A. Hall, b. in Naples, Me., Apr.17,1866, son of Charles H. and Julia(Annis)Hall. He was at one time a sign and carriage painter and lived in Poland and Mechanic Falls. She d. July or Aug.1913.

No children.

4. Richard Elliot Garland, b. in Poland, May 22,1829, m. Feb.24, 1869, Sylvia Scott, b. in Jersey City, N.J., Mar.29,1849, dau. of John and Catherine(Marquatt)Scott. He removed to California in 1860 and lived there practically all his life. He was interested in mining and stage line operation. Was active in politics and was a Dep. Sheriff for years. Was in the Mexican War as a pony expressman, carrying dispatches. He d. in Quincy, Calif., Apr.19,1893. His widow d. in Quincy, Apr.11,1911.

Children:-

- I. Benjamin Quincy Garland, b. Dec.24,1869, Quincy,d. May 3,1871, Quincy.
- II. Silvie Garland, b. in Quincy, Aug.29,1871, m. Leonard O. Garner.

Children:-

1. Leonard Burtram Garner, b. Sept.3,1894.
2. Leora Ellen Garner, b. Sept.15,1905.
- III. Roy Elliot Garland, b. in Quincy, June 1,1873, m. Charlotta Eullen, and d. in Sacramento, Calif., Nov.19,1915. They had two children, Leroy and Ruetta.

IV. Richard Alvan Garland, b. Jan.18,1877, Quincy, d. Feb.12,1877. Quincy.

V. Georgie Garland, b. Nov.26,1877, Quincy, d. Feb.27, 1879, Quincy.

5. Benjamin H. Garland, l. Aug.8,1831, Poland, d. Sept.6,1849.



BENJAMIN⁴ WATERHOUSE (John,³ Timothy,² Richard,¹) born in Barrington, N.H., Aug.10,1758, married first, Jan.20,1780, Abiah Garland. She died May 9,1812, and he married second, Aug.25,1817, Sarah Webster, born in Rye, N.H.

He was a farmer and always lived in Barrington. According to the Barrington records he was granted liberty, Oct.26,1792, by the Selectmen, to "mix and Retail Spirituous Liquors agreeable to the laws of this State." He died Dec.29,1823.

CHILDREN:-

I. Alice Waterhouse, born in Barrington, Dec.11,1783, married first, Mar.29,1810, John Swain, born July 23,1787. An old record book of her Uncle John Waterhouse says Alice and her husband, John Swain Jr. moved "home" Oct. 25,1810. Also that "John Swain began to live in the new house he bought of Joshua Otis Mar.24,1825." Also, "Began to live with John Swain Apr.12,1825." Also the following which was evidently written by Alice herself. "Alice Swain was baptized Sept.12,1829, by the Elder Enoch Place. And may my feet never depart from following God with all my heart while I have life and breath, and when I am by death cut down I hope I shall receive a crown and reign with Christ above." John Swain was a farmer and lived in Strafford. He died and his widow married second, William Hill. They both died in Rochester, N.H.

No Children.

105. II. Samuel H. Waterhouse, born Mar.20,1788, Barrington, N.H.

III. John Waterhouse born in Barrington, had the scarlet fever when about five years old which left him deaf and dumb. He was killed, in Barrington, by a falling tree.

106. IV. Benjamin Waterhouse, born June 24,1799, Barrington, N.H.

34

ELIZABETH⁴ WATERHOUSE (John.³ Timothy,² Richard,¹) born in Barrington, N.H., Mar. 13, 1765, married, Apr. 1787, Joseph Garland, born in Rye or Barrington, N.H., Apr. 12, 1865, son of John and Mary (Rand) Garland.

He was a farmer and singing master. Lived in Barrington until 1790 when they removed to Strafford, N.H., where they lived the rest of their lives. He died Feb. 22, 1830 and his widow died Aug. 10, 1848.

CHILDREN:-

- I. Benjamin Garland, b. Oct. 26, 1787, Barrington, d. Dec. 3, 1798, Strafford.
- II. Mary Garland, b. Mar. 3, 1789, Barrington, d. in Strafford, unm.
- III. Nathaniel Garland, b. in Strafford, N.H., Feb. 10, 1791, m. 1st., Mar. 19, 1812, Lydia Caverno, b. in Strafford, Feb. 15, 1795, dau. of Jeremiah and Margaret (Brewster) Caverno. She d. in Strafford, Mar. 15, 1841, and he m. 2nd., 1843, Elizabeth Davis of Lee, N.H., dau. of Obidiah Davis. Mr. Garland was a farmer and always lived on the homestead in Strafford, where he d. Apr. 14, 1855.

Children:-

1. Susan Buzzell Garland, b. in Strafford, N.H., July 19, 1812, m. 1830, Joseph Cate, b. in Strafford, Feb. 13, 1814, son of Capt. Joseph and -----? (Parsley) Cate. He was a farmer and lived in Strafford until after his 2nd. marriage when he removed to Deerfield, N.H., and later lived in Manchester, N.H., where d. Sept. 15, 1883. His wife, Susan, d. in Strafford, Mar. 13, 1831, and he m. 2nd. Elizabeth Burbank and 3rd. Abusa Hayes, both of Deerfield. He had several children by his 2nd. wife.

Children:-

- I. Susan G. Cate, b. in Strafford, Mar. 4, 1831, m. Nov. 29, 1860, William H. Wiley, b. in Barnstead, N.H., Mar. 31, 1836, son of Chandler and Eliza (Whithum) Wiley. He was a barber and lived the most of his life in Northwood, N.H. He was mustered into the U.S. service Mar. 11, 1864, in Co. C. 2nd. Mass. Cav. Became a corporal.

Child:-

1. Annie M. Wiley, b. in Northwood, N.H., Nov. 5, 1866, m. Nov. 25, 1884, Walter H. Davis. of Northwood.

2. Jeremiah Caverno Garland, b. in Strafford, N.H., Sept. 23, 1814, m. Dec. 5, 1849, Harriett C. Woodman, b. in Rochester, N.H., May 31, 1818, dau. of Jeremiah H. and Sarah (Chase) Woodman.

He grad. from the College of Physicians, the Medical Dept. of Columbian College, New York City, in 1844 and began the practice of his profession in Rochester, N. H., Later he removed to Nashua and then to Plymouth, N.H., where he lived some six years when he returned to Nashua and afterwards resided there. He was a surgeon in the army from Feb. 1863 to July 1864. Was City Physician of Nashua for several years. Also Supt. of Schools and held other city offices.

Children:-

- I. Celia Turner Garland, b. Sept. 8, 1850, Nashua, d. May 11, 1889, Nashua.
- II. Willard Parker Garland, b. May 6, 1853, Nashua, d. May 25, 1880, Nashua.
- III. George Lincoln Garland, b. May 29, 1855, Nashua. Was a clerk in a book store in Chicago.
- IV. Theodore Woodman Garland, b. in Plymouth, N.H., Jan. 9, 1859, m. Apr. 24, 1887, Mrs. Sylvia E. King, b. in Flattskill, N.Y., May 25, 1857, She was the widow of Henry King and the dau. of John and Jane (Hosmer) Smith. Mr. Garland was a grain dealer in Chicago.

No children.

V. Claudius W. Garland, b. Aug. 25, 1863, Plymouth, d. Feb. 15, 1867, Nashua.

3. Eliza Ann Garland, b. in ~~Strafford~~ Strafford, Feb. 23, 1817, m. Jan. 31, 1837, George W. Knowlton, b. in Northwood, N. H., Feb. 8, 1815, dau. of Jonathan and Driscalla (Bargin) Knowlton. Eliza d. in Strafford, July 16, 1837 and he m. 2nd. Mary Ann Virgin of Northwood. Mr. Knowlton was a shoemaker and later a blacksmith. Lived in Northwood most of his life and the last five years was Dep. Sheriff for Rockingham and Strafford Counties. He d. May 3, 1878. He had no children by his first wife.

4. Joseph Garland, b. in Strafford, N.H., Oct. 5, 1821, m. 1848, Olive Lydia Buzzell, b. in Barrington, N.H., May 8, 1826, dau. of David and Lois (Leighton) Buzzell. He was a farmer and always lived in Strafford where he d. Jan. 26, 1897. His widow d. Dec. 30, 1916.

Children:-

- I. Susan Buzzell Garland, b. in Barrington, N.H., Dec.

19, 1848, m. Oct. 1, 1871, Daniel W. Gale, b. in Belmont, N.H., Feb. 23, 1817, son of William R. and Lucia P. (Badger) Gale. He was, at one time, a clerk in the Gilmanton Mills and resided in Belmont. Was town treasurer for eight years and during the years 1890-91 represented his town in the legislature.

Child:-

I. Frederick G. Gale, b. Feb. 13, 1873, Strafford, d. Feb. 18, 1873, Strafford.

II. Eliza Ann Garland, b. in Strafford, May 29, 1851, m. July 4, 1871, Daniel S. Woodman, b. in Strafford, Dec. 11, 1845, son of Joshua and Martha A. (Huckins) Woodman. He was a farmer and resided in Strafford. Was one of the Selectmen for three years, a trustee of the town library and a prominent officer in the Grange. He d. Jan. 2, 1915.

Children:-

1. Byron J. Woodman, b. Jan. 25, 1872, Strafford.
2. Herbert C. Woodman, b. Dec. 1, 1873, Strafford.

III. Vina Garland, b. in Strafford, Apr. 3, 1858, m. Dec. 15, 1878, Charles F. Waldron, b. in Strafford, Apr. 13, 1857, son of Azariah and Emily (Hill) Waldron. He is a farmer and always lived in Strafford. At one time he represented his town in the Legislature. His wife, Vina, d. in Strafford, Apr. 4, 1880, and he m. 2nd., Lula C. Bennett.

No children.

IV. Charles Fletcher Garland, b. in Strafford, May 19, 1859, m. 1881, Ada May Thompson, b. in Northwood, N.H., Apr. 28, 1863, dau. of Benjamin and Helen S. (Lancaster) Thompson. He was is a farmer and always lived in Strafford.

Children:-

1. Vina M. Garland, b. in Northwood, Sept. 17, 1881.
2. Lucia E. Garland, b. in Strafford, Oct. 25, 1885, m. Nov. 27, 1907, Clarence R. Caswell, b. May 1884.
3. Helen V. Garland, b. in Strafford, Nov. 27, 1888, m. Oct. 30, 1907, Arthur D. Hayes, b. in Barrington, N.H., Aug. 1883. She d. in Somerville, Mass., Oct. 6, 1918.

4. Olive M. Garland, b. May 16, 1896, Strafford.

V. George Nathaniel Garland, b. in Strafford, Sept. 7, 1867, m. May 30, 1888, Emma D. Buzzell, b. in Barrington, N.H., Mar. 3, 1864, dau. of John H. & Hannah F. (Leighton) Buzzell. He is a mechanic and resided at one time in Ayer, Mass.

Child:-

1. Russell W. Garland, b. May 16, 1889, Strafford.

5. George Washington Garland, b. in Strafford, N.H., Mar. 15, 1823, d. Aug. 20, 1824, Strafford.

6. George Washington Garland, b. in Strafford, Aug. 23, 1824, m. May 14, 1866, Melvina Towle, b. in Portland, Me., Mar. 18, 1832, dau. of Edward C. and Martha (Bryant) Towle. He went to Boston when a boy and found employment in a restaurant. Later he became the proprietor and afterwards carried on the same business on Brattle St.

No children.

IV. Betsey Garland, born Jan. 31, 1793, Strafford, d. Oct. 31, 1796, Strafford.

V. John Garland, born Apr. 1794, Strafford, d. Apr. 5, 1797, Strafford.

VI. Joseph Garland, born June 1, 1798, Strafford, d. Sept. 1, 1800, Strafford.

VII. Benjamin Garland born in Strafford, June 29, 1800, married Nov. 17, 1819, Anna Frew, b. Aug. 28, 1802, dau. of Stephen and Lydia (Twombly) Frew.

He was a farmer and removed to Garland, Me., where he lived some forty years. He then removed to Charleston, Me., where he lived until his death, Aug. 21, 1880. His widow died in the same place Feb. 14, 1881.

Children:-

1. Joseph Garland, b. Jan. 28, 1821, m. Abigail J. Rollins. He was a farmer and resided in Bangor, Me.

Children:-

I. Esther F. Garland, b. Jan. 11, 1844, m. ----- Brockway.

II. Abby A. Garland, b. Nov. 20, 1849, m. ---- Herrick.

III. Clarence A. Garland, b. Dec. 30, 1853, m. Apr. 28, 1876, Mary J. Monahan, and resides in Bangor.

Child:-

1. Clarence L. Garland, b. Feb. 19, 1882.

2. Mary Ann Garland, b. Mar. 6, 1824, m. 1st., Stephen Foss and 2nd., Orrin Sturtevant. She lived in Pennsylvania.

Children:-

- I. Franklin Foss, m. and had a son Walter G. Foss, who in 1915 lived in Foxcroft, Me.
- II. George Foss.
- III. Lizzie Foss.
- IV. Hannah Foss.

3. Lydia Elizabeth Garland, b. in Garland, Me., June 11, 1830, m. Sept. 2, 1849, Royal Jackson Lyford, b. in Cabot, Vt., Dec. 27, 1828, son of Ezekiel Joseph W. and Annie (Drew) Lyford. He was a farmer and lived in Milo, Me. Was a noted fox hunter. His wife d. July 14, 1907, Veasie, Me.

Children:-

- I. Mary Louise Lyford, b. in Garland, Me., Mar. 14, 1850, m. Mar. 11, 1871, William B. Brown, and lived in Bangor, Me.
- II. Florence Adelia Lyford, b. in Dexter, Me., Aug. 19, 1852, m. Mar. 19, 1876, Hanson C. Sibley and lived in Monson, Me.
- III. Lillian Evanda Lyford, b. in Dover, Me., Mar. 8, 1856, lived in Bangor, m. m. Frank Beal.
- IV. Martha Lizzie Lyford, b. in Dover, Me., Feb. 3, 1859, m. Aug. 23, 1884, Elmer D. Sibley and lived in Groveton, N.H.
- V. Charles Jackson Lyford, b. in Dover, Me., Jan. 6, 1864, m. Jan. 9, 1889, Emily R. Hutchins and lived in Calais, Me.
- VI. Frank Garland Lyford, b. in Dexter, Me., Mar. 5, 1866, m. Bertha Smith and lived in Bangor, Me.

4. Frank Garland, b. in Garland, Me., Jan. 14, 1833, m. Apr. 8, 1869, Melissa Witham, b. in Abbott, Me., Aug. 30, 1840, dau. of Isaac and Mary J. (Goodwin) Witham. He was a farmer and always lived in Garland.

No children.

5. Martha Susan Garland, b. in Garland, Mar. 18, 1835, m. Aug. 11, 1856, Josiah Petingill Royal, b. in Dover, Me., Mar. 9, 1832, son of Isaac and Olive (Trundy) Royal. He was a farmer and lived in Garland after his boyhood. Held various town offices. He d. in Garland, May 27, 1903. His wife d. in Garland, May 19, 1903.

Children:-

All born in Garland.

- I. Sarah Evangelina Royal, b. in Sept. 20, 1857, m. Feb. 2, 1877, Herbert H. Judkins and lived in Lowell, Mass. She d. about Jan. 13, 1905.

- II. Emma Ann Royal, b. June 29, 1859, m. Aug. 14, 1883, Samuel S. Tewksbury and lived in Lewiston, Me. She d. June 23, 1914.
- III. Charles ~~Sarkant~~ Edwin Royal, b. Aug. 4, 1861, resides in Dover, Me., unm.
- IV. Herbert Benjamin Royal, b. Sept. 24, 1863, m. June 19, 1889, Alma T. Eaton. He is a physician and resides in Harvard, Mass.
- V. George Leslie Royal, b. Nov. 24, 1867, lived in Dexter, Me., unm.
- VI. Lizzie Marion Royal, b. Dec. 11, 1869, m. Dec. 19, 1891, Timothy R. Shaw, and lived in Corinna, Me. He d. Feb. 6, 1919, Fairfield, Me.
- VII. Nettie Mabel Royal, b. Dec. 3, 1875, m. Robert Allcock.
6. John Drew Garland, b. in Garland, Me., Aug. 13, 1837, m. 1st. June 18, 1861, Albertina Shaw, b. in Exeter, Me., Feb. 24, 1838, dau. of Andrew and Amanda (Barker) Shaw. She d. in Charleston, Me., May 11, 1873, and he m. 2nd., Apr. 30, 1874, Ella F. Shaw, b. in Exeter, Me., Oct. 9, 1852. She was a sister of his first wife. She d. Oct. 7, 1876 and he m. 3rd., Sept. 30, 1884, Sarah E. Richardson, b. in Atkinson, Me., Feb. 17, 1858, dau. of Moses and Sarah (Philpot) Richardson. Mr. Garland was a farmer, lumberman and hotel keeper. Was also interested in a slate quarry. Lived in Canada, ^{and in} Garland, Monson and Bangor, Me.

Children:-

- I. Burdette E. Garland, b. in Orono, Me., Nov. 5, 1866. Lived in Bangor.
- II. George Moses Garland, b. in Garland, Me., Apr. 18, 1877. Lived in Boston, Mass.
- III. Benjamin H. Garland, b. Feb. 24, 1888, Atkinson, Me.
7. Sarah Jane Garland, b. Apr. 22, 1840, Garland, d. 1841, Garland.
8. George Henry Garland, b. Apr. 1, 1842, Garland, d. 1845, Garland.
9. Luther Garland, b. in Garland, June 2, 1843, m. Dec. 26, 1868, Mary A. Cleaves, b. in Dexter, Me., May 31, 1851, dau. of Thomas G. and Sarah (Fane) Cleaves. Was a farmer most of his life but engaged for a time in milling. Lived in Garland, Charleston and Foxcroft, Me.

Child:-

- I. Claudius L. Garland, (app.) b. Apr. 15, 1875, Charleston, Me.
- VIII. John Waterhouse Garland, born in Strafford, N.H., May 18, 1803, married Oct. 12, 1828, Sarah Seward, born in Strafford, Sept. 9, 1807, dau. of John or George and Molly (Spencer) Seward.

He was a farmer and lived most of his life in Strafford, where he d. Dec.20,1886. His widow d. in Strafford, Dec.14,1887.

Children:-

1. Emily A. Garland, d. young.
2. Lyman Garland ~~Garland~~, d. in infancy.
3. Hollis Garland, d. about seven years old.
4. Emily A. Garland, d. about five years old.
5. John L. Garland, b. probably in Strafford, N.H., June 1, 1838, m. 1st., May 22, 1866, Emily Babb, b. in Berwick, Me., Jan.10, 1836, dau. of Joseph and Elizabeth G:(Noble)Babb. She d. 1884 and he m. 2nd., Dec.7, 1893, Olive A. Parker, b. in Eliot, Me., July 1, 1827, dau. of Abel and Lucy(Tetherly)Parker. Mr. Garland was a farmer and shoe maker and lived in Strafford until about 1892 when he removed to Eliot, Me. He enlisted Nov.22, 1861 in Co.H, 7th. N.H. Reg. and served until Aug.20, 1865.

Children:-

- I. Elma B. Garland, b. in Strafford, June 20, 1867, m. Charles P. Frost.
6. George G. Garland, b. June 1, 1838, d. young.
7. Sarah Jane Garland, b. young.
8. Mary E. Garland, b. Jan.30, 1844, m. Apr.22, 1864, Robert Faulkner, b. in Havre, France, Mar.12, 1840, son of Archibald and Jane(McClellan)Faulkner. He was a mechanic and lived in Keene, N.H.

Children:-

- I. Emma J. Faulkner, b. July 24, 1865, Strafford, N.H., d. Aug.7, 1866, W. Swanzey, N.H.
- II. George H. Faulkner, b. in W. Swanzey, Aug.Oct.21, 1866, m. Nov.15, 1888, Sarah J. Patterson, and at one time lived in Winchester, Mass.
- III. William H. Faulkner, b. in W. Swanzey, May 22, 1868, m. Oct.12, 1892, Mary E. Nourse, and lived at one time in Lawrence, Mass.
- IV. Charles A. Faulkner, b. in W. Swanzey, Oct.14, 1870, m. Sept.17, 1891, Nellie Beauford, (the Garland Genealogy says Bilford) and lived in Rockbottom, Mass.
- V. Fred Faulkner, b. Apr.24, 1872, Keene, N.H., lived in Brooklyn, N.Y.
- VI. Robert E. Faulkner, b. Jan.7, 1876, Keene.
- VII. John G. Faulkner, b. Nov.14, 1877.
9. Horace A. Garland, b. July 30, 1846, d. Apr.7, 1885.

IX. Betsey Waterhouse Garland, born in Strafford, N.H., May 6, 1806, married Jan. 16, 1827, Joshua Hill, b. in Northwood, N.H., Sept. 22, 1801, son of Noah and Nancy W. (Furber) Hill. He was a blacksmith and lived in Northwood and Nottingham, N.H. He d. in the latter place, Oct. 27, 1870, and his widow d. in Lynn, Mass., Mar. 14, 1890.

Children:-

1. Arementa Bradley Hill, b. in Northwood, N.H., Sept. 12, 1828, m. Dec. 1, 1859, Charles H. Maglathlin, b. in Middleboro. Mass., Jan. 2, 1836, son of Freeman and Harriet (Thomas) Maglathlin. He was an expressman between Lynn and Boston, and d. in Dover, N.H., July 20, 1890. His widow d. in Swampscott, Mass., Feb. 5, 1905.

Children:-

- I. Alice Maglathlin, b. Feb. 2, 1861, Nottingham, N.H., d. May 8, 1866, So. Boston, Mass.
2. John Hill, b. July 25, 1830, Northwood, N.H., d. July 5, 1831, Northwood.
3. John Newland Maffitt Hill, b. July 1, 1832, Northwood, d. Feb. 21, 1855, Boston, Mass.
4. Mary Cilley Hill, b. in Boston, Mass., May 12, 1834, m. Oct. 31, 1863, Jacob Welch, b. in Nottingham, N.H., Aug. 26, 1836, son of Joseph D. and Mary A. (Priest) Welch. He was a furniture dealer and lived in Lynn, Mass., most of his life. He was a member of the Common Council in that City in 1869. He d. in Lee, N.H., Sept. 18, 1888. His widow d. in Swampscott, Mass., Jan. 29, 1919.

Children:-

- I. Marianna Welch, b. Feb. 23, 1865, Lynn, d. July 28, 1865, Lynn.
- II. John Henry Welch, b. in Lynn, Mar. 19, 1867, m. Mary Collins Pitman.
- III. Mabel Garland Welch, b. June 21, 1869, Lynn, d. June 29, 1872, Swampscott.
- IV. Alice May Welch, b. in Swampscott, Mar. 16, 1874, m. George Sargent Jameson.
5. Helen Varney Hill, b. in Nottingham, N.H., Mar. 29, 1836, m. Nov. 1, 1855, Charles Taylor, b. in Quincy, Mass., Aug. 4, 1822, son of Thomas and Anna (Adams) Taylor. He was a teaming contractor, doing business between Boston and Chelsea. Lived in Chelsea and later in Wollaston, Mass.

Children:-

- I. Walter Herbert Taylor, b. Feb. 5, 1864, Boston, Mass. d. Feb. 13, 1892, Chelsea, Mass.
- II. Lewis Ambrose Taylor, b. Oct. 30, 1872, Chelsea, d. July 13, 1873, Chelsea.

6. Susan Maria Hill, b. in Nottingham, N.H., Dec. 31, 1837, m. Jan. 24, 1856, ~~Isaiah~~ Isaiah Erew Edgerly, b. in Wellfleet, Mass., Mar. 16, 1831, son of Isaiah and Matilda T. (Bourne) Edgerly. He was a farmer and also raised and prepared herbs and roots for druggists. He lived in Strafford and for many years at Wadley's Falls, Lee, N.H. He represented the town of Strafford in the Legislature in 1860, and was one of the Selectmen and a member of the Board of Education in Lee for several years. He d. Jan. 2, 1902, Lee.

Children:-

- I. Charles Bourne Edgerly, b. in Strafford, Aug. 22, 1858, m. Annie L. Bennett and resided at Wadley's Falls.
- II. Isaiah Irving Edgerly, b. in Strafford, June 3, 1860, m. Stella Smith and lived in Swampscott, Mass. He d. May 12, 1915.

Child:-

1. Lloyd Irving Edgerly, b. Feb. 16, 1896, entered the U.S. service as 1st. Quarter Master in the Naval Reserve in Maine, Apr. 1917. Became an Ensign in Feb. 1918. Served across on the U.S.S. "Flusser." Released June 1919.

- III. Annie Josephine Edgerly, b. Oct. 23, 1867, Strafford, d. July 12, 1879, Lee, N.H.

7. Bradbury Walker Hill, b. Apr. 15, 1840, Nottingham, N.H., d. Jan. 16, 1874, Lynn, Mass.

8. Ambrose Cushing Hill, b. in Nottingham, Oct. 24, 1846, m. Nov. 28, 1870, Carolina Augusta Mather, b. in Durham, N.H., Aug. 25, 1850, son of Jacob and Mehitable J. (Willey) Mather. He is a furniture dealer in Lynn, Mass., and has resided in that city, also Lynnfield and Swampscott.

Children:-

- I. Mabel Hill, b. in Lynn, June 18, 1876, m. Henry Ezekiel Ricker. He d. Feb. 28, 1919.
- II. George Ambrose Hill, b. Sept. 23, ~~1888~~ 1883, d. July 4, 1919, Lynnfield.

35

DANIEL⁴ WATERHOUSE (John,³ Timothy,² Richard,¹) born in Barrington, N. H., July 23, 1770, married Aug. 10, 1806, Lydia Brown, born in Barrington,

May 17, 1787, dau. of John and Mary (Parsley) Brown.

He was a farmer and lived in Barrington until 1821, when the portion of the town in which he lived was set off and incorporated as the town of Strafford. He died there June 12, 1849, and his widow died in the same place May 13, 1871.

CHILDREN:-

- I. Mary Waterhouse, b. in Barrington, Apr. 15, 1807, m. Apr. 26, 1829, ~~in Strafford, July 12, 1829, son of Mr. John and Dorothy (Babb)~~ Solomon Foss, b. in Strafford, July 12, 1806, son of Dr. John and Dorothy (Babb) Foss. He was a farmer and blacksmith and lived in Strafford all his life. He d. in Rochester, N.H., June 19, 1894. His wife d. at Strafford Corner, May 16, 1885.

Children:-

1. Isaac Babb Foss, b. Dec. 13, 1829, m. Sept. 12, 1852, Mary Jane Mace, b. in Gilmanton, N.H., Jan. 7, 1827. He d. Sept. 9, 1858, and he and his wife are buried with his parents in the "Crown Point" church yard at Strafford.

Children:-

- I. Dexter Solomon Foss, b. in Rochester, N.H., Aug. 3, 1853, m. Nov. 28, 1874, Ella Augusta Young, b. in Farmington, N.H., Feb. 17, 1859, dau. of Furber and Elizabeth R. (Goodall) Young. She, Ella, d. June 8, 1888.

Children:-

1. Eugene Isaac Foss, b. in Rochester, Sept. 22, 1875, m. Annie -----?

Child:-

- I. Dexter Eugene Foss, b. Oct. 30, 1894.

- II. Ella Emogene Foss, b. June 2, 1857, m. Sept. 4, 1875, John W. Clough, and d. Apr. 1, 1876.

No children.

108. II. Joseph Waterhouse, born July 10, 1809, Barrington. N.H.
109. III. Benjamin A. Waterhouse, born Sept. 30, 1811, Barrington.
110. IV. Daniel Waterhouse, born ~~xxxxxx~~ June 16, 1814, Barrington.
111. V. Alice Waterhouse, born Jan. 11, 1817, Barrington.

112. VI. Lydia J. Waterhouse, born June 25, 1819, Barrington.
 113. VII. Sarah A. Waterhouse, born June 7, 1822, Barrington.
 114. VIII. Dorothy K. Waterhouse, born Dec. 5, 1825, Strafford., N.H.

IX. David Waterhouse, born Mar. 15, 1831, Strafford, d. Jan. 10, 1832, Strafford.

36

SAMUEL⁴ WATERHOUSE, (Samuel,³ Samuel², Richard,¹) born in Boston, Mass, Jan. 27, 1728, married Oct. 24, 1754, Hannah Lewis, dau. of Job and Sarah (Palmer) Lewis. Job Lewis was a merchant in Boston.

Mr. Waterhouse was a merchant in Boston and later was a secretary in the Custom House. Feb. 26, 1756 he bought of John and Jonathan Simpson "A certain Piece or Parcel of Land with the Buildings and Wharffe thereon being the third Lott on the Easterly side of Orange street in Boston aforesaid bounded Westerly on said street there measuring ninety six feet be it more or less. Northerly on the Lott of Hugh Hall Esq^r there measuring about one hundred and forty two feet. Easterly upon the Sea or Saltwater there measuring about ninety seven feet, and one half, and Southerly on a Lott of Henry Gibbins there measuring about one hundred and forty two feet. Also the privilege of Landing and Shipping of Wood and any other Goods from said Wharfe upon Stephen Minor's Division of said Land free of Wharfage with all other privileges & Appurces to the same belonging."

In the town records of Boston we find that at a meeting of the Selectmen, held Mar. 19, 1761, steps were taken as "the law directs" to widen the street between Faneuil Hall Market and Mess. Bromfield, Waterhouse and Gibb's stores.

Also at a meeting of the Selectmen, Mar. 31, 1762, Hugh Hall, Esq.,

Mr. Samuel Waterhouse, & Mr. Robert Pierpont, "some of the Proprietors of Land on each side of the High-way near the fortification," appeared before the Board and assured them, "that they are now ready to comply with their request by immediately securing said High Way from the encroachments of the Tides, and in all respects fulfilling the Agreement entered into with the Town of Boston in Nov. 1753."

Contrary to all others of the name, so far as we know, Samuel Waterhouse was a staunch Royalist or Tory. "From the first signs of revolt, to the evacuation of Boston, his sympathies, his words and his pen were all actively employed in behalf of King George."

The Boston Massacre had thrown the town into great excitement, and "At a Meeting of the Freeholders and other Inhabitants of the Town of Boston at Faneuil Hall on Tuesday the 6th. Day of March 1770 -- 11 O'Clock A:M: occasioned by the Massacre made in King Street, (now State Street), by the Soldiery the preceeding Night", the people were requested to give such information as they could regarding the affair. It was finally voted that the Moderator, the Hon. Thomas Cushing, John Hancock, Samuel Adams and twelve others "be a Committee to wait on his Honor the Lieut. Governor; and acquaint him; that it is the unanimous Opinion of this Meeting, that the Inhabitants and Soldiery can no longer dwell together in safety; that nothing can be rationally expected to restore the peace of the Town, and prevent blood and Carnage, but the immediate removal of the Troops; and that they therefore most fervently pray his Honor that his power & influence may be exerted for their instant removal. Then the Meeting was dissolved."

On the afternoon of the same day "At a meeting of the Freeholders and other Inhabitants of the Town of Boston legally qualified and warned in Public Town Meeting Assembled at Faneuil Hall on Tuesday the 6 Day of March Anno Domini 1770-- 3 O'Clock, P:M: -- Faneuil Hall not being Capacious enough to receive the Inhabitants who attended; Voted,

that this Meeting be Adjourned to Dr Sawalls Meeting House"- (the Old South)- The committee appointed at the morning meeting reported that the Lieut. Governor had consented to send part of the troops out of the town and agreed to restrain the others so that there would be no further trouble. This arrangement was voted unsatisfactory with only one dissenting voice and a part of the same committee was made a new committee to wait on the Lieut. Governor and demand that all the troops be removed from town. The matter was at once referred to the Council which body concluded that it was necessary to remove all the troops and orders were given to that effect. The committee reported this result ~~in the~~ back to the meeting and the tension of the moment was greatly relieved. Just before the meeting adjourned, however, the following action was taken,- "Upon a Motion made and seconded - Voted, unanimously That this Town have the greatest abhorrence of one of its Inhabitants viz^t.- Samuel Water-house, who in defiance of the united sentiment not only of his Fellow Citizens, but all his Fellow Countrymen expressed repeatedly in the Votes and Records of the Honble House of Representatives of this Province, has continued to accommodate Troops at this time so Justly obnoxious to a free People and abhorrent to a free Constitution, and thereby basely prostituted a once respectable Mansion House to the use of a Main Guard -"

The Memorial History of Boston says,- "The Press, like the Pulpit, reflected all the varying phases of current opinion; *** it was personal and partisan to a degree only tolerable in times of conflict;*** the newspapers teemed with resolves, protests, instructions, appeals, sermons, satires, and arguments of every kind,- some of them addressed to reason and conscience, some to the strong passions, and all of them written with remarkable force and energy. Parodies upon parodies followed in subsequent numbers to the great indignation of one or the oth-

er parties. Among the most noted contributors to these journals was Samuel Waterhouse of the customs service, a notorious libeller."

President John Adams in a letter called Samuel Waterhouse "the most notorious scribbler, satirist, and libeller, in the service of the conspiritors against the liberties of America." "He was the author of 'Jem-mibullero', and of many of the most scurrilous papers of the time." This Jemmibullero, or ~~song of the drunkard~~ "the song of the drunkard," was also spelled Jemmybullero and Jemmy Bullero.

Referring to this in an earlier letter Mr. Adams says, "Samuel Waterhouse, an old scribbler for Hutchinson against Pownall was supposed to be the author of this song." At a still earlier date in an entry in his diary Mr. Adam's Diary we find, "Jo. Green, Waterhouse, and Church were talked of as capable of Bullero and the burlesques."

In a letter to William Tudor, dated at Quincy, Feb. 4, 1817, Mr. Adams writes, "Your son has requested my 'opinion of the man' as well as of his administration." What an explosion of reminiscences has this question excited in me! To answer this question I must draw the character of Chief Justice Pratt, of Colonel and Judge John Tyng, of Hutchinsons and Olivers, as well as Samuel Waterhouse."

When the British evacuated Boston, in March, 1776, the latter, then a Secretary in the Custom House, with his family of seven removed with the army to Halifax. "Halifax at this time," so an account says, "was little more than a hamlet; at best it was a miserable village, inhabited chiefly by fishermen. It was with difficulty such an accession to the stated population could be temporarily accommodated with shelter, fuel, and food; most of the houses were in a dilapidated state, letting in the bleak winds of the season through manifold chinks, hardly a room ever having known the luxury of being plastered. Whole families were more uncomfortably crowded together than they had been in the few store-ships which had transported them from Boston. A few of these refugees remain-

*Pownall

ed in Halifax. Some removed to England, and there are individuals *** who embraced the first favorable opportunity of returning to the happier land of their nativity." Samuel Waterhouse embarked for England in the Ship "Aston Hall" July, 1776. He was proscribed and banished by the act of 1778, which is as follows,-

BANISHMENT ACT OF THE STATE OF
MASSACHUSETTS.

An Act to prevent the return to this state of certain persons therein named, and others who have left this state or either of the United States, and joined the enemies thereof.

"Whereas," then follows some three hundred names among which was Samuel Waterhouse, merchant, "and many other persons have left this state, or some other of the United States of America, and joined the enemies thereof and of the United States of America, thereby not only depriving these states of their personal services at a time when they ought to have afforded their utmost aid in defending the said states, against the invasions of a cruel enemy, but manifesting an inimical disposition to the said states, and a design, to aid and abet the enemies thereof in their wicked purposes, and whereas many dangers may accrue to this state and United States, if such persons should be again admitted to reside in this state:

Sect. I. Be it therefore enacted by the Council and House of Representatives, in general court assembled, and by the authority of the same, that if either of the said persons, or any other person, though not specially named in this act, who have left this state, or either of said states, and joined the enemies thereof as aforesaid, shall, after the passing this act, voluntarily return to this state, it shall be the duty of the sheriff of the county, and of the selectmen, committees of correspondence, safety, and inspection, grand jurors, constables, and tything-men, and other inhabitants of the town wherein such person or persons may presume to come, and they are hereby respectively empowered and directed forthwith to apprehend and carry such person or persons before some justice of the peace within the county, who is hereby required to commit him or them to the common goal within the county, there in close custody to remain until he shall be sent out of the state, as is herein after directed; and such justice is hereby directed to give immediate information thereof to the board of war of this state: and the said board of war are hereby empowered and directed to cause such person or persons so committed, to be transported to some part or place within the dominions, or in the possession of the forces of the king of Great Britain, as soon as may be after receiving such information: those who are able, at their own expense, and others at the expense of this state, and for this purpose to hire a vessel or vessels, if need be.

Sect. 2. And be it further enacted by the authority aforesaid, that

if any person or persons, who shall be transported as aforesaid, shall voluntarily return into this state, without liberty first had and obtained from the general court, he shall, on conviction thereof before the superior court of judicature, court of assize and general, goal delivery, suffer the pains of death without benefit of clergy.- (Passed, September, 1778.)"

In giving a list of the proscribed, the Memorial History of Boston goes on to say that "when it is considered that forty-five of the above were termed esquires, nine were ministers and doctors, and thirty-six were merchants, we can form some idea of the great social changes produced by the Revolution."

Samuel Waterhouse evidently went first to London, for in a diary kept by Samuel Quincy who was Solicitor-General of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, at the outbreak of the Revolution, also a Loyalist, under date of Nov. 9, 1776, we read, - "This being Lord Mayor's day, dined, by invitation of Mr. John Lane, at the London Coffee House, Ludgate Hill, where were present," among others, "Mr., Mrs., and two Misses Waterhouse." Mr. Waterhouse finally went to Poole in the County of Dorsetshire where he probably died, sometime before 1803. He was in London in 1779 when he was a Loyalist Addressor of the King.

Dec. 21, 1778, Isaac Phillips was appointed agent of the Estate of Samuel Waterhouse, "late of Boston." Mar. 12, 1779, he presented an inventory as follows, -

Inventory of Samuel Waterhouse, an absentee.

A brick tenement at the No. side of the State House - - -	£ 1500.
A brick dwelling house with the land thereto belonging, situated near the head of the Hope Talks. - - - - -	4000.
A brick tenement on the So. side State House - - - - -	3000.

In addition to this he had an interest in a tract of land in Lincoln Co., Me.

It will be remembered that Samuel Waterhouse married Hannah, daughter of Job Lewis, of Boston. When her grandfather, Eliakim Palmer, died he left his property in Boston, "houses, buildings, Wharfs, Lands

and Real Estate in trust for his sister Sarah, wife of Job Lewis, and after her death it was to go to her children, Abigail and Hannah. Abigail died and the whole property went to Hannah, wife of Mr. Waterhouse. Her father was also one of the Proprietors of the Pejepscot Purchase or ^{the same being} Lands, ~~and~~ a large tract of land situated in York Co. Maine, on both sides of the Androscoggin River, between Casco and Merrymeeting Bays, of which the present towns of Topsham, Brunswick and Harpswell formed an extensive portion. Mrs. Waterhouse must thus have possessed a large amount of property.

Job Lewis died previous to 1757 for at a meeting of the Proprietors Mar. 14, 1757, he is referred to as deceased and Samuel Waterhouse appears as a Proprietor, he having probably been elected to represent his father-in-law's interest. Mr. Waterhouse was quite prominent in the affairs of the Proprietors for ~~far~~ a considerable number of years and at a meeting Sept. 16, 1761, Isaac Royall Esq., of Medford, and Belcher Noyes and Samuel Waterhouse, Merchant, both of Boston, were made a Standing Committee "for managing the Prudentiall affairs of the whole Propriety, and also to Grant Sell or dispose of any part of said Lands not yet disposed of, that may by them be Judged necessary for the Interests of said Propriety." At this time the other Proprietors were Henry Gibbs and William Skinner.

The Registry of Deeds in York, Cumberland, Kennebec and Lincoln Counties in Maine show a very large number of sales of portions of this property and given some idea of the extent of Hannah Waterhouse's holdings. The following are a few of the more important transfers.

July 5, 1757, Samuel and his wife sell an island in Casco Bay, "commonly called Long Island, but said to be a part of Great Sebascodegin Island," containing 131 acres.

June 10, 1757 they sell 103 acres in Brunswick, Me.

July 28, 1759, they sell 1000 acres of land "lying within the set-

tlement of Topsham," and owned by us by virtue of a deed to our honored father, Job Lewis.

Sept.1,1767, they sell 600 acres,"it being the last of the estate of Job Lewis on Wiscasset Bay."

Sept.8,1790, Samuel Waterhouse, formerly of Boston, but now of Westminster, County of Middlesex, England, and Hannah, his wife, sell a house and land at Fort Hill, Boston. This was ~~farmer~~ probably their residence before leaving Boston.

Feb.27,1795, Samuel Waterhouse of Poole in Dorsetshire, in the Kingdom of Great Britain, Esquire, and Hannah, his wife, in her own right, sell a piece of land in Lincoln Co., Me., commonly called Muscongus Lands.

Early in 1803, her husband having evidently died, Hannah Waterhouse, of Poole, "not being to live in No. America appoints Martin Brimmer, of Boston, as her attorney for her property in this Country."

June 30,1803, she sells about 1000 acres of land in Woolwich. Lincoln Co., Me.

In Oct.1805, she petitioned for one sixteenth part of a certain tract of land in "Phillipsburg, now Alfred, Sanford, Hollis et al,"and she was granted 448 acres.

Hannah Waterhouse probably died previous to Apr.21,1812, for on that date "Katherine Wendell, of Cambridge, Mass., Widow,- William Bansecum, of Fitchburg, Mass., clerk, & Katherine B.Bansecum, his wife, in her own right,- John M. Gannett, of Hartford, Conn., gentleman,- Elizabeth L. Gannett, Cambridge, Mass., a minor, by Caleb Gannett, Esq., of Cambridge, her legal guardian,- Thomas B. Gannett, gentleman,- John Williams, Dover, N.H., & Sophi Williams, his wife, in her own right,- Katherine S. Mellin, Spinster, Cambridge, a minor, by John Mellin, Esq., her legal guardian,- Hannah Waterhouse & Abigail Waterhouse, both of Poole, England, Spinsters," petitioned the Circuit Court of Common Pleas, showing that they were siezed in fee and in Common with persons to them unknown of and in

three undivided fifth parts of a certain tract or parcel of land situated partly in Biddeford, and partly in Phillipsburg, (about 600 acres), The claim was allowed and Seth Burnham, Jeremiah Hall and William Waterhouse, of Lyman, all freeholders, were appointed to make the division.

CHILDREN:-

Of Samuel and Hannah (Lewis) Waterhouse.

- I. Hannah Waterhouse, born in Boston, Mass., ~~probably died young~~ went to England with her parents and probably never married.
- II. Abigail Waterhouse, bap. June 26, 1757, at the church in Brattle Square, Boston, went ~~to~~ to England with her parents and probably never married.
- III. Mary Waterhouse, bap. Feb. 18, 1759, at the same church. Probably died young.

37

SAMUEL⁴ WATERHOUSE, (William,³ Samuel,² Richard,¹) born probably in Portsmouth or Newington, N.H., married Aug. 16, 1750, Mary Whitten, born Feb. 1730 or 1731. She was the daughter of John and Ruth (Merrill) Whitten. John Whitten came from Salisbury, Mass., about 1724 and drew a lot on the Saco Road.

Samuel Waterhouse evidently removed to Wells soon after his marriage. May 15, 1752, he bought fifty acres of land which became the homestead, described in the deed as follows,-

"Know all men by these presents that we Anthony Littelfield of Wells in the County of York Cordwainer and Alis his wife, for and in Consideration of the sume of Sixteen pounds thirteen shillens and four pence Lawfull money of the Massachusetts Bay in New England to us the sd Anthony Littelfield & Alis his wife well and truly paid by Samuel Waterhouse of Arundel in the County and province aforesd^d Husbandman, have and by these presents Do give grant remise Release and forever quit Claim unto the sd Samuel Waterhouse his heirs and Assigns forever one half of a hundred acre grant granted to my Onkils Caleb Litelfield now deceased at a Leagal Town meeting holden in wells on the 8th Day of march 1713/4 by a Free Vote which fifty acres I the sd Litelfield purchased of my Onkils heirs as may appeare by deed which grant is to be laid out in the Commons or undivided

*uncle

land in the Township of Wells where it may be found on the East side of Mousam River not infringing on other grants."

The following is the survey of this land.

Wells May 19, 1752.

"I have this day surveyed and Laid out fifty acres of S^d grant to Mr. Saml Waterhouse Buted and bounded as followeth Viz. beginning at a white oak tree marked on four sides with the Letters S.W. and from thence Runing on North west and by west corse sixty seven Rods to a small burch Marked and then Runing S. E. and by S. one hundred and twenty Rods to a small pitch pine tree marked and from thence Runing S. E. and by E. to a popple tree Marked as a fore S^d Sixty Seven Rods and from thence on a strait corse to the first mentioned Bounds, all within S^d Boundery contains the aforesaid fifty acres."

attest Sam^l Wheelwright Surveyor of
Lands.

July 31, 1763 Mr. Waterhouse bought one sixteenth part of a sawmill and "one eighty part of three acres of land for the privilege of said mill adjoining to and upon which said mill now stands." The deed also gave "two Days Priviledges of one saw in S^d mill in every Month of ye year."

Dec. 1st. 1772, he bought, of James Wakefield, another lot of land adjoining his original purchase. The committee for dividing common lands in Wells laid out this allotment to Samuel Waterhouse as follows,--

"Beginning at a white oak stump being the easterly corner boundary of the said Samuel's land & thence running north-east by north twenty th rods to a stake then south-east by south twelve rods, then south-west sixty-eight rods to said Samuel's land and a white pine stump then north-east by north by said Samuel's land to the place begun at: and also all the Common Land contained within the following bound, viz. Beginning at a white pine tree marked, on the westerly side of the said Samuel's land and thence running north eighty-six degrees, west-erly sixty rods to a pitch pine tree marked then south-west by south thirty-two rods to a 'pople' tree, marked then south fifty-seven de-grees, easterly twenty-eight rods to a pitch pine tree marked, then south-west by south forty-two rods then south-east by east twenty-five rods to the westerly corner of said Samuel's land one hundred rods to the place begun at."

April 6, 1779 Samuel Waterhouse of Wells, Gentleman, bought of An-thony Littlefield a certain island in Wells "situate and lying in El-wive Pond on the south side containing 3 acres more or less," the same

being a grant by the town of Wells to his father, Samuel Littlefield.

This property and farm remained in the family for many years. The writer visited the old farm in the summer of 1915. It is situated about a mile from the present main road. It had then passed out of the family. The house had disappeared as had also the barn. The new owners, ~~had built~~ a new barn who lived some miles away, had built a new barn on the site of the old one to house the hay which was the only crop raised.

As the writer stood alone, in the quiet of an early morning, at the cellar hole of the old house it was with a bit of sadness that he looked over the deserted place and thought of the busy scenes and happy times of the by-gone days. This feeling was deepened when the particular object of his visit, the old burying ground, was finally found. The frosts of many winters had tipped over several of the stones and the grass, weeds and bushes of a few more years will make it almost impossible to find them. The little flag of the G. A. R. ^{however,} showed, that at least one slept there whose services to his country had not been forgotten.

In 1771, when the people of the second parish of Wells built a new meeting house pews were assigned to each according to his standing or the taxes paid. Samuel Waterhouse was given pew No. 7, in the first rank.

In 1778 there was great suffering in the army and the Legislature called on the people for contributions of clothing, shoes &c. The response was very poor, many of the families giving nothing. Captain Samuel Waterhouse gave a pair of shoes, and at a town meeting held Mar. 16 of that year he and five other captains were made a committee to provide for families of soldiers and non commissioned officers.

We take the following from Bourne's History of Kennebunk. "In 1779 a convention was held at Cambridge, Mass., (of which State Maine was then a part) for the purpose of forming a Constitution for the State.

The convention agreed on a Constitution and Declaration of Rights, and they were laid before the town of Wells at the April meeting in 1780. The matter was new to the people. Most of them had never even read a constitution of government, and as questions of the highest importance affecting their personal, civil and corporate relations were involved, it was thought proper before final action was taken, to submit the whole subject to the careful examination of the most wise and judicious of the citizens." A committee of sixteen was appointed of whom Samuel Waterhouse was one.

In 1788 Mr. Waterhouse conveyed his property to his son Samuel as appears by the following deed.

"Know all Men by these Presents that I Samuel Waterhouse of Wells in the County of York & Commonwealth of Massachusetts Yeoman for and in consideration of the sum of one thousand pounds lawfull money to me in hand paid before the delivery hereof well & truly paid by Samuel Waterhouse Junr of Wells in the County of York & Commonth. Afforesd. the Receipt whereof I do hereby acknowledge have given granted and sold and by these Presents do give grant sell & convey unto the said Samuel Waterhouse & to his heirs and assigns forever as an absolute estate of Inheritance all my Real Estate lying & being in Wells or elsewhere House Barns Lands Mill or whatsoever may be called Real Estate (except the two Rooms in where I the said Samuel and Mary Waterhouse Now lives) which we Reserve to our Selves during the term of our Natural live & then to Return to the said Samuel Waterhouse Junr and to his heirs and assigns forever as an absolute estate of Inheritance to him and them and Furthermore I the said Samuel Waterhouse Do Covenant and agree to & with the said Samuel Waterhouse Junr that I am the Lawfull owner of the above Premises and that they are free and clear of all and every Incumbrance whatsoever and that I do by these Presents give grant Sell and bargain and Convey & Confirm unto the said Samuel Waterhouse Junior & to his heirs & assigns forever as an absolute estate of Inheritance to him & them all my lands Houses Barns, Shares in Saw Mill & whatsoever may be called Real Estate & wheresoever it may be found & furthermore I the S. Mary Waterhouse do by these Presents Quitt all my Right of Power or thirds of the of the above Demised Premises and we the said Samuel & Mary Waterhouse Do by these presents Covenant & agree for ourselves & for our heirs and assigns to Warrant and Defend the above Demised Premises to him the said Samuel Waterhouse Junr and to his heirs and assigns forever against the lawfull & Claims of all Persons Whomsoever. In Testimony whereof we have hereunto set our hands & affixed our seals this twelveth day of Novr. anno Domini One Thousand Seven hundred & eighty eight."

Signed Sealed & delivered

in presence of us

Samuel Waterhouse (Seal)

her
Mary X Waterhouse (Seal)
mark

Robert Swainson)
)
 John Gillpatrick the 3) York, ss. May 7th. 1792 then the within
 named Samuel Waterhouse personally
 appeared and acknowledged this Instrument to be his free act and
 Deed before me

John Storer Justice Peace.

Received March 4th 1795.

In connection with the foregoing we give the following deed which
 is very interesting from the fact that it names all the children of
 Samuel Waterhouse Senior, together with the names of the husbands of
 the daughters and their residences.

"Know all men by these Presents that We John Waterhouse of Coxhall
 (now Lyman) in the County of York Yeoman Jacob Waterhouse of said
 Coxhall Gentleman William Waterhouse of Wells in said County, Yeoman,
 Abraham Day of said Coxhall Yeoman & Hannah my Wife in her
 right Joshua Gilpatrick of said Coxhall Yeoman & Lydia my Wife in
 her right Jeremiah Smith of Arundle in said County yeoman & Meriam
 my Wife in her right John Taylor of said Wells yeoman & Sarah my
 Wife in her right & Samuel Bennet of said Coxhall yeoman & Sarah
 Molly my Wife in her right for & in consideration of Thirty two
 pounds lawful money paid by us by Samuel Waterhouse of said Wells
 yeoman the receipt whereof we do hereby acknowledge do hereby give
 grant sell release & convey unto the said Samuel Waterhouse all our
 right title interest challenge claim & demand in & unto a certain
 tract of land lying in Wells aforesaid containing about Ninety acres
 it being the lot of land whereon the said Samuel Waterhouse
 now dwells & in & unto a certain Island in Elwife Land (Pond?) in
 said Wells now in the possession of the said Samuel Waterhouse &
 containing about three acres & also in & to all the Estate both
 real & personal whereof our honored father Samuel Waterhouse late
 of Wells aforesaid died seized or possessed with the residue remainder
 & reversion thereof.

To have and to hold the same with all the priviledges & appurtenances
 thereof to the said Samuel Waterhouse first named in this
 Instrument to him his heirs & assigns forever.

In Testimony whereof We have hereunto set our hands & Seals this
 Eighth day of April in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred
 & ninety five."

Signed Sealed & Delivered

John Waterhouse (Seal)

In Presence of us

Jacob Waterhouse (Seal)

Joseph Taylor

William Waterhouse (Seal)

Nathl. Wells

Abraham Day (Seal)

York, ss. April 8th 1795 John)

Hannah X Day

(Seal)

mark

Waterhouse Jacob Waterhouse)	Joshua Gilpatrick	(Seal)
William Waterhouse Abraham)	her	
Day & Hannah his Wife Joshua)	Lydia X Gilpatrick	(Seal)
Gilpatrick & Lydia his wife)	mark	
Jeremiah Smith & Mariam his)	Jeremiah Smith	(Seal)
wife John Taylor Junr. &)	her	
Sarah his Wife Samuel Bennet)	Miriam X Smith	(Seal)
and Molly his Wife personally)	mark	
	John Taylor Junr.	(Seal)
	her	
	Sarah X Taylor	(Seal)
	mark	
	Samuel Bennet	(Seal)
	her	
	Molly X Bennet	(Seal)
	mark	

appeared & acknowledged this Instrument to be their act and deed.

Before me Nathl. Wells Just. Peace.

Received April 21st. 1795.

The above signatures show quite forcibly the different degrees of education obtained by the men and women in those early days inasmuch as all the men signed their names while the women merely made their marks.

Samuel Waterhouse saw service in the Colonial Wars. His name appears on "a List sworn to at Wells Apr. 16, 1757, of men in Capt. Joseph Sayers (2nd Wells) Co. Reported as on Training Band List."

His name also appears on several billeting accounts for soldiers on their return from Fort William Henry and Lake George, during the year 1758. He was in Capt. James Littlefield's Co., Col. Jedediah Preble's Reg. Served from Apr. 15, to Nov. 17, 1758, 7 mos., 21 days, with 19 days travel. Billeting accounts were dated at Concord, Sudbury, Bradford and Westborough, Mass. At Concord he was ill. His name also appears on a Muster Roll dated Boston, Jan. 13, 1758., as serving from the town of Wells under the same officers as above.

Samuel Waterhouse also served in the Revolution as did his son, Samuel Junior. The writer found it a little hard to determine the records of the two but after consultation with the Custodian of the Archives at the State House in Boston, he feels sure that the service ac-

corded to each is correct.

Samuel Senior was chosen Captain of the 2nd. Company, 3rd. York Co. Regiment, dated at Wells Parish, Wells, March 20, 1776. He was ordered to be commissioned, in Council, March 29, 1776. His name appears as Captain on a Muster and Pay Roll of Capt. Samuel Waterhouse's Co. Col. Jacob Gerrish's Regt. This was a Reg. of Guards at Winter Hill detached from the militia and saw service from April 2 to July 3, 1778. June 10, 1778 he was made a Major as shown in the following record in the Maine Historical Collection.

STATE OF MASSACHUSETTS

BAY

In the House of Representatives June 10, 1778.

"The House by Ballot unanimously made choice of the following Gentlemen as Field Officers for the third Regiment of Militia in the County of York." Among the names was "Saml Waterhouse second Major."

Sent up for Concurrence)

Commissions made out)

Saml Freeman Spk. P. T.

In Council June 10, 1778, Read & Concurred.

Jno Avery DY Secy.

This Commission of Major Waterhouse is still preserved, in the possession of one of his descendants. It reads as follows,-

The Major Part of the COUNCIL of Massachusetts-Bay, in
New-England.

To Samuel Waterhouse ----- Esquire -----GREETING
YOU being appointed Second Major of the third Regiment of Militia in the County of York whereof Thomas Cutts Esquire is Colonel,-

By Virtue of the Power vested in us, WE do by these Presents, (reposing special Trust and Confidence in your Loyalty, Courage and Conduct,) Commission you accordingly.- You are therefore carefully and diligently to discharge the Duty of a Secd Major in leading, ordering, and exercising

said Regiment in Arms, both Inferior Officers and Soldiers; and to keep them in good Order and Discipline: And they are hereby commanded to obey you as their Second Major --- and you are yourself, to observe and follow such Orders and Instructions as you shall from Time to Time receive (from)

The Major part of the Council, or your Superior officers.

GIVEN under our Hands, and the Seal of said State, at Watertown the Ninth Day of June --- in the Year of our LORD, 1778.

Orderd)
)
 Major Part of the Council)

John Avery DY Secy.

The Seal of the State was affixed and the document was signed by the following, probably members of the Council.

Joe. Powell, Artemas Ward, (who was in command of the American troops who were besieging Boston until the arrival of Gen. Washington) Walter Spooner, T. Cushing, Benj. Austin, H. Gardner, D. Hopkins, B. White, N. Cushing, Josiah Stone, Oliver Prescott, A. Fuller, Oliver Wendell, I. Pitts and Sam. Niles.

Some idea of the hardships of those days and the lack of proper equipment may be gained through the following petition found in the Maine Historical Collection.

"To the Hon^{bl} Council and house of Representatives of the State of Massachusetts Bay Now Sitting at Roxbury.

the petition of Samuel Waterhouse of Wells in the county of York and State aforesaid humbly sheweth --- that your petitioner was appointed by the Brigedier of said County to command a company according to the Order of Council of the 12th of March last, which company was Raised from the interior parts of the County, and have Joyned the Regiment at Winter hill under the command of Colo^d Jacob Gerrish. but a great part of said company are deficient in Arms and some are so bad that it is dangerous to the safety of the camp to Remain in such a state. the men are willing to serve their Country but as they are in low Circumstances they have not been Able to furnish themselves according to law. Neither were they able to pay their fines when drafted and the Committyes of the plantation could not furnish them.

Therefore your petitioner prays that he may be allowed to draw from the publick stores for the use of those men who are deficient in Guns and I will be accountable for the delivery thereof at the second of July Next when the time of our draft will expire and as in duty

bound will ever pray

Samuel Waterhouse

Camp at Winter hill April 4th 1778.

This petition was acted upon as follows,-

State of Massachusetts Bay

In the House of Representatives April 6th 1778.

"On the Petition of Sam^l Waterhouse now commanding a Comp^y of Militia doing duty at Winter Hill praying for a number of Fire arms for the use of his Company,

Resolved that the Board of War be and they hereby are ordered & directed to deliver the said Sam^l Waterhouse a number of Fire arms Not Exceeding Forty he the said Waterhouse giving his obligation to Return the said arms in good order to the said Board of War on their order or on or before the third day of July Next Except such & so many of said arms as the men for whose use they are wanted shall chuse to purchase which the Board of War are hereby Impowered to sell them at such price as they shall Judg Reasonable and the Court is hereby directed to make such on his Muster Roll from those men who keep any of said Guns as the price of s^d Guns set by s^d Board of War and the sum of three shillings for those which may be Returned for the use thereof."

Sent up for Concurrence)	J. Pitts Spk ^r p Temp.
)	
In Council Apr 6 th 1778.)	
)	
Read & Concurred)	Jn ^o Avery Dy Secy.

Samuel Waterhouse held various town offices and as will be seen by the preceeding sketch was a man of considerable influence in town affairs. He died probably in the early part of 1795. His widow died in Wells July 2, 1815, aged 84 y. 5 mos.

CHILDREN:

All born in Wells.

115. I. Samuel Waterhouse, born Jan. 25, 1755.
116. II. John Waterhouse,
117. III. Jacob Waterhouse, born May 20, 1757.
118. IV. Hannah Waterhouse.
119. V. Lydia Waterhouse, bap. Oct. 1759.

VI. Miriam Waterhouse born 1765, married, Int. Feb. 3, 1787, Jeremiah Smith born in Arundel, Me., 1757. He was the son of Capt. Daniel and Hannah (Harding) Smith, and was "of Arundel" at the time of his marriage. He died Oct. 6, 1847. His wife died July 12, 1843.

Children:-

1. Jeremiah Smith, b. 1791, d. July 9, 1870, unm.
2. Miriam Smith, b. July 1798, m. John Taylor, b. 1798. She d. June 6, 1879. He d. July 24, 1863.
3. William Smith, b. 1801, d. Jan. 12, 1842, unm.

VII. Sarah Waterhouse, married, Int. Nov. 20, 1784, John Taylor Jr. of Wells.

120. VIII. Molly Waterhouse, born Feb. 19, 1768.

121. IX. William Waterhouse, born Dec. 15, 1770.

38

WILLIAM⁴ WATERHOUSE, (William,³ Samuel,² Richard,¹) born probably in Arundel, now Kennebunkport, Me., 1736, married after 1757, Elizabeth ---? born 1736.

We find no mention of him whatever in Arundel but a document endorsed "William Waterhouse Mortgage deed to his father William Waterhouse" locates the former in Falmouth, Me., early in 1757. Because of its description of what was probably the first piece of property bought by William Junior, and because of one or two unique features this deed is inserted in full.

"This Indenture made &c., between William Waterhouse of the one part Jun. of Falmouth in y^e County of York in New England ship Carpenter & William Waterhouse of Arundel of the other part Husbandman of the same County & Province aforesd For & in Consideration of y^e sum of sixty six pounds thirteen shillens & four pence Lawfull money of New England to me in hand paid by y^e sd William Waterhouse Husbandman before y^e ^{sd} ~~and~~ delivery of these presents whereof I do hereby acknowledge y^e receipt & hereof & of every part thereof do Aquit & discharge y^e sd William Waterhouse his Executors & Administrators forever by these presents doth grant, bargain & sell unto y^e sd William Waterhouse & his heirs forever One Quarter of an Acre of land lying in falmouth aforesd together with my house & barn standing on said Quarter of an Acre & is bounded as Followeth. Beginning at the southerly Corner of David Strouts house Lot so runing by y^e Road to Joseph Parkers Land so Runing back Fom y^e Road Carring that breadth to Esq. Strouts Land it being y^e Land I bought of Joseph Cate To have & to hold y^e sd bargined

premises with the Appurtanances unto y^e s^d Wm Waterhouse his Executors Administrators & Assigns from y^e date of these presents unto y^e full end Term of sixty six years & fully to be compleat & ended impeachment of or any manner of wast Yealding & paying yearly y^e rent of one paper Corn on y^e first of June Insuaing y^e date hereof. Nevertheless that If y^e s^d Waterhouse ship Carpenter His heirs Executors Administrators or Assigns Or any of them do well & truly pay or Cause to be paid unto y^e s^d Wm. Waterhouse his Executors Administrators or assigns the full sum of Sixty Six pounds thirteen shillens & four pence free and Clear of & from all manner of Charges, Taxes Assessments & Imposions whatsoever that That then fromthenceforth this present Grant Bargain & sale of these premises shall Cease & be Uterly Void & of none Effect Or Else y^e same to stand in full force in these presents Contained. To y^e Contrary thereof in any wise notwithstanding and y^e s^d Wm Waterhouse Jun^r for himself, his Heirs Executors, Administrators & Assigns & Every of them doth Covenant promise & Grant to & with the s^d Wm Waterhouse his Executors Administrators by these presents that in case default shall be made of or in payment of y^e s^d sum of sixty six pounds thirteen shillens & four pence before mentioned that then and from thenceforth & at all times afterwards it shall and may be Lawful to & for y^e s^d Wm Waterhouse His Executors Administrators & Assigns to Enter into have hold use Occupy possess & Injoy all y^e s^d above Mentioned premises during all y^e term of ninety two years by these presents Granted without any Lawful Let suit Trouble denial disturbance by his y^e s^d Wm Waterhouse Jun^r his heirs Executors Administrators or assigns Or any Other persons whatsoever & that y^e s^d Waterhouse Jun^r do acknowledge suffer and Execute all & Every such further act or acts for y^e better conveying of y^e Above Granted premises by these presents Granted unto y^e s^d Waterhouse, Husbandman his Executors Administrators & Assigns during y^e s^d Term of 99 years as by y^e s^d Waterhouse Jun^r his Executors or Assigns or by his or theirs Counsel Learned in y^e Law or advise or required & it is agreed between y^e s^d parties to these presents that it is Lawfull for y^e s^d Waterhouse His bondsman his heirs & Assigns to receive all y^e rents Issues & profits of y^e premises until default shall be made in payment of y^e s^d sum of sixty six pounds thirteen shillens & four pence without any Let suit Trouble Denial or Interruption of y^e s^d Waterhouse Jun^r his Executors Administrators or Assigns forever. In witness Whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal This 23 day of April A.D. 1757.

Signed Sealed & Delivered

In presence of us

William Waterhouse (Seal)

Sarah Waterhouse

Miles Rodes.

In 1761 William Waterhouse bought land on Falmouth Neck and in the deed was called a boat-builder. In 1764 he bought more land on the "Neck" and soon afterwards sold some of it upon which to build a meeting house. June 16, 1783, he purchased, of Enoch Illsley, a small lot of land located at the easterly end of the Town Landing which was located

on the southerly side of Mill Creek, where it joins Fore River, in Stroudwater. The Landing extended westerly to the County road, a distance of about fifteen rods and was used earlier as a place for landing mast logs. A river privilege there had been in use for years and "Waterhouse's Point", as it came to be called, must have "possessed many pleasing natural environments." Upon this land Mr. Waterhouse erected a two story ~~building~~ dwelling, out buildings and boat shop. He remained at Stroudwater Landing and followed his occupation of boat building until 1795, when he bought, of Nicholas Cobb, some thirty six acres of land in Gorham, formerly owned by Elisha Strout, and removed to that town. While living here he continued to build boats and hauled them into Portland, a distance of some ten miles. The writer's grandmother, then a young girl, resided in Gorham and went to school very near his house and remembered him.

Aug. 19, 1804, he was a yeoman, of Gorham, and sold land in Gorham, perhaps the above, "which lies on the Easterly side of the great Road leading from Gorham Corner to Scarboro and on the Northerly side by the two rod road leading from the school House on said lot to Benjamin Roberts."

Dec. 19, 1804, he bought a quarter-acre of land and buildings adjoining "the post road of Stroudwater to Scarboro." He bought this property of Asa Fickett and is said to have removed his boat-house to it and to have converted the same into a residence, where he probably lived at the time of his death. As late, however, as Feb. 18, 1805, he was "of Gorham," a yeoman, and sold twenty five acres of land in Scarboro. Me.

Mr. Waterhouse was a supporter of what is now St. Paula Church, Portland. In a History of the Episcopal Church in Portland, Me., by the Rev. William S. Perry, we find the following relating to St. Pauls.

Falmouth, Nov. 4, 1763.

"Whereas, The inhabitants on the Neck are become so numerous as to render it inconvenient to meet together in one house for public worship, for the better accommodation of all the inhabitants, it is proposed to build another house for Divine service between Major Freemans and the house improved as a school house; we therefore, the under-written, oblige ourselves, our heirs and assigns, to pay the respective sums affixed to our names to the person or persons appointed to receive the monies towards building a convenient meeting house provided

First- Said meeting house to be made fitt to meet in at or before the last Lords Day in June 1764.

2ly- That the subscribers have the first choice of pews in this order; The largest subscriber choosing first ****

3ly- That if the Rev'd John Wiswell, Pastor of the third Parish of this town, should leave his people he be invited to settle as a Minister in said Meeting House."

William Waterhouse was one of the signers of the above and pledged

L2-8-0. The writer of the history above mentioned says,- "Any one familiar with the past and present of Portland needs only to know the names of those who formed this organization to understand the wealth, social position and influence of those who that cold November night laid the foundations of the Church in Falmouth."

By C. Gould's History of Portland has the following,-

Falmouth, July 23, 1764.

"At a meeting of the Subscribers for building a new Meeting house, a major part being desirous that the Worship carried on in the said House be agreeable to the Laws of Great Britain, It is agreed that the said House shall be made fit for, and appropriate to the worship aforesaid- and we the Subscribers oblige ourselves to pay the sums affixed to each of our names, for the purpose aforesaid."

Fifty seven signed this pledge Mr. Waterhouse being one and subscribing L4-0-0.

At the time Portland was burned by the English Commander, Mowatt, Oct. 18, 1775, Mr. Waterhouse lost considerable property. Descendants say his house was burned and two vessels on the stocks. The account of property destroyed, as given in Willis' History of Portland includes, "William Waterhouse, - Buildings L 406. Personal Estate, L73. Cartage, L 1.

William Waterhouse saw military service before and during the Revolution. His name appears on a list in a Company of Militia in Falmouth, Capt. Loring Cushing, sworn to at Falmouth, 2nd. Parish, Apr. 29, 1757, York Co. He belonged to the Training band.

His Revolutionary service is as follows,- As private among a list of men on return serving as main guard under Lt. Col. L. Baldwin, July 3, 1775. Here his name is spelled Waterous. He next appears as a private on a Muster and Pay Roll of Capt. Joseph Noyes Co. He enlisted July 14, 1775 and was discharged Dec. 31, 1775, serving 6 mos. 2 days at Falmouth. On a Muster and Pay Roll of Capt. Abner Lowell's Artillery Co. his name appears as 4th. Ar. Gunner. Enlisted June 20, 1776, Discharged Aug. 31, 1776. Enlisted again Sept. 1, 1776 and was discharged Dec. 31, 1776. He was stationed at Falmouth. On a later Roll of this Company he appears as 2nd. Ar. Gunner. Enlisted Jan. 1, 1777 and was discharged Mar. 31, 1777. This time he was also stationed at Falmouth. Finally he appears with the rank of 3rd. Sergeant on a return of Capt. Abner Lowell's Matross Company. This company reported Aug. 11, 1777, as mustered by Col. Noyes agreeable to seacoast establishment and was stationed at Falmouth. Roll dated Falmouth, July 31, 1777.

Mr. Waterhouse died Mar. 5, 1805. An inscription on his tombstone reads, "An honest man," and records his age as sixty-nine years. The "Eastern Argus," of Portland, in its issue of Feb. 19, 1822, notices the death of his widow thus. "Died on Saturday Mrs. Elizabeth Waterhouse, aged eighty-six years. Funeral from the residence of the late William Waterhouse Jr."

In the records of St Pauls Church, Portland, we find an entry under date of June 28, 1769, baptized "John, son of William & Sara Waterhouse." Either the name of William's wife here mentioned is wrong or her name was Sarah Elizabeth for deeds show that the name of his wife all through this period was Elizabeth, and there was no other William Waterhouse in

Falmouth at that time.

CHILDREN: -

- 122. I. Elizabeth Waterhouse, born prob. in Falmouth.
- 123. II. Sarah M. Waterhouse, born prob. in Falmouth.
- 123a. IIIa William Waterhouse, born 1765, Prob. in Falmouth.
- III. Son. died at Falmouth, Feb. 5, 1771, age 3.
- 124. IV. John Waterhouse, born May 13, 1769, bap. June 28, 1769. Falmouth.
- 125. V. Robert Waterhouse, born Nov. 15, 1770, Falmouth.
- 126. VI. Joseph H. Waterhouse, born Dec. 5, 1774, bap. Dec. 11, 1774, Falmouth.

39

JACOB⁴ WATERHOUSE, (William,³ Samuel,² Richard,¹) born probably in Arundel, Me., married, Jan. 29, 1765, Hannah or Anna Strout.

The first mention of him we have found is in the Colonial War records. He entered the service June 15, 1761 and served until Jan. 11, 1762, 30 weeks and 1 day. His father was given as William Waterhouse. Jacob's name next appears on a Pay Roll dated at Boston, Mar. 24, 1762, of a Company in His Majesties service under command of Simon Jeffries. Jacob was a private and his residence was given as Arundel.

Mr. Waterhouse must have removed to Falmouth, Me., before 1765 for at that time he was a member of the church there. Jan. 15, 1768 he bought a piece of land bounded in part as follows, - "Beginning at a Stake standing 11 rods Northwest from Middle St. on the Northeasterly Side of a Lane I have lately opened on the Westerly end of my Dwelling house" ***** He is mentioned in the deed as a boatbuilder.

In Jan. 1773 he was a member of St. Pauls Church and signed a pe-

tion asking to be relieved from paying taxes to the 1st. Parish in addition to supporting his own church.

In 1779 he and his wife, Anna, sold ~~said~~ different pieces of property on the "Neck" and on Middle St. and probably removed to Cape Elizabeth, which town had been set off from Falmouth in 1765. July 21, 1785, he was a boatbuilder, of Cape Elizabeth, and bought of James Dyer, of that town seven eighths of sixteen and one half acres of land adjoining the "Great Fresh Marsh" in said Cape Elizabeth and seven eighths of the house and barn "whereon the s'd Jacob Waterhouse now dwells." In 1795 he bought the other eighth of this property.

He saw Revolutionary service as follows,- He was a private in Capt. Tobias Lord's Company and marched Jan. 29, 1776; service to Nov. 25, 1776, 9 mos., 28 days. The Company was stationed at Falmouth for the defense of the sea coast.

He died Oct. 4, 1801. aged fifty eight years. His widow was probably the one who was living at Mrs. Fernalds Aug. 5, 1805.

CHILDREN:-

Probably all born in Cape Elizabeth.

127. I. Sarah Waterhouse, born 1766.

128. II. Jacob Waterhouse, born Mar. 2, 1768.

129. III. Deborah Waterhouse, born May 28, 1774.

130. IV. Joshua Waterhouse, born 1777.

131. V. Dorcas Waterhouse, born May 10, 1779.

VI. Daniel Waterhouse, bap. Sept. 28, 1783, is said to have had a wife Rhoda in 1800.

132. VII. Samuel Waterhouse, born Jan. 25, 1784.

40

JOSEPH⁵ WATERHOUSE, (Timothy,⁴ Joseph,⁵ Timothy,² Richard,¹) born in

Scarboro, Me., Feb. 9, 1766, married first Dec. 30, (records say 29) 1791, Elizabeth Larrabee, born in Scarboro, Me., Apr. 2, 1766, and daughter of William and Mary (Burns) Larrabee. She died Oct. 13, 1801, and he married second, May 2, 1802, Mrs. Lydia Westcott, widow of Abner Westcott, and daughter of Nathaniel and Hannah (Roberts) Parker. She was born in Gorham, Me.

Mr. Waterhouse was a farmer and settled at Great Falls, Gorham. About 1795 he removed to South Gorham and in 1804 or 1805 he bought a farm in Pejepscot, now Danville, Me., and lived there the rest of his life. The following is an abstract from the deed,-

"I, Clement Jordan of Gorham, Cumberland County, State of Maine, for twelve hundred dollars paid to me by Joseph Waterhouse of said Gorham, ***** sell to said Waterhouse a certain lot of land, with all the buildings and improvements thereon, lying in Pejepscot in the great lot numbered Four in Pejepscot Claim. bounded as follows; viz., beginning at the most southerly corner of Henry McKenny's land on the dividing line between the great lots numbered 3 and 4 of the said claim, thence running S.W. on the said line 196 rods to the east corner of Lemuel Dyer's land, thence by said Dyer's land N. W'ly 80 rods to a corner, thence N.E. 196 rods to a corner in the said line of said Henry McKenny's land, thence S. E'ly by said McKenny's land 80 rods to bounds first mentioned, containing about one hundred acres more or less. This was dated Oct. 29, 1804.

Feb. 11, 1843 he sold this property to his son Abner, reserving the same ~~and room~~ during his life time and one chamber and room in the cellar for his daughter, Betsey. He died Apr. 23, 1844 and his widow died July 7, 1853 in Danville.

CHILDREN:-

- I. Olive Waterhouse, born Jan. 11, 1793, Gorham, Me., married her second cousin, Al Waterhouse, son of Theophilus.
133. II. Zebulon Waterhouse, born Sept. 14, 1794, Gorham.
134. III. Benjamin Waterhouse, born Oct. 7, 1796, Gorham, married Jan. 24, 1826, Betsey Dyer, born in Cape Elizabeth, Me., Dec. 2, 1800, and daughter of Deacon Lemuel and Sarah (Leach) Dyer.
Mr. Waterhouse was a farmer. He also ran a grist mill and a saw mill at one time. Later he went into the grocery business in Portland under the name of Frost & Waterhouse. His brother ^{Joseph} was also associated with them. They were soon burned out and he removed to Iowa. He

spent a few years in the mines in California, but returned to Iowa and lived at Waubeek, where he died Oct. 20, 1873. While living in Maine he held various town offices and was elected to the State Legislature. His widow died at Waubeek, Dec. 30, 1889.

No children.

134. IV. Joseph Waterhouse, born Aug. 6, 1800, Gorham.

By second wife.

135. V. Abner Waterhouse, born Aug. 20, 1804, Pejepscot, now Danville.

VI. Simon Waterhouse, born Sept. 2, 1806, Pejepscot, died May 8, 1810, Pejepscot.

VII. Betsey Larrabee Waterhouse, born June 4, 1808, Pejepscot, died unm. Feb. 3, 1844, Pejepscot.

136. VIII. Sally S. Waterhouse, born May 16, 1811, Pejepscot.

137. IX. Lydia Waterhouse, born May 1, 1818, Pejepscot.

4 1

SAMUEL⁵ WATERHOUSE, (Timothy,⁴ Joseph,³ Timothy,² Richard,¹) born in Scarborough, Me., Jan. 19, 1768, bap. July 3, 1768, married first, Sept. 26, 1790, Mary Libby, born in Scarborough, Mar. 17, 1769, and daughter of Andrew and Miriam (Burns) Libby. She died and he married second, July 6, 1814, Mrs. Ruth Collins, born 1770, widow of Daniel Collins and daughter of Thomas and Patty (McCrane) Maxwell.

Mr. Waterhouse, after his first marriage settled on a farm in Windham, Me. He was "of Windham" Sept. 10, 1795 when he bought property there and as late as Apr. 15, 1817, but Mar. 7, 1818 he was "of Cape Elizabeth," Me., where he bought seventy acres of land of James Maxwell bounded on one side by a brook "leading from the Sound pond to the Great Pond." He lived here until his death, Jan. 16, 1851.

He was a private in Capt. E. Dyer's Company, Lieut. Col. J. Hobbs Reg., The Company was raised at Cape Elizabeth for service at Portland.

Samuel Waterhouse served from Sept. 8 to Sept. 20, 1814. His will is dated Jan. 13, 1834. He gave his farm to his son Benjamin, the latter to care for his father and mother as "a son ought." Benjamin was also to pay something to his brother, Timothy, of Palermo; to keep Sally and give her a cow and other property; to give Olive, wife of Abel Hibbard, of Lisbon, Me., a cow &c.; to give Samuel Jr., of Cape Elizabeth, \$80 or live stock; to give Mary, wife of Rufus Jordan, of Cape Elizabeth, a cow; also property to Hannah, wife of William Strout, of Portland. These were the children of Samuel Waterhouse, Senior.

Samuel's widow died Mar. 20, 1862.

CHILDREN:-

All by first wife and all born in Windham.

138. I. Timothy Waterhouse, born June 30, 1792.
- II. Sarah Waterhouse, been married, late in life, James Wyer, of Orrs Island, Me. He was a farmer. She is said to have died in Brunswick, Me., and by others to have died in Brooklyn, N.Y.
139. III. Olive Waterhouse, born May 24, 1794.
140. IV. Samuel Waterhouse, born Feb. 22, 1796.
141. V. Mary Waterhouse,
142. VI. Benjamin F. Waterhouse, born Feb. 4, 1799.
143. VII. Hannah Waterhouse, born Aug. 13, 1812.

4 2

JANE⁵ WATERHOUSE, (Timothy,⁴ Joseph,³ Timothy,² Richard,¹) born in Scarborough, Me., Feb. 20, 1773, bap. Aug. 1, 1773, married, Oct. 11, 1792, William Harmon Jr.

CHILDREN:-

- I. Zenas Harmon, married Sophia Waterhouse, born in Windham, Me., Apr. 22, 1803.

II. William Harmon, married Susan Perry, of Bowdoinham, Me. They were living in the West when last heard from. Had several children but all died.

III. Leonard Harmon, married Ann George, of Richmond, Me. They went West.

IV. Timothy Harmon.

4 3

BENJAMIN⁵ WATERHOUSE, (Timothy,⁴ Joseph,³ Timothy,² Richard,¹) born in Scarboro, Me., Dec. 19, 1775, married, Int. Mar. 8, 1800, Sarah Barton, born in Windham, Me., Nov. 10, 1780, and daughter of Eben and ----- (Elliott) Barton.

Mr. Waterhouse learned the carpenter's trade and after marrying settled in Windham. About 1810 he removed to Bowdoinham, now Richmond, Me., where he bought 150 acres of land of Joseph Foxcroft, and lived there until his death, May 29, 1846. His wife died Oct. 16, 1842. He was in Capt. John White's Company of Militia in Lieut. Col. Abel Merrill's Reg., raised in Bowdoinham and in service at Bath, Me., June 20-22 and Sept. 10-28 1814.

CHILDREN:-

144. I. James Waterhouse, Born Aug. 27, 1800, Windham.

II. Sophia Waterhouse, born in Windham, Apr. 22, 1803, married her cousin, Zenas Harmon, son of her Aunt Jane (Waterhouse) Harmon. She died June 16, 1840.

Children:-

1. Jane Harmon, m. William Lind, and lived in Richmond, Me. Had one son who d. in infancy.
2. John Harmon, d. in infancy.
3. Infant, d.

III. Fanny Waterhouse, born July 8, 1805, Windham, died Sept. 20, 1886, unm., Bath, Me.

IX.

IV. Nancy Johnson Waterhouse, born in Windham, Apr. 7, 1808, mar-

ried, William Booker, of Cardiner, Me. She died Feb. 4, 1841.

Children:-

Franklin, Martha, Elliott, A son, all died in infancy.
Sarah Frances, b. Aug. 8, 1852, d. aged 13 years 8 mos.

145. V. Martha M. Waterhouse, born Jan. 18, 1811, Richmond, Me.

VI. Dorothy Small Waterhouse, born in Richmond, Mar. 14, 1813, married John Porter Todd, of Bath, Me. He was a blacksmith and lived in Bath.

Children:-

1. John Todd. He was a sailor and at the time of the Civil War opened a shipping office in Philadelphia. He m. and had one daughter.

2. Daughter.

3. Orville Todd. He was a caulker and lived in Bath. He m. and had three children, besides several others who d. in infancy.

VII Benjamin Elliott Waterhouse, born in Richmond, July 11, 1817, died Sept. 15, 1853, Richmond.

VIII. Horace Waterhouse, born in Bowdoinham, Me., Sept. 18, 1821, married, Harriet Fanks, dau. of John and ---- (Elaisdel) Fanks.
Mr. Waterhouse was a carpenter. In 1848 he was a wheelwright and lived in Richmond, Me. He lived the most of his life in Bath, Me., and in Boston, Mass. He was on the S.S. City of Columbus going South, when that vessel was wrecked off Gay Head, Marthas Vineyard. He escaped with his life only by jumping into the sea and being picked up by a Revenue Cutter which came to the rescue. He was a very fine man. He died in Bowdoinham, May 28, (the records say 14) 1897. His wife died in Bath, Feb. 4, 1855.

Child:-

1. William Waterhouse, born Sept. 9, 1853, Bath, d. Aug. 18, 1854, Bath.

IX. Samuel Robbins Waterhouse, born in Richmond, Me., Aug. 3, 1825, married, Int. Dec. 16, 1847, Lydia Abigail Higgins, born in Bowdoin, Me., and daughter of John Higgins. He was a carriage maker by trade but spent the most of his life on a farm in Richmond, where he died May 8, 1849. His widow died in Richmond in the fall of the same year.

No children.

